

THE  
HISTORY  
Of Astrea.

*The First Part.*  
In. Twelue Bookes:  
*Newly Translated out  
of French.*

---

LONDON,  
Printed by N. Okes for John  
Pyper. 1620.



TO THE R I G H T  
HONOV R A B L E, PHILIP,  
L O R D H E R B R T, B A R O N O F  
Sherland, Earle of Mountgomery, and Knight of the  
*most Noble Order of the Garter, &c. And to the*  
Right Noble and vertuous Lady, the Lady  
Susan, Countesse of Mountgomery.

R I G H T, H O N O R A B L E:

Strea finding so good entertainment in her owne Countrey, as having passed the Presse in the 3. principall Cities of F R A N C E, namely, P A R I S, R O A N and L Y O N S, is now encouraged to crosse the seas, and to try what welcome she shall meeke with here in E N G L A N D. And though it cannot be, but her riding-suite will take much away from her originall beauty (it being the fortune of few Bookes to be bettered by the translation) yet she is so confident of her owne Worth, that she expects acceptance onely for

## The Epistle Dedicatory.

herselfe, and not for her ornaments. And as at home she went abroad vnder the protection of a mighty King; so being abroad, and a stranger, she is desirous to shelter her selfe vnder the Honourable Patronage of your Lordship, and your right noble Lady, against the aspertions of the ouer-curious. In which choice ioyning with her, and presenting her to your fauourable acceptance, I am in all humility to craue your hono-  
rable pardons for my presumption, and do rest

Your Honors in all seruice  
to be commanded,

John Pyper.

A



## A Table of the Histories contained in the first Part of Astrea.

<i>The history of Alcippe.</i>	35
<i>The history of Siluie.</i>	39
<i>The history of Astrea and Phillis.</i>	98
<i>The history of the decoit of Climanthe.</i>	136
<i>The history of Stelle and Corilas.</i>	137
<i>The history of Diane.</i>	270
<i>The history of Tircis and Laonice.</i>	234
<i>The Oration of Hylas for Laonice.</i>	236
<i>The Answer of Phillis for Tircis.</i>	238
<i>The Judgement of Siluander.</i>	240
<i>The history of Siluander.</i>	248
<i>The history of Hylas.</i>	264
<i>The history of Galathee and Lindamor.</i>	288
<i>The history of Leonide.</i>	334
<i>The history of Celion and Bellinde.</i>	346
<i>The history of Ligdamon.</i>	354
<i>The history of Damon and of Fortune.</i>	5: 11. 11
<i>The history of Lidias and Melander.</i>	6: 11. 11
	10. 11. 11
	33. 11. 12

## A Table of the Letters.

<i>The Answer of Celadon to Licidas.</i>	22
<i>A Letter of Celadon to Astrea.</i>	13
<i>A Letter of Amarillis to Alcippe.</i>	39
<i>A Letter of Astrea to Celadon.</i>	52
<i>Another Letter of Astrea to Celadon.</i>	52
<i>A Letter of Astrea to Celadon.</i>	53
<i>A Letter of Ligdamon to Siluie.</i>	62
<i>The answer of Siluie to Ligdamon.</i>	64
<i>A Letter of Aristander to Siluie.</i>	70
<i>A Scroll from Leonide to Ligdamon.</i>	73
<i>A Letter of Celadon to Astrea.</i>	266

## A Table of the Contents.

A Letter of Licidas to Phillis.	112
A Letter of Astrea to Celadon.	116
A Letter of Celadon to Astrea.	117
The counterfeited Letter of Astrea to Celadon.	125
A Scroule of Celadon for Astrea.	128
A Letter of Astrea to Celadon.	129
A Letter of Corilas to Stells.	164
A Letter of Filander to Diane.	179
A Letter of Hylas to Carlis.	270
The answer of Carlis to Hylas.	270
An answer of Stilliane to Hylas.	272
A Letter of Lindamor to Galathee.	302
Another Letter of Lindamor to Galathee.	306
An answer of Leonide to Lindamor.	307
A Scroule of Leonide to Lindamor.	308
A Scroule of Lindamor to Leonide.	313
The answer of Leonide to Lindamor.	317
The Reply of Lindamor to Leonide.	348
A Letter of Celion to Bellinde.	349
A Letter of Amaranthe to Celion.	350
The answer of Celion to Amaranthe.	363
A Letter of Celion to Bellinde.	364
Another Letter of Celion to Bellinde.	365
A Letter of Bellinde to Celion.	366
A Letter of Lindamor to Leonide.	367
A Letter of Lindamor to Galathee.	368
A Letter of Ligdamon to Siluie.	369
A Letter of Astrea to Celadon.	370
8. lib. 11	
3. lib. 11	
16. lib. 11	
62. lib. 11	

The

Lib. 1.



# THE HISTORY OF Astrea and Celadon.

## *The First Booke.*



EE RE the ancient Towne of *Lions*, on that side where the Sunne sets, there is a Countrey called *Forrests*, which in the small circuite of it, containeth in it, what so euer is most rare in all *Gaul*, for being deuided into plaines and mountaines, the one and the other are so fertile, and situate in an ayre so temperate, that the ground is capable of all that which the Husbandman can desire. About the hart of the Country is the most beautifull part of the plaine, compassed as with a strong wall by mountaines neere enough, and watred with the riuier of *Loyer*, that taking his head not far from thence, passeth almost thorow the middest, yet neither violent nor muddy, but sweet, and peaceable. Many other riuers run there in diuers places, washing them with their cleere stremes: but one of the fayrest is *Lignon*, which wandering in his course, and doubting of his original, goes creeping thorow this plaine among the high mountaynes of *Ceruieres* and of *Chalmaset*, as farre as *Flens*, where *Loyer* receiuing it, and causing it to lose his name, carries it for tribute to the *Ocean*. Now on the banks of these pleasant riuers, a man may see alwaies store of shepheards, that what for the goodnesse of the ayre,

what for the fertility of the soyle and their owne sweete nature, they liue in so great good fortune, that they take small knowledge of fortune. And be assured that they need not enuy the contentment of the former age, if loue would as well haue suffered them to conserue their felicity, as the heauens were truly prodigall vnto the: but being asleep in their repose, they submitted themselves to this flatterer, who shortly after turned his authority into tyranny. *Celadon* was one of them that felt it to the quicke, ouertaken in such sort with the perfections of *Astrea*, that the hatred that was betweene their parents, could not hinder him from losing himselfe wholy in her. And it is true, that if in the losse of himselfe, a man may gaine any thing that may content him, he may call himselfe happy, to bee so luckily lost, to get the good will of *Astrea*, who hauing assurance of his loue, would not require it with ingratitude, but rather with a mutuall affection, with which she enter-tayned his loue and seruice. So that if you see any change betweene them afterwards, you are to thinke that the heauens permitted it, onely to manifest that there is nothing constant, but inconstancy onely durable in her chan-ges: For hauing liued happily enough, the space of three yeeres, when they least feared the mischievous accident that besel them, they found them-selves cast by the treasons of *Semire*, into the profound misfortunes of Loue; so that *Celadon* desirous to hide his affection, to deceiue the importunity of their parents, who out of an ancient hatred betweene them, interrupted by what meanes they could their amorous desygnes, enforced himselfe to make shew, that the accomplice he had of this shepheardesse, was rather ordinary disguised it, grounding vpon this dissimulation, the treason by which he de-ceived *Astrea*, & for which afterwards she paid such sorrow, so much griefe, and so many teares.

By fortune one day the amorous shepheard hauing risen very early to in-tertaine his thoughts, leauing his stucks to fresh pastures, went to sit downe on the banke of the winding riuier of *Lignon*, waiting for the coming of the faire shepheardesse, who stayed not long after him: for being kept waking with an ouer-thoughtfull suspition, she had not closed her eyes all the night. By that time the Sun began to gild the tops of the mountaynes of *Isour* and *Marselley*, the shepheard might perceiue from far, a flock which within a while he knew to belong to *Astrea*: for besides that *Melampe*, the so belo-ued dog of his shepheardesse, came fawning on him as soone as it saw him, he noted that the sheepe which his Mistris made so much of, had not that head, in fashion of a garland, because the shepheardesse ouercharged with deepe

deepe displeasure, had not the leasure to dresse it vp after her manner: shee followed after with a soft pace, & as a man might judge by her behauoir, shee had somewhat in her mind, that much rauished her, and so intirely tooke vp her thoughts, that whether of neglect or otherwise, passing hard by the shepheard, shee cast not her eyes to the place where hee was, and went to sit downe farre enough from him, on the banke of the riuier. *Celadon* not much heeding it, supposed shee saw him not, or that shee went to seeke him where hee was accustomed to attend her, hearding his flocks with his sheep-hooke, draue towards her, who beeing set vnder an olde tree, her elbow resting on her knees, and her hand sustaing her head, seemed so penisive, that if *Celadon* had not beene bewitched with his owne misfortune, hee might easilly haue perceiued, that this sadnesse could not grow, but from an opinion of the change of his loue, al other displeasures being vnable to work so sad & penisive thoughts. But for that a misfortune vnxpected, is most difficult to be borne, I thinke, fortune purposed sudainely to assault him, that shee might robbe him of all meanes of resistance.

Not knowing then the mis-hap that was so neere, after hee had made choyce of a commodious place for his sheepe, neerly to the flocke of his shepheardesse, hee came to her to giue her the good morrow, full of content-ment that hee had met with her: whom shee answered both with countenance and speech so coldly, that the winter brings not with it more chilnesse and frost. The shepheard, that was not wont to see her in these tearnes, grew much astonished at it, and though hee did not forecast the greatnessse of his disgrace, such as hee found afterwards; yet the doubt that hee had offendred her whom hee loued, so filled him with sorrow, that the least part of it was e-nough to take away his life. But if the shepheardesse had vouchsafed to heare him, or if her iealous suspition had suffered her to consider, what a sud-daine change the coldnesse of her answer caused in his countenance, out of question, the knowledge of such an effect had made her lose all her mistrust: but it must not be, that *Celadon* prooue a Phoenix of good fortune, as hee was of loue, nor that fortune doe him more fauour then other men, whom shee neuer leaues long in assurance of contentment. Hauing then stayed some while thus penisive, at last hee came to himselfe, and turning his eye toward his shepheardesse, hee saw by hap that shee beheld him, but with a looke so sad, that it left no kinde of comfort in his soule; so forgetfull had the doubt wherein hee was, made him. They were so neere the riuier of *Lignon*, that the shepheard might haue touched it with his hooke, and the stremme held so strong a course, that all glorious and charged with the spoyles of his bankes, hee descended very mainly into the *Loyre*. The place where they

they were set, was a piece of earth somewhat mounted, against which the fury of the water beat in vaine, sustained in the bottome with a naked rock, but on the top couered with a little mosse. From this place the shepheard struck the riuier with his hooke, wherewith he raised not more drops of wa- ter, then he found diuers sorts of thoughts that aslayled him, which dash- ing on him like water, were no sooner come, then they were driuen away by others more violent. There was no one action of his life, nor one thought of his, that he called not into his minde, to enter into accompt with, and to know wherein hee had offended; but not being able to charge any one of them, his Loue constrained him to demand of her the cause of her anger. She disaduantage of the shepheard, went forward to fire his heart with a more burning despight, so that when he would haue opened his mouth, she would not give him leasure to bring forch his first words, without interruption, saying, Is it not enough, perfidious and disloyall shepheard, to deceiue and faulthulnesse, thou sticketst not to abuse her that hath obliged thee to al faire so much offended me? How haue you the hardinesse to come in my sight, when you haue so much offended me? How dare you shew, without blushing, that dissembling countenance, which hides a soule so double, and forsworne? Go, go, deceiue another, faulthulnesse, be gone, and addresse thy selfe to some one, to whom thy perfidious dealings are vknowne, and no longer thinke thou canst disguise thy selfe to me, that haue found too much, to my cost, the effects of thy vnfauisffulness and treasons. In what case this faihfull she- heard was, he which hath truly loued may best judge, if ever such a reproch hath beeene vniustly fastned on him. Hee fell on his knees pale and gastly, like a man dead. Is this, faire shephearde (said he) to try me, or to cause mee to despaire? Neither for the one nor other, said she, but for the truth, there being no necessitie to try a thing so well knowne. Ah! said the she- heard, why haue I not put this vnlucky day out of my life? It had beeene for the good of vs both (said shee) that not one day, but all the dayes that I haue seene thee, had beeene put out both of thine and mine. It is true, that thy actions haue made me hold my selfe discharged of one thing, which ha- ving done, displeases me more then thy vnfauisffulness: I hat if the remem- brance of that which is passed betweene vs (which I desire for euer might be defaced) haue left mee any power; bee gone, disloyall, and haue a care I see thee not, vntill I command otherwise. *Celadon* would haue replied, but loue, which vsually heareth readily enough, at this time, for his great hurt, had stopped his eares, and for that she would haue beeene gone, he was con- strayned

strayned to hold her by the garment, saying vnto her: I keepe you not back, to aske your pardon for the fault I know not of, but onely to make you see that it is the end I choose to put him out of the world, whom you make shew to haue in such horror. But she whom choler had transported, without turning her eyes to him, struggled with that fury, that she escaped from him, and left nothing but a ribon, on which by chance he had layd his hand. She was wont to weare it on her garment before, sometimes to set out her part- let with, sometimes to winde about flowers when the season serued: at this time it had a ring at it which her father had giuen her. The sorrowfull shep- heard seeing her depart in such choler, stood a long time without moouing, not knowing what hee held in his hand, though he had his eyes on it. At last with a deepe sigh, comming out of his pensiuenesse, and knowing the ri- bon: Be witnessse, said hee, O deare string, that rather then I would breake one of the knots of my affection, I choose to lose my life, to the end, that when I am dead, and that the cruell shall see thee about me, thou maist assure her, that there is nothing in the world can be better loued, then she is of me, and a Louer worse vnderstood then I. And then fastning it about his arme, and kissing the ring; And thou (said he) the token of an intire and perfect amity, be content not to part from me at my death, to the end that this may remaine with me, at least for a gage from her, who hath made me such promise of affection. He had scarce ended these words, when turning his eyes toward *Astrea*, hee cast himselfe into the riuier with his arme a- crosse.

In this place was *Lignon* very deepe, and the stremme strong; for there was a world of waters, and the casting back of the rocke made a kinde of coun- ter-mount, so that the shepheard was long before hee could sinke to the bottome, and yet longer before hee could rise vp; and when hee appeared, the first was a knee, and after an arme, and then ouerwhelmed suddaine- ly with the working of the waues, hee was carried farre off vnder the water.

In the meane time was *Astrea* set on the banke, & seeing that which she had so dearely loued, and which she could not yet hate, so neer to death for her cause, was surprised with such feare, that instead of giuing helpe, shee fell into a swoune, & so neere the brink, that at her first mouing which shee made when shee came to her selfe (which was long time after) shee fell into the water, with such danger, that all that some shepheards that were there could doe, did but saue her: with the helpe of her clothes, which held her a- bove the water, they had leasure to draw her to the shoare, but so farre be- sides her selfe, that without any feeling of her part, they brought her to the

next Lodge, which they found to belong to *Phillis*, where some of her companions shittid her wet clothes, shee not beeing able to speake, shee was so much dismayed, both for the danger her selfe had runne into, and for the losse of *Celadon*, who in the meane time was carried by the water with such violence, that hee was driuen aland a farre off, on the other side of the riuver, among some little shrubs, but with small signe of life.

As soone as *Phillis* (who at that time was from home) knew the accident befallne her companion, shee set her selfe to runne with all her might; and had it not beene that *Licidas* met her, she could not haue beene stayed by any other whosoeuer he had beene: yet she told him in few words, the danger into which *Astrea* had runne, not speaking any thing of *Celadon*, and indeed she knew nothing of him. This shepheard was *Celadon*s brother, betweene whom the heauens had tied a knot more straite then that of parentage: on the other side, *Astrea* and *Phillis*, besides that they were cousin germanes, were so linked with so straite an amity, that it well deserues to be compared to that of the two brethren: that if *Celadon* had sympathy with *Astrea*, *Licidas* had no lesse inclination to serue *Phillis*, nor *Phillis* to loue *Licidas*.

By fortune at this time that they came in, *Astrea* opened her eyes, and they were very much changed from that they were wont to be, when victorious Loue shewed it selfe triumphant ouer all those which saw them, and which they saw, their looke was slow and abated, their lids heauy and sleepy, and their brightness turned into teares, but teares holding of a heart all inflamed, whence they came, and of those eyes scorching as they passed by, which burnt vp both with loue and pitty all those that were neare her: when she perceiued her companion *Phillis*, it was a new cause of astonishment, and much more when she saw *Licidas*: and though shee were vnwilling that they which were by, should know the principall cause of her euill, yet was shee compelled to tell him, that his brother had endangered himselfe while he sought to helpe her. This shepheard at these newes was so amazed, that without longer stay he ran to the vnlucky place with all the shepheards, leauing *Astrea* and *Phillis* alone, who afterwards set themselues to follow them, but so sadly, that though they had much to say, yet were they not able to speake. In the meane time the shepheards comming to the banke side, and casting their eyes now this way, and after that way, found no shew of that they sought for, except it were some that falling more low, found a great way off his hat, which the stremme of the water had driuen downe, and which by chance was staied among some trees, which the washing of the riuver had loosened at the roote, and impaired. This was all the newes they

they could meeete with of that they sought; for hee was farre enough driuen away in a place where it was impossible for them to finde him, because that before *Astrea* could be recovered of her swounding, *Celadon*, as I haue said, driuen by the water, fell on the other shore among some trees, where hee might hardly be seene.

And while he was thus betweene death and life, there came to that place three faire Nymphs, whose loose hayre hung wauing on their shoulders, crowned with a garland of diuers pearles, they wore their bosome bare, and the sleeves of their garments trust vp to the elbow, from whence issued a very fine lawne, that gathered vp, ended toward the hand, where two great bracelets of pearle seemed to fasten it. Euerie of them had at their side a quiver full of arrowes, and bore in her hand a Bow of Iuory, the lower part of their garment before, turned vp behinde, that their gold-wrought buskins were seene to the mid-legge. It seemed they came thither for some desire; for one of them spake thus: This is the place, see heere the bending of the riuver: behold where it comes with violence from aboue, dashing against the other shore, which breakes the force of it, and turnes it short another way. Consider this tuft of trees; without doubt, this is it which was showne vnto vs in the glasse. It is true, said the former, but there is no apparence of all the rest, and mee thinke it a place somewhat too much with-drawne, to finde that which we come to seeke. And the third, which had not as yet spoke, There is, said she, apparence enough of that hee told, for as much as it represented this place so fully to you, that I doe not thinke there is a tree here, which you haue not seene in the glasse: with such words they came so neare *Celadon*, that a few leaues onely hid him. And for that vpon particular marking of every thing, they knew that without doubt this was the place that was shewed them, they agreed vpon deliberation, to see if the end would prooue as true as the beginning: but they no sooner looked downe where to sit, but the principall among them spyeid *Celadon*, and because shee thought it to be a shepheard faine asleepe, shee thrust forth her hand euery way, ouer her companions: after, without speaking a word, putting her finger on her mouth, poynted with her other hand to that which shee saw among the little shrubs, and rose as soiftly as shee could, for feare of waking him: but seeing him somewhat neerer, she tooke him to be dead, for he had yet his legges in the water, his right arme rayfed gently ouer his head, the left turned halfe behinde him, and as a prop vnder his body, the necke was wryed by the weight of the head, that let it selfe hang backward, the mouth halfe open, and almost full of sand, dropped apace, the face in many places scratched and sullenly, his eyes halfe shut, and the haire (which he wore long)

so wet, that the water ranne downe as from two fountaines along his cheeke, whose liue colour was so defaced, that a dead man lookes no otherwise: the mid part of his reynes were so rased, that they seemed to be broken, and that made his belly shew more swolie, though by reason of the fulnesse of water, it was bigge enough of it selfe. The Nymphes seeing him in this plight, tooke pittie of him, and *Leonide* that spake first (as the most pittifull and carefull) was the first that layd hold on the body to draw it on shoare, when presently the water which hee had swallowed, powred forth in such abundance, that the Nymph finding him yet warine, was of opinion he might be saued. Then *Galathea*, who was the principall, turning towards the other that stood looking on, but not offering any helpe; And you, *Silvia*, said she, what will my mynion say that you be so dainty? Lay your hand to the worke, if not to helpe your companion, yet at least for pittie of this poore shepheard. I am busied (saith she) in considering, that though he be much altered, yet me thinkes I should know him: and then stooping downe, she turned him on the other side, and looking neerer on him, Certainly (sayd she) I am not deceived, this is the man I meant, and indeed he is worthy to finde succour, for besides that he is of one of the principall Families of this Countrey, he is of such desert, that our labour shall be well bestowed. In the meane time the water issued forth in such plenty, that the shepheard being well lightned, began to breathe, yet neither opens his eyes, nor comes wholly to himselfe. And because *Galathea* was of opinion, that this was hee of whom the Druide spake, she began to helpe her companions, saying: They were best carry him into the Palace of *Isouer*, where they might best succour him. And so not without paine, they conueyed him to the place where the little *Merill* wayted with the Coach: into the which all three hauing mounted, *Leonide* was shee that guided them, and lest their prey might be espied by the warders of the Palace, she went about to enter at a priuie gate.

By that time that they were gone, *Astrea* comming out of her swounding, where she lay in the water, as I told you, while *Licidas* nor those that went to seeke for *Celadon*, could heare other newes then that I spake of. Whereupon *Licidas* finding but too great certainty of the losse of his brother, caine backe to bewaile with *Astrea* their common mishap. All that she did, was to get to the brim of the riuier; where enforced with griefe, she sat downe so full of sorrow and amazement, that a little before she had beeene of so small consideration, and so icalous. She was alone, for *Phillis* seeing *Licidas* returned, was gone to learne some newes as well as the rest.

This shepheard arriuing, what with weariness, what with desire to know how this mischance besell, sat downe by her, and taking her by the hand, said, O God, faire shepheardesse, what a mishap haue we? I say we, for if I haue lost a brother, you haue likewise lost the man that was not so much his owne as yours. Whether it were that *Astrea* heeded some other thing, or that this speech vexed her, she made no manner of answer, whereat *Licidas* being amazed, by way of reproach held on, Is it possible, *Astrea*, that the losse of this miserable sonne (for so she called him) touches your soule no more to the quick, to make you accompany his death at least with some teares? If he had not loued you, or his loue had beeene vnkowne to you, it might be borne with, if we saw you haue no feeling of his euill: but since you cannot be ignorant of it, that he hath loued you more dearly then himselfe, this is a cruell thing, *Astrea*, beleue me, to see you so little moued as if you knew it not.

The shepheardesse then turning a sad looke towards him, after shee had considered awhile, answered, Shepheard, I am sorry for the death of thy brother, not for that he loued me, but because he had other conditions which may make his losse worthy to bee lamented, for as for the loue you speake of, it was so common to other shepheardesses my companions, that they are to take it as heauily as I. Ah vntankfull shepheardesse (presently cried out *Licidas*) I shall hold the heauens to be partakers with thee, if they punish not this iniustice in thee. You haue small reason to thinke him inconstant, when the displeasure of a father, the hatred of kindred, the cruelties of your rigor, could not lessen the least part of that extreme affection, which you cannot dissemble to haue a thousand, and a thousand times acknowledged apparently in him. Truely this is a mis-undersstanding, which surpasses the greatest ingratitudes, since his actions and his seruices haue giuen you no lesse assurance of the thing, which no body but your selfe make doubt of. So (answered *Astrea*) is there no body whom it concernes as it doth me. Out of question it should (replied the shepheard) since he was so thorowly yours, that I know not (and if he did I should know) that he was more ready to disobey the high God, then the least of your desires. Then the shepheardesse answered in choler, Let vs leaue this discourse, *Licidas*, and thinke it cannot turne to your brothers benefit: but if he haue beguiled me, and left me, displeased that I no sooner found out his deceits and craft, he is gone with a great spoyle, and faire markes of his vnfaitfulness. You make me amazd, replied *Licidas*: wherein haue you found that which you reproach him with? Shepheard (added *Astrea*) the story would be too long and grieuous; content your selfe if you know it not, you onely are in

ignorance ; and all along this riuver of *Lignon*, there is not a shepheard but can tell you, that *Celadon* loued in a thousand places ; and not to goe farre, yesterday I heard with mine owne eares, the discourse of loue which he had to his *Aminthe*, for so he called her, whereto I had made longer stay, but for shaine : and to tell true, I had some businesse else-where, that stod mee more vpon. Then *Licidas*, as one transported, cries out : I wile no more enquire the cause of my brothers death, it is your icalousie, *Astrea*, and icalousie grounded on great reason, to be the cause of so great euill. Alas, *Celadon*, at this time I see well, thy prophecies fall out true of thy suspitions, when thou saidest this wench will put thee to so much paine, that it will cost thee thy life: yet knewest thou not on which side this blow should be giuen. Afterward addressing himselfe to the shepheardesse : Is it credible (said he) *Astrea*, that this disease is so great, that it can make you forget the commandements which you haue so often enioyned him? I can witnessse, that fve or sixe times, at the least, he hath falne on his knees before you, to entreat you reuoke them. Doe you not remember, that when he came out of *Italy*, it was one of your first ordinances, and that within yonder bowre, where I saw you meete together so often, hee besought you to award him death, much rather then to make shew to loue any other? *Astrea*, would he say ( while I liue, I shall remember the very words) it is not for that I refuse, but because I am vnable to obserue this iununction, that I cast my selfe at your feete, and beseech you, that to make prooofe what power you haue ouer me, you command me to die, rather then to ferue any other whomsoeuer, but *Astrea*. And you answered him ( my sonne ) I require this prooofe of your loue, and not your death, which cannot be without mine owne: for besides, I know it is most hard to you, yet will it bring vs a commodity, which we especially are to looke after; which is, to shut vp both the eyes and mouthes of the most curious and reproachfull, whether hee oftentimes replied hereto, and whether hee made all the refusall which the obedience (to which his affection bound him vnto you) might permit, I referte to your selfe, if you haue the minde to remember it: so farre am I from thinking he ever disobeyed you, but for this onely cause, and in truth it was so heauy an imposition, that at all times when he returned from the place, where he was enforced to dissemble, he was compelled to take his bed, as if he came from some great piece of seruice, and there he would rest himselfe some while, and then he vndertooke it afresh. But now *Astrea*, my brother is dead, so it is, whether you beleue it, or not beleue it, it will doe him neither good nor hurt, so that you are not to thinke that I speake to you in his behalfe, but onely for the truchs sake, yet may you credit me as you thinke good:

good: if I swere vnto you, that it is not aboue two daies, since I found him engraving of verses on the barke of these trees, that stand by the great meddow, on the left hand of the Beech, and I assure my selfe, that if you will vouchsafe to turne your eyes, you may perceiue it was he that cut them, for you may too well know his characters, if forgetfull of him and of his passed seruices, you haue not lost the remembrance of whatsoeuer concernes him: but I am assured the gods will not suffer it, for his satisfaction, and your punishment. The verles are these:

## M A D R I G A L.

I Haue my selfe at such a bent,  
Although my Loue be violent,  
That I can gaine this fauour small,  
To say, I doe not loue at all.  
But to dissemble loue else-where,  
To adoe an eye the conquering pare,  
As I doe yours, with trembling feare,  
I know not how to haue the hart:  
And if it must be that I die,  
Dispach me hence then presently.

It may be some seuen or eight daies past, that hauing had occasion to go for a time, ouer the riuver of *Loyre*, by way of answer he wrote me a letter, which I am willing you should see, and if in reading it, you confesse not his innocency, I will beleue that you haue purposely lost, for his sake, all kinde of judgement: and then taking it out of his pocket, he read it to her. It was thus :

I Enquire no more what I doe, but know that I continue alwaies in my ordinary paine, To loue, and not to dare shew it; not to loue, and swere the contrary; (deare brother) is all the exercise, or rather the punishment of thy *Celadon*. They say true, contraries cannot be at one time in one place; yet Loue and dissembled loue are ordinarily in my actions: but wonder not at it, for I am compell'd to the one, out of perfeccion; and to the other, by the commandement of *Astrea*. If you thinke this manner of life strange, remember that Miracles are the ordinary workes of gods, and what would you my Goddesse shold worke in me, but Miracles?

It was long before *Astrea* would answer, because the words of *Licidas* had

had almost put her beside her selfe. So it was, that ialousie, which as yet helde some force in her soule, made her take the paper, as doubting if *Celadon* wrot it.

And although she well knew it was he, yet argued she the contrary in her mind, following the custome of many moe persons, who will alwaies strongly maintaine a thing, as if it were their opinion. And much about that time came diuers shepheards from seeking *Celadon*, where they found no notice of him, but his hat, which was nothing to the sad *Astrea*, but a fresh renewing of sorrow. And because she remembred her selfe of a sleight which loue made them devise, and she was loth it shoulde be knowne, she made signe to *Phillis* to take it; and then every one betooke them to their lamentations and praises of the poore shepheard: and there was not any that repeated not some vertuous action, onely she that felt most, was inforced to sit mutt, and to make lesse shew, knowing well, that the maine wisedome in loue, is, to hold affection hid ten, or at least, not to discouer it vnpromisably. And because the violence sh: did her selfe herein, was great, and she could hold out no longer, she drew neare to *Phillis*, and prayed her to laue her, that the rest might doe so likewise: and taking from her the hat she held in her hand, she went from them alone, and tooke the path sh: lighted vpon, without any heed to her way. Now there was not a shepheard in the company, but he knew of *Celadon* affection, because his parents by their displeasures discovered more then their owne actions, but it was carried with such discretion, that except *Semire*, *Licidas* and *Phillis*, there was not any that knew the good will she bare him, and though they knew well this losse afflicted her, yet did they attribute it rather to a good nature, then to loue (such profit comes of the good opinion they haue of a man:) in this meane time she held on her way, all which time a thousand thoughts, or rather so many dis-pleasures, tormeted her pace after pace, in such sort, that sometimes doubting, sometimes assured of the loue of *Celadon*, she knew not whether she had more cause to complaine of him, or of her selfe. When she remembred what *Licidas* came to tel her, she judged him innocent: but when the words which she heard him vse to the shepheardeſſe *Amishe*, came into her mind, she condemned him as guilty. In this labyrinth of diuers thoughts, she went a long time wandring thorow the woods, without election of way; and by fortune or the wil of heauen, that wold not suffer that the innocency of *Celadon* shuld remaine longer doubtfull in her soule, her paces conducted her, before she was aware, along a little brooke, among those trees that *Licidas* spake of, where the verses of *Celadon* were engrauen. The desire to know whether he said true, was of power sufficient in her to prouoke her to ſeekē for them

them very curiously, although they were much shaddowed: but the cutting, which as yet was fresh, diſcouered them ſoon enough. O God, how ſoon ſhe found them to be *Celadons*, and how quickly ſhe ranne to reade them, but how to the quicke, did they touch her soule? ſhe ſat downe on the ground, and laying in her lap the hat and letter of *Celadon*, ſhe held ſomewhile, her hand clasped together, and her fingers locked one in another, holding her eyes vpon that which onely remained to her of her ſhepheard, & ſeeing that the hat was bigger about the place wherein he vſed to put his letters, when he would giue them her in ſecrefie, ſhe felt with her hand very curiously, and thrusting her fingers vnder the lining, ſhe found the bare felt: wherein looſening the burro, ſhe drew forth a paper, which that day *Celadon* had put in. This deuice they inuented betweene them, when the euill will of their Parents hindred them from talking together; for casting this hat from one to the other in ſport, they might eaſily take and giue their letters. All trembling ſhe took this out of this pretty packet, & cleane besides her ſelf, ſpread-ing it abroad, ſhee caſt her eye on it to reade it, but ſhe had ſo ſcared the powers of her soule, that ſhe was forced diuers times to wipe her eies before ſhe could do it, in the end ſhe read theſe words:

**M**y *Astrea*, if the diſſimbling which you enioyne me to, be to caſe me die of paine, you may more eaſily do it with a word: If it be to puniſh my arroga-nce, you are a Judge too gentle, to appoint me a leſſe punishment then deaſh. But if it be to try what puſſance you haue ouer me, whydoye you ſeekē out for me a readi-er wiſdome then this, whose length may bee ſo troublousome to you? for I cannot thynke it is to conceale our deſſine, as you ſay, for that not being able to liue in this conſtraint, my deaſh (no doubt) will giue a more ſpedy and deplorable a de-monſtration. Judge then (my faire *Astrea*) that this hath beene long enough endurēd, and that it is now time you ſhould permit me to act the perſonage of *Celadon*, haun-ting ſo long, and with ſuch paine, repreſented that of the perſon in the world, that is moſt contrary to him.

Oh! what cutting rasors were theſe words to her soule, when they brought into her memory the commandement which ſhe had giuen him, & the reſolution which they had taken to hide by this diſſimulation their loue? But ſee what the bewitchings are of loue! ſhe tooke extreme diſpleaſure for the deaſh of *Celadon*, and yet ſhe was not without ſome contentment in the midſt of ſo great ſorrow, knowing that in trueth hee was not vnaſhful; and of which ſhee was assured, the many proothes whereof had cleared the cloudy miſt ouer ielously: all theſe conſiderations ioynd themſlues to ge-ther, to haue the more force to torment her in ſuch ſort, that not being able to

runne to other remedy then teares, as well to bewaile *Colat*, as to weepe for her owne losse, she gaue beginning to her griefe with a riuier of teares, and after, with a thousand pittifull allasses, distempering the quiet of her stomake with infinite sighes gasping for life, and with vnpittifull hands beating her faire hands, she called to remembrance the faithfull amity which she had formerly found in this shepheard, the extremitie of his affection, her despaire for hauing so readily thrust from her the life of her repose: and then were represented the happy time of his seruice, the pleasures and contentment which the honesty of their deuices had wrought her, and what beginnings of sorrow she met with, since by his losse, which though she found very great, yet did she not iudge it equall to her folly, since the continuance of so many yeeres might haue giuen her assurance enoughe of his fidelitie.

On the other side, *Licidas*, that was so little satisfied with *Astrea*, not being able with patience to suffer this griefe, rose vp hard by *Phillis*, but not to tell any thing of her companion, which displeased him, and went with a stomake so swolne, his eyes so filled with teares, and countenance so changed, that his shepheardesse seeing him in this plight, and giuing him some token of her loue, followed him without feare of what men might say of her. He went with his armes crosse his brest, his head hanging downe, his hat pull'd about his eares, but his soule more ouerwhelmed with sorrow. And because the commiseration of his euill bound the shepheardesse that loued him, to take part in his sadnessse, they followed him, and lamented behind him: but this pittifull office of theirs was but a renewing of his griefe. For extreme sorrow hath this going with it, that solitarinesse is his first garment, because that in company the soule dares not freely disgorge it selfe of the venome of the euill; and vntill that be vented, it is neuer capable of any remedy by consolation. Being thus pained, by fortune they met a young shepheard lying along on the grasse, and two shepheardesses with him: the one holding his head in her lappe, and the other playing on an Harpe, while he went breathing out these verses, his eyes lifted vp to heauen, his hands layd on his brest, and his face couered with teares.

Stanzas on the death of Cleon.

**T**He beauty which to cinders death doth turne,  
Despoiling it of mortall staine so soone,  
Like lightning mounts, and doth like fire burne:  
So shor a life hath so great beauty wonne.

Those

Those eyes, late authors of sweete undersakings,  
From more deare Lones are clos'd for ever fast,  
Faire eyes that were of such a wondrous making,  
That none beheld, but lou'd them & were they past.

If this be true, beauty from vs departs,  
Lone vanquish'd weepes, that conquered her before,  
And she that gaue life to a thousand hearts,  
Is dead, yet liues in my heare enermore.

What good henceforth is worthy of our lone?  
Since perfectest is soone straight still,  
As shadow doth after the body moone,  
So eny good is seconded with ill.

Cleon, it seemes, thy destiny haib sworne  
Euen in thy East to finish vp thy day,  
And that thy beautey dead, as soone as borne,  
Should meete her coffin in her cradles way.

No, thou diest not, it is much rather I,  
Since all my life I living tooke from thee,  
If louers life in thine beloued lie,  
I hausing lou'd shee, thou renisht in me.

So if I live, Lone gives the world to know,  
That his command he can to death impart,  
Or being God, his mighty power to shew,  
Makes Louer live without or soule or heart.

Bre Cleon, if the will of Fate be so,  
Of humane frailty that the smart you trie,  
Lone wils to yours my fortune equall grow,  
Ten by my plaints, I by your death doe die.

Thus I powre forth my plaints, that new life brings,  
Death to surprise my sorrow being lame,  
And my two eyes changed to lasting springs,  
Bewaile mine ill, but cannot lesse the same.

## The History

When loue with me (to shew compassion)  
 Laments this faire losse, whence my paines distill,  
 Drie (saith he) teares, mourne in another fussion:  
 So much all teares are lesser then our ill.

*Licidas* and *Phillis* were very curious to know the griefe of this shepheard, if their own would haue giuen them leaue; but seeing he had as much need of consolation as themselues, they woul d not ioyn another mans euill to their owne, and so leauing the other shepheards attentiue to finde it out, they held on their way, no man following them: for the desire euery one had to know what this vndeowne company might be, *Licidas* was not gone far, before they heard another voice some good way off, which seemed to come towards them, and they willing to harken, were hindred by the shephearde, who held the shepheards head in her lap, with these complaints: Well, thou cruell, well, shepheard without pitty, how long shall this obstinate humour of thine indure against my prayers? How long hast thou determined that I should be disdained and contemned for a thing that is not? and for the sake of one dead, I should bee deprived of that which cannot profit it? Consider *Tyrcis*, consider, thou Idolater of the dead, and enemy to the liuing; what the perfection of my loue is, and begin at last, begin to loue the person that liues, and not them that are dead, whom you must leaue in rest to God, and not disquiet their happy cinders with vnprofitable teares, and take heed, lest in holding on thus, you draw not on you the vengeance of your cruelty and iniustice.

The shepheard not turning his eyes to her, answered coldly, Would to God, faire shephearde, I might be suffered to giue you satisfaction with my death: for to free you and my selfe also of the payne wherein we are, I would choose it rather then my life: but since, as you haue told me, this were but to increase your griefe; I beseech thee, *Lionice*, enter into thy selfe, and consider how small reason thou hast, to make my deare *Cleon* dye twice. It is sufficient (since my mis-hap will haue it so) that she hath once paid the tribute of her humanity; then, if after her death she be reuiued in me by force of my loue, why (cruell) will you haue her dye againe, by the forgetfulness which a new loue will cause in my soule? No, no, shepheard, your reproaches shall never haue such power ouer me, to make me to content to so wicked a counsell, because that which you call cruelty, I name faithfulness; and that which you thinke worthy punishment, I judge it to deserue high commendation. I haue told you, that in my Tombe, the memory of my *Cleon* shall liue by my bones: that which I haue sayd to you,

you, I haue a thousand times sworne to the immortall gods, and to this faire soule which is now with them: and thinke you that they will suffer *Tyrcis* to goe vnpunished, if forgetfull of his oath, he become vnfaythfull? Ah! I shall sooner see the heauens cast forth their lightning on my head, then euer offend either my oath, or my deare *Cleon*. She would haue replied, but that then the shepheard that went on singing, interrupted them, by comming vpon them with these verses:

The Song of *Hylas*.

If she disdaine me, then adew,  
 I leave the cruell with her scorne,  
 Not staying till the morrow morne,  
 Before I chuse a mistresse new.  
 It were a faine my selfe to pine,  
 By force to draw her loue to mine.

They for the most part are so wise,  
 They make no reckoning of our loues,  
 Wherein their heart a fire mones:  
 But that the flame must not arise;  
 So that we kindle other fires,  
 While we pursue our owne desires.

The ouer-faythfull vow-keeper,  
 Abnsed by his loyalty,  
 Loues beauty stift with cruelty:  
 Seemes he not Idoll worshipper,  
 That from an Image nothing strong,  
 Never findes succor for his wrong?

They say, who open passage leaue  
 To be importunde euery day,  
 At last must give himselfe away.  
 But so we little good receive,  
 When we may easly meete some one  
 To be importunate upon.

These Lovers, la, that faithfull are,  
Are alwaies full of dolorous feares,  
Deepe sighes, complaints, and shouering teares,  
Are commonly their daintiest fare.  
It seemes the Lovers chieuest part,  
Is onely to weepe out his heart.

A man, how can you call him well,  
That manly honour layd aside,  
Cries like a boy, cannot abida  
Apples losse, or Wall-nuts-shell  
May you not rather call him foole,  
That lones such disppling in Lones schaole?

But I, who all such follies flye,  
That nothing bring with them but care,  
By others harmes warnid to beware,  
Doe alwaies use my liberty,  
And am not discontent at all,  
That they doe me insconstante call.

At these last verses the shepheard was come so neare to *Tyrcis*, that he might discerne the teares of *Laonice*, and because, though they were strangers, yet they knew one the other; and to busie them awhile by the way, the shepheard knowing the sorrow of *Laonice* and *Tyrcis*, rowsed himselfe to accost them in this manner: O desolate shepheard (for by reason of this sadde time of life, such was the name that every man gaue him) if I should be like you, I should thinke my selfe most vnhappy. *Tyrcis* hearing him speake, rose vp to answer him. And I, *Hylas*, if I were in your place, how might you call me vnhappy? If I must lament (reioyned he) as you do for all the Mistresses that I haue lost, I should haue cause to complaine longer then I haue to liue. If you do like me, answered *Tyrcis*, you should lament but onely for one. If you do like me, replied *Hylas*, that I account you miserable: for if nothing can be the sufficient price of Loue, but Loue, you were never loued of any, seeing you never loued any; and so you may trade in many loues, but not buy any, not hauing the money which is payed for such a commoditie. But how know you (answering *Hylas*) that I never loued? I know it (said *Tyrcis*) by your perpetuall

perpetuall changes. We are (said he) of a differing opinion; for I believe, the more expert the workman is, the more he exerciseth the mysterie whereof he makes profession. It is true, answered *Tyrcis*, when one fol- lowes the rules of Art, but when they do otherwise, it falleth out to them 'as to men out of their way', the further they go, the more they wander from it. Therefore it is, that as the stone that continually roules, gets no mosse, but rather durt and filth; in like maner, your lightnesse may gaine you shame, but neuer loue. You must know, *Hylas*, that the stripes of loue will neuer be healed. God keepe me (said *Hylas*) from any one such stripe. You haue reason, replyed *Tyrcis*, for if euery time you are strucke with a new beauty, you had receiued an incurable wound, I know not whether in all your body you had had a free place. But so you should be deprived of those sweetes and happinesses which loue brings to the true louers, and that miraculously (as all his other actions) by the same stroke that he gaue them, so that if the tongue were able to expresse that which the heart cannot entirely relish, and it were permitted you to heare the secrets of this god, I do not beleue but you would willingly renounce your infidelity. Then *Hylas* smilng, Without faining (said he) you haue reason, *Tyrcis*, to put your selfe into the number of them whom Loue ver- seth so kindely. As for me, if he vse all others as he doth you, I will wil- lingly forgoe my part, and let you enjoy alone your felicities and con- tentments, and feare not that I shall euer enuy you. It is aboue a mon- th since we ordinarily met together; tell me the day, the houre, or the moment, in which I could see your eyes without the wished company of teares; and on the contrary, name me the day, the houre and moment, in which you heard me onely sigh for my loues. Every man that hath not his taste peruerted, as you haue your iudgement, will he not find the delights of my life more pleasing and louely then the ordinary pangs of yours?

And turning to the shepheardeesse which had complained of *Tyrcis*: And you (insensible shepheardeesse,) will neuer take the courage to free your selfe of the tyranny, in which this vnnaturall shepheard makes you liue. Will you by your patience make your selfe companion in his fault? Know you not that he glories in your teares, and that your supplicati- ons raile him to such an arrogancie, that he thinkes he bindeth you won- derfully to him, when he heares you with misprisall? The shepheardeesse with a great alas answered him, It is easie, *Hylas*, for him that is in health, to counsell the sicke; but if you were in my place, you would know how vaine it is thus to aduise me, and that this griefe may well drue my soule

out of my body, but not by reason chase this ouer-strong passion out of my scule: So that if this beloued shepheard exercise any tyranny ouer me, he may do it with more absolute command when it please him, not having power to wish more of me, then his authoritie ouer me reacheth to already. Then giue ouer your counsels, *Hylas*, and cease your reproches, which can but encrease my cuill, without hope of asswaging. For I am so entirely the possession of *Tircis*, that I haue not command of mine owne will. How (said the shepheard) is not your will your owne? What will it profit to loue and serue you? *Laonice* answered, As much as the amity which I tender to this shepheard auayles me. That is to say, replied *Hylas*, I shall lose my time and my paines; and when I discouer vnto you my affection, this is but to waken in you the words wherewith you may serue your owne turne when you speake to *Tircis*. What would you, *Hylas*, that I should say more to you, but that it is long since I haue gone bewayling this mis-happe, but much better in my consideration then in yours? I doubt not (sayd *Hylas*) but since you be of this humour, and the shepheardesse (sayd he) reaching forth his hand, or giue me leaue, or take it of me; and be assured, that if you will not, I will not be long before I goe backe, as being ashamed to serue so poore a Mistris. Shee answered him very coldly, Neither you nor I shall receiue any great losse, at the least I assure you, this shall never make me forget the hard vsage which I haue from this shepheard. If you haue (answered he) as much knowledge of that which you lose in losing me, as you shew small reason in the pursuite you vndertake, you will rather complaine for the losse of me, then to wish for the affection of *Tircis*? But the sorrow which you take for me shall be very small, if it can not equall that which I haue for you; and then sung out these verses as he went away.

## A SONNET.

Since we must needs pull up that deep-set roote,  
Which Loue, in seeing you, plants in my brest:  
And which Desire, with so great longing thirst,  
Hath with so great care nurst to so small boote.  
Since it must be, that Time which saw is borne,  
Must triumph in the end as Conquerour:  
Attempt we bravely freed from Sorrows power,  
Let vs as one blow cut both floure and thorne.

Chafe

Chase we all these desires, those fires put out,  
Breake we these lines knotted with many boughes,  
And of our selues let vs take free farewell.  
So shall we vanquish Loue, that untamed Lord,  
And wisely do out of our owne accord,  
That whereto Time at last will vs compell.

If this shepheard had come into this Country, in a time lesse troublesome, without doubt he had found many friends; but the sorrow for *Celadon*, whose losse was so fresh, as it made all them that dwelt thereabout so heauy, that they could not attend his conceits, and therfore they let him go without being curious to question either him or *Tircis*, what was the cause that led them thither. Some of them returned to their lodging, and others continued on their search for *Celadon*, and coasted now on this side, and then on that side the Riuver, not leauing euен a brier, nor tree, nor bush, whose shaddowed hollownesse they discouered not. Yet was this in vaine, for they found no more newes for all their search; only *Silander* met *Polemas* alone, not far from that place, where a little before *Galathe* and the other Nymphs had taken vp *Celadon*, and because he had the command of all the Countrey, vnder the authority of the Nymph *Amasis*, the shepheard, who had often seene him at *Marsellis*, did him all the honour he could in his salutation: and for that he asked, what it was he searched for along the shore, he told him of the losse of *Celadon*: whereat *Polemas* was displeased, hauing alwayes loued them of that family.

On the other side, *Licidas*, which was wandring with *Phillis*, after he had beeene somewhat silent, at last turning to her: Well, faire shepheardesse what thinke you of the humor of your companion? She which as yet was ignorant of the ielousie of *Astrea*, answered; It was the smallest displeasure that might befall her, and that in so great sorrow he might well be permitted to auoid and fly from all company. For *Phillis* thought he had complained, for that she was come forth alone. It is true, said *Licidas*, it is small, but yet I hold, that in truth it is the greatest, and I must tell you, she is the most vnthankfull in the world, and most vnworthy to bee beloued. See, for Gods sake, what her humor is; my brother never had any desire, nay, so far was he of, he had not the power to loue any but her onely: she knew it well enough, cruell as she is; for the proofes which he hath giuen her, leaue nothing in doubt, the time hath bene ouerpast, the difficulties, or rather the impossibilities cōtemned, the absences ouer-came,

came, the parents anger neglected, her rigors, her cruelties, her disdaines sustained, and that for so long time, that I know no man could do more then *Celadon*, and yet for all this will not this fickle piece, who, as I thinke, hauing ingratefully changed her mind, is sorry to see him longer liue, whom at other times she hath done little lesse then cause to dye by her rigours, and whom at this time she knew shee hath vnworthily offended: this fickle piece, I say, will not, who dissembling vnder a new pretence of hate and ialousie, commands him to eternall exile, and a despaire euен to seeking out of death. O God, said *Phillis* all amazed, what doe you tell me, *Licidas*? is it possible that *Astrea* should commit such a fault? It is too true, answered the shepheard, she told me a part of it her selfe, & the rest I may easily iudge of by her discourse. But well, though shee triumph ouer the life of my brother, and that her perfidiousnesse and ingratitude giue a vizard to her fault, as ifshe had ouerloued him, yet will I sweare vnto you, that never Louer had more affection and fidelity then he, not that I care she should know it, vnlesse it might bring her some extreme displeasure by the knowledge of what might haue faine out by her error: for hence forth I will be as much her mortall enemie, as my brother hath bene her faithfull seruant, and shee vnworthy to be beloued. So went *Licidas* and *Phillis* discoursing, he infinitely displeased with the death of his brother, and as much enraged against *Astrea*, and shee sorry for *Celadon*, troubled with the griefe of *Licidas*, and astonished at the ialousie of her companion: but seeing that the stroke was yet very sensible, she would not as yet apply any strong remedies, but only gentle preparatiues, to sweeten & not to confound; for in any case shee would not that the losse of *Celadon*, should cost her *Licidas*: and shee considered well, that if the hatred should continue betweene him and *Astrea*, of necessity shee must breake with one of them: and yet loue was vnwilling to giue place to friendship, and friendship to loue; and so the one would not consent to the death of the other. On the other side, *Astrea* euен full with so great occasions of sorrow as I haue told you, giuing such way to her teares, and so languished in her dolors, that for not hauing teares now to wash away her errour, nor words to expresse her sorrow, her eyes and mouth gaue vp their office to her imaginatioun, so long, that weakned with ouer-much griefe, shee fell asleepe with such thoughts.

The end of the first Booke.



## THE SECOND BOOKE of *Astrea* and *Celadon*.

**V**hile these things passed in this sort among the shepheards and shepheardeſſes, *Celadon* receiued, from the three Nymphs in the palace of *Iſonzo*, all the best helpeſ that possibly they might: but the weakenesse which the wa-ter brought him, was so great, that notwithstanding all the remedies they applied, he could not open his eies, nor giue other ſigne of life, but by the beating of his heart. In this ſort hee paſſed the reſt of the day, and a good part of the night, before hee came to hiſelfe, and then when he opened his eyes, it was not without great aſtoniſhment, to finde hiſelfe where he was; for he remembred well enough what beſell him on the ſhore of *Zigno*, and that deſpair had made him leaſt into the water, but he knew not how he came into this place: and after hee had ſtayed ſome while conſounded with theſe thoughts, hee asked hiſelfe whether he were aliue or dead? If I liue (ſaid he) how is it poſſible that the cruelty of *Aſtrea* doth not cauſe me to die? Or if I be dead, what is it, O Loue, that thou commett to ſearch for in darkeneſſe? Art thou not contented to haue had my life, but thou wilt among the cinders kindle a-ſtreach the ancient flames? And because the baſie care whereiſ *Aſtrea* had left him, was not abandoned, caſted to his minde all his thoughts, hee went on: And thou, moſt cruell remembrance of my paſſed good, why doest thou repreſent vnto mee, the diſpleaſure which ſhee ſome-tiſes had for my losſe, to make my too true hurt worse by her thoughts: whereas in place thereof, for mine eaſe, thou ſhouleſt rather tell mee the contentment ſhe hath for the hatred ſhe beares me? With a thouſand ſuch iſtagations, this poore ſhepheard fell into ſo ſound a ſleepe, that the Nymphs had leaſure to come and ſee how he did: and finding him a ſleepe, they ſoftly opened the windowes and the curtains, and ſate down about

about to view him the better. *Galathee*, after she had somewhat considered, was the first that said in a low voyce, that they might not awake him: How is this shepheard changed from that he was yesterday? & how fresh a colour is come into his face in so short time? For my part, I am not sorry for the trauaile of my iourney, since we haue saued his life: For as you say, mayd (turning to *Silvie*) he is one of the principall of that Countrey. Madame, answered the Nymph, it is most true, for his father is *Alcippe*, and his mother *Amarillis*. What, said she, that *Alcippe*, of whom I haue heard so much, and who to rescue his friend, brake vp the prison of the *Visigots*? It is the very same, said *Silvie*: I saw him about five or sixe moneths ago, at an Holy-day-Feast, in the Hamlets that stand along the riuer of *Lignon*, and for that, aboue all the rest, *Alcippe* in my iudgement, was most worthy to be respected. I long time held mine eyes on him: for the grātity of his beard and venerable olde age, made him to be honoured and esteemed of euery man. But as for *Celadon*, I remember, that of all the yong shepheards, none but he and *Siluander* durst come neere me. By *Siluander* I knew what was *Celadm*, and by *Celadon* what *Siluander* was. Both the one and the other had in their behauour and discourse, somewhat more generous then the name of Shepheard required. While *Siluy* was thus speaking, *Loue*, to make sport with the deceit of *Climanth* and *Polemas*, which were the cause of *Galates* going foorth that day, to the place where she tooke vp *Celadon*, beganne to make the Nymph feele the effects of a new desire. For while *Siluy* spake, *Galates* had her eyes fast vpon the shepheard; and the praises she gaue him, were the cause, that at the same time, his beautie, and his vertue, the one, by the view, and the other, by the hearing, gaue a blow to her soule, and that more easily, for that she was prepared by the practices of *Climanth*, who seeming to be a diuine, had fore-told her, that he whom she should meet with, where she found *Celadon*, was to be her husband, vnlesse she would be the most vnfourtunate person in the world, hauing before laid a plot, that *Polemas* (as it were by chance) should be there going at the houre which he had appoynted him, that being deluded by this tricke, she might be made willing to marry him, which otherwise, the affection which she bare to *Lindamor*, would not suffer. But Fortune and *Loue* mocking at this wisedome, made them finde *Celadon* by the chance which I told you of. So that *Galates* determining, in any sort to loue this shepheard, went purposely to represent to her self euery thing in him more louely. And seeing that he awaked not, that she might leaue him to his more quiet rest, she got out as sofy as possibly she coul d,

Lib. 2.  
could, and went to intertaine her new thoughts.

There was by her chamber a pretty staire, which descended into a lower gallery, where by a draw-bridge they might enter into a garden furnished with all the rarities which the place could admit, were it in Fountaines, in quarters, were it in allies and arbours, nothing being forgotten that arte could adde to it. At the going out of this place, one might enter into a great wood of diuers sorts of trees, wherof one was of Hasels which altogether made so pleasing a Labyrinth, that though the paths by their diuers turnings lost themselues confusedly, the one within the other, yet were they very delightsome for their shaddowes.

Not far off within another quarter, was the fountaine of the truth of loue, a spring indeed very marueilous: for by the force of enchantments, the louer when he looked into it, might see her whom hee loued: if he were beloued of her, he should see himselfe hard by her: if it fortuned she loued another, the other should be represented, & not himselfe: and because it discouered the deceits of louers, they named it The truth of Loue. In another of the quarters, was the den of *Damon* & *Fortune*; & lastly, the hole of *Mandrague*, full of such rarities and so many sorceries, that houre after houre there falls out alwaies some new thing: besides that, thorowout the rest of the wood, there be many other diuers caues liuely counterfayted, that the eye often beguiles the iudgement.

Now it was within this garden that the Nymph came out to walke, attending for the awaking of the shepheard; and because her new desires would not suffer her to hold her peace, she fained to haue forgotten something, which she commanded *Silvie* to go and seeke for, for that she put the lesse trust in her for her youth, then in *Leonide*, who was much elder; both these Nymphs were trusted with her greatest secrets. And being her selfe alone with *Leonide*, she said to her, What thinke you, *Leonide*? hath not the Druyde great knowledge of things? and doe not the gods very liberally communicate with him; since the things that are to come, are better known to him, then the present to vs? Without doubt (answred the Nymph) he made you see right truly, in the glasse, the very place where you found this shepheard; and he told you truly the time, in which you met with him; but his speeches were so doubtfull, that I can hardly beleue he vnderstands himself. Why say you so (answered *Galathee*) since he told me so particularly all that I haue found, that I know not now to say more then he did? So me thinkes it was (answered *Leonide*) that he onely told you, you should finde in that place there, a iewell incstmable, which when it came to passe, was a thing to be scorned. *Galathee* then laughing

laughing at her, said, Why, *Leonide*, know you nothing else? Then must you learne what he told me in particular. Madame, you haue two influences quite contrary; the one, the most infortunate that may be vnder heauen; the other, the most happy that a man may desire: and it dependeth of your owne election, to take that which you will; and that you may not deceiue your selfe, know that you are, and shalbe serued of many great Knights, whose vertues and merits may diuersly moue you; but if you measure your affection either to their merits, or to the iudgement which you shall giue of their loue, and not by that which I instruct you, on the behalfe of the gods, I fore-tell you, you shalbe the most miserable that liues: and that you be not deceiued in your election, remember that on such a day, that you see at *Marsellys* a Knight attired in such a colour, who seekes, or shall seek to marry you (for if you admit him from thence, I shall ever bewaile your misfortune, and I cannot sufficiently threaten against you the incredible disasters which attend you) and therefore I aduise you to flee from that man whom you may rather terme your misfortune then your louer. But contrarily, marke well the place which is represented within this glasse, to the end you may know to find him along the riuier of *Lignon*. For such a day, at such an houre, you shall meeete a man, in the loue of whom the heauens haue placed all your felicitie. If you can so worke that he may loue you, thinke not the gods good of their word, if you can wish for more contentment then you shall haue; but haue care, that the first of you two that first sees the other, be the party that first loues. Thinke you not, that this is to speake plainly and clearely; especially for that I haue since fel these predictions true which he gaue me. For, hauing seene this shepheard first (I must not lie) mee thinke I find in me certayne sparkles of goodwill to him. How Madam! (said *Leonide*) will you loue a shepheard? Do you not remember who you are? I do so *Leonide*, said she, I remember my selfe well enough; but you must also know, that these shepheards are as good as Druides or Knights, & their Nobility is as great as others; being all descended from the antiquity of the same stocke, so that the exercise whereto they addicte themselves, cannot make vs others then we are from our birth; so that if this shepheard be wel borne, why should not I think him as worthy of me as any other? Finally, Madam (said she) he is a shepheard, how euer you disguise him. In fine, said *Galathee*, he is an honest man, how euer you will qualifie him.

But Madam (answered *Leonide*) you that are so great a Nymph, the Lady after *Amasis*, of all these goodly Countries, wil you haue a minde so base,

base, to loue a man borne of the meane sort of people, a clowne, a shepheard, a fellow of no worth? My friend (replied *Galathee*) leue these reproches, and remember that *Enone* made her selfe a shepheardesse for *Paris*, and when she had lost him, she lamented, and wept away in hot teares. Madame (said *Leonide*) he was the sonne of a King; and besides, the error of another ought not to cause you to fall into the same fault. If it be a fault, answered she, I referre my selfe to the gods, who haue counselled me by the Oracle of their Druide: but that *Celadon* is not borne of as good bloud as *Paris*, my friend, thou hast no brayn if thou sayst so; for, are they not sprung of one originall? Moreover, haue you not heard what *Silvie* talkt of him and his father? You must know that they are not shepheards, for not hauing meanes to liue otherwise, but to buy by this sweete life, an honest quietnesse. And how, Madame, reioyned *Leonide*, haue you also forgot the affection and seruices of the gentle *Lindamaur*? I would not, said *Galathee*, that forgetfulness should be the reward of his seruices, neither would I also, that the loue I ought to bear him, should be the ruine of all my contentments. Ah Madame, said *Leonide*, remember how faithfull he hath beene. Ah my friend, said *Galathee*, consider that this is the way to be eternally vnhappy. For my part, answered *Leonide*, I shrug with my shoulders at these iudgements of loue, and know not what to say, but onely, that extreme affection, and intire fidelitie, the employmant of an whole age, and a continuall seruice, should not be so long receiued; or receiued, deserue to be payd with other money then a change. For Gods sake, Madame, consider how deceitfull they are, that tell other mens fortunes, that for the most part, they are but sleight imaginations which their dreames brought forth; for the most part lying, that of an hundred accidents which they fore-tell, hardly one falls out to be true, and for the most part, ignorant, since busying themselves to know the fortune of another, they cannot finde their own. And doe not you, for the fantasticall discourse of this fellow, make so miserable the man that is so deare to you. Set before your eyes how hee loues you, in what dangers he hath beene thrust into for you; what combate he had with *Polemas*, and what his despaire hath bin; what grieves doe you now prepare for him, and what deathes will you cause him to inuent for his destruction, if he haue knowledge of this. *Galathee* wagging her head, answered her: You see, *Leonide*, the busynesse is not now about the choyce of *Lindamaur*, or *Polemas*, as heretofore, but of my wel, or euil doing. The considerations which you haue, are good to you whom my misfortune touches not, but by way of compassion, yet to me they are exceeding

exceeding dangerous, since it is not for a day, but for euer, that this misfortune threatens me. If I were in your place, and you in mine, it may be, I would aduise you as you doe me. But vndoubtedly an euerlasting misfortune terrifies me: as for the lyes of these men you speake of, I will beleue for your sake, that it may be it will not so fall out, yet it may be also, that it will fall out; and then tell me, I pray you, thinke you that party for wise, that for the contentment of another, wil leauue on the ballance (it may be) all his good or euill? If you loue me, hold not on this discourse, otherwise I must thinke that you respect more the contentment of *Lindamaur*, then mine. And touching him, make no question but he will seeke his consolation by some other meanes then death: for both reason and time are both soueraigne helpe to this fury; and indeed, how many haue you scene of these great despaires vpon like occasion, that, some while after, haue not repented of their despaires?

Thus did these faire Nymphs discourse, when far off they saw *Silvie* returne, from whom, because she was so yong, *Galathee* was desirous to conceale it, as I said. This was the cause she cut off her discourse so short: yet she forbare not to say to *Leonide*, If euer you loued me, you would make it appeare to me at this time, since it is not only far from my contentment, but from my felicity also. *Leonide* could not answere her, because *Silvie* was so neere that she might overheare. Being come, *Galathee* knew that *Celadon* was awake: for at the doore she heard him groane and sigh. And it was true: for in a whilie after they were gone out of the charaber, he waked suddenly, and because the Sun shone full on his bed, thorow the glasse, at the opening of his eyes, he was so dazled and confounded with so great brightnesse, that he knew not where he was, the trauaile of the day passed had so weakened him; yet by this time he felt no maner of grief: so that calling into his mind his fall into *Lignon*, and the opinion that hee had had a little before of being dead, seeing himselfe now in so confused a brightnesse, he knew not what to iudge, except it were that Loue had taken him vp into heauen for a reward of his faithfulnessse: and that which abused him more in this point, was, that when his sight began to extend it selfe, hee saw nothing about him, but the deckings of gold and of lightsome pictures, with which all the roome was adorned, & which his feeble eyes could not as yet discerne from counterfeit.

On the one side, hee saw *Saturne* leaning on his sickle, with his haire long, his forehead rough, his eyes hollow, his nose hooked like an Egle, his mouth dropping with bloud, & full with the morsels of his children, whereof he held one halfe eaten in his left hand; in which, in the opening which

Lib. 2.

which he had made on the side with his teeth, a man might see the lights, as it were to pant, and the heart to tremble. A sight indeed full of cruelty: for that child had the head writhed ouer the shoulders, the arme hanging forward, and the legs stretching out one way and other, all red with the bloud which issued from the wound which the olde man had made, whose long beard & locks, in many places, were stained with the bloud which fell from the morsels which he tore out to deuoure; his armes and legs full of nerues, and were in diuers places couered with haire, his thighs leane and flesh-falne, vnder his feete lay great pieces of bones, whereof some were white for age, some began but to bee bare, and others ioyned with a little skin and flesh halfe consumed, shewed that they were but lately layd there.

Neere him one might see nothing but Scepters in pieces torne, Crowns, great buildings ruined, & that in such sort, that hardly remained any liuely resemblance of what they had bene.

Not farre from thence, one might see the *Corebanes* with their Cymballs and Hoboyes, hide the little *Jupiter* in a den, from the deuouring teeth of that father. Then a little besides, you might see him grown great with a visage enflamed, but graue and full of maiesty, his eyes milde, but striking an awe, a Crowne on his head, in his left hand a Scepter, which he rested on his thigh, where was yet to be scene the skarre of the wound which he made, when through the imprudence of the Nymph *Semele*, that he might sauie the little *Bacchus*, he was constraind to open that part, and to beare him vntill the end of the terme: In his other hand he had the lightening cast into three poynts, which was so liuely represented, that it seemed then to flie in the aire. He had his feete on a great Globe, and by him you might see a great Eagle, that bare in his hooked beake, a thunderbolt, and came neere him, raysing the head toward him, as high as his knees. On the backe of this Bird was the young *Ganimede*, attired after the fashion of the that dwell in the mount *Ida* fat, plump, white, his lockes golden and frizled, that with one hand stroked the head of the Bird, and with the other, reached foorth to take the lightening from *Jupiter*, who with his elbow, and not otherwise, gently thrust aside his feeble arme. A little aside might one see the Cup and Ewre, in which this little taster that serued Nectar to his Master, so liuely set out, that this young seruitour striuing to waite at *Jupiters* hand, stumbled with one foote, it seemed to be ready to fall, and the little one purposely turned his head, to see how it came. At the foote of this god was a great vessell, on the righthand was the good, and on the other the euill, and within

within were vowes, prayers and sacrifices, diuersly figured: for the sacrifice was represented by the smoke, intermingled with fire; and within, the vowes and supplications seemed like quicke Ideaes, and halfe marked, but so, that the eie might discerne it.

It would be too long a Discourse, to relate particularly all those pictures. So it was, that every part of the Chamber was full: euen *Venus* her selfe within her marine shell, among other things, casteth her eye on the starre the Greeks had made her in the warres of *Troy*. And on the other side, you might see little *Cupid* making much of her, with the hurt on his shoulder, from the lampe of the curious *Pische*: And this so well represented, that the shepheard could not discerne it from counterfeit. And after he had beene long in these thoughts, the three Nymphes entered the Chamber, the beauty and maiesty of whom rauished him yet into a greater admiration. But that which perswaded him the rather to the opinion that he was dead, was, that when he saw the Nymphes, he tooke them to be the three Graces, and especially, seeing the little *Merill* come in with them, whose height, youth, beauty, with his haire frizled, and louely fashion, made him judge him to be Loue. And though he were confounded in himselfe, yet sc it was, that that courage which he had alwayes greater then fitted the name of a shepheard, gave him assurance (after he had saluted them) to demaund in what place he was. Whereto *Galathee* answered: *Celadon*, you are in a place where they haue a desire to recover you wholy: we are they, that finding you in the water, haue conuoyed you hither, where you haue all at your command.

Then *Silvie* raysing her selfe, *Celadon*, said she, is it possible you should not know me? doe you remember you haue seene me in your hamlet? I know not, faire Nymph (answered *Celadon*) if the state wherein I am, may excuse the feeblenesse of my memory. How, sayd the Nymph? remember you no better, that the Nymph *Silvie*, and two of her companions went to see your sacrifices and sports, the day that you consecrated to the Goddess *enus*? The accident befallie you, hath it made you forget, that after you had w in the prize from your fellowes, at the Lute, *Silvie* was she that gaue you for reward a garland of flowers, which presently you set on the head of *Astrea*? I know not if all these things bee blotted out of your memory: but this I know wel, that when you layd the garland on the faire haire of *Astrea*, euery one wondred, because of the hatred that had bene betweene your two families, and particularly betweene *Alcippo* your father, & *Ales* the father of *Astrea*. And then was I desirous to know the occasion; but they so confounded me, that I could know nothing else but

Lib. 2.  
but that *Amarillis* having bene beloued of these two shepheards, and that betweene the riualls there hath alwayes bene small friendship, they came oftentimes to handblowes, vntill *Amarillis* espoused your father, and then *Ales*, and the wife *Hipolita* whom hee after maried, nourished so great hatred against them, that it would neuer after suffer them to conuerse together. Now see, *Celidon*, if I know you not well enough, and if I giue you not good tokens of that I say. The shepheard hearing these words, by little and little, came to memory of that which she said, and yet hee was so astonished, that he knew not what to answere.

For not knowing *Silvie*, but for the Nymph of *Amasis*, and by reason of his country life, hauing had no familiarity with her, nor with her companions, he could not iudge for what cause, nor how he was at this present among them. In the end he answered: That which you say (faire Nymph) is very true: that on *Venus* her day three Nymphes gaue the three prizes, whereof I had that for the Lute; *Licidas* my brother that for the course, which he gaue to *Phillis*; and *Siluander*, that for the song, which he presented to the daughter of the faire *Belinde*; but remember the names which they had, I can not: so that being hindered from our sports, all that wee were content to know, was, that they were the Nymphs of *Amasis* and *Galathee*. For as for vs, as our bodies part not from our pastures, so our sports make vs nothing curious. And then (replied *Galathee*) Haue you knowne no more? That which informed my knowledge (answered the shepheard) was the discourse which my father made me often of his fortunes, in the which I haue often heard him make mention of *Amasis*; but not of any thing particularly that concerned her, though I haue earnestly desired him. This desire (replies *Galathee*) is very commendable, to giue him satisfaction, and therefore I will tell you particularly, both what *Amasis* is, and what we are.

Know then (gentle shepheard) that of antiquitie, this Country which at this present is called *Forrests*, was couered with great Lakes of water, and that there was nothing but the high mountaynes that you see round about that was vncouered, except some points within the middle of the Plaine, as the rocke of the wood of *Isoure*, and of mount *Verdm*, so that the Inhabitants abode on the topes of the mountaines: And therefore it is, that euen yet the ancient families of this Countrey haue the buildings of their names in the more lofty places, and in the high mountaines. And for proofe of that I say, you may yet on the toppe of *Isoure*, and mount *Verdm*, and about the Castle of *Marsellis*, see great rings of yron in the rocke where the vessels were fastened, there being no likelihood they could

could serue for any other vse. But, it may be, about some foureteene or fifteene ages since, a certaine Romane, who in ten yeeres conquered all the Gaules, caused some mountaines to be cut downe, by which the water voyded away; and not long after, the bosome of our Plaines were discouered, which seemed so pleasant and fertile, that he purposed to haue it inhabited; and for this purpose, he made all those that liued in the mountaines, and within the forrests, to descend, and willed, that the first building that was then made, should beare the name of *Julius*, which he had; and because the place was moist and slimy, it yeeded great store of trees. Some say the place was called Forrests, and the people, Forresters, in stead of *Segusians*, which they were named before: but they are much deceiued. For the name of *Forrests* commeth of *Forum*, which is *Fews*, a little towne which the Romanes caused to be built, and which they named *Forum Segusiorum*, as if they would say, The place or the March of the *Segusians*, which properly is but the place where they kept their armes, during the time that they gaue order to the neighbour countries.

See, *Coladon*, what they hold for certaine, of the Antiquity of this Prouince: but there are two opinions contrary to this, which I would tell you. The Romanes say, that from the time that our plaine was yet covered with water, the chaste Goddess *Diana* delighted so much in it, that she abode in it almost continually: for her *Driades*, and *Amadriades* liued and hunted in this great Wood, and high mountaines which inuironed this great quantity of water: and because there were store of fountains, she came ofte to bathe her selfe with her *Nayades*, which kept there ordinarily. But when the waters were voyded, the *Nayades* were constrained to follow them, and to go with them into the bosome of the *Ocean*, so that the Goddess found her selfe at one instant destitute of the halfe part of her *Nymphes*. And this was the cause, that not being able with so small a troop to cōtinue her ordinary pastime, she chose out some daughters of the chiefe *Druides* and knights, whom she ioyned with the *Nymphes* that remained, to whom she gaue likewise the name of *Nymph*. But it fell out, as in the end, the abuse peruerst all order, that many of them, which in their youth had beene bred in the house, some among the commodities of a louing mother; others, among the allurements of lights and seruices of Louers, not able to hold out in the trauaile of hunting, nor banish out of their memorie, the honest affections of those, that sometimes made suite vnto them, would retire to their owne home, and marry: and some others, whom the Goddess denied leauue, failed in their

their promises, and in their honesty; which so much prouoked her, that she resolued to forsake that profane countrey, as she took it, for this vice, which she so much abhorred. But because she would not punish the vertue of some, with the error of others; before she went away, she ignominiously chased out, and for euer banished out of the Countrey all those which had offended, & made choyce of one, to whom she gaue the same Authority, which she had ouer all the Countrey; and willed, that for euer the race of her should haue all the command, and then permitted them to marry, but with expresse prohibition, that the men should never succeed. Since that time there was never any abuse among vs, and the lawes haue inuiolably beene obserued. But our *Druides* talke in another manner; for they lay, that our great Princesse *Galathee*, the daughter of the King *Celtes*, wife of the great *Hercules*, and mother of *Galathee*, who gaue name to the *Gaules*, who formerly had beene called *Celtes*, full of loue to her husband, followed him, whither his courage and vertue carried him, among the *Monsters*, and against the *Gyants*.

And by fortune, at that time the mountaines which separated vs from *Auern*, and those which bend towards the left hand, which they call *Cemene* and *Gebeno*, serued for a place of retrait to some *Giants*, which by their force made themselues terrible to all men. *Hercules* being aduertised hereof, came; and because he loued very tenderly his deare *Galathee*, he left her, in this country which was next neighbour, and wherein she tooke great pleasure, what for the game, what for the company of the daughters of that country. And for that she was Queene of all the *Gaules*, when *Hercules* had vanquished the *Giants*, and that the necessity of his affaires compelled him to go other where, before their departure to leauue an eternall memory of the delight she tooke in this country, she made those ordinances, which the Romanes say, the Goddess *Diana* did. But were it *Galathee* or *Diana*, so it is, that by a supernaturall priuiledge we haue beene particularly maintained in our franchises, since that of so many peoples, which like a torrent, were powred out ouer all *Gaule*, there was not one that hath disquieted vs in our repose. Euen *Alaricke* king of the *Visigots*, when with *Aquitaine* he had conquered all the Provinces on this side *Loyre*, hauing knowne our statutes, confirmed our priuiledges, and without usurping any authority ouer vs, left vs in our ancient franchises. It may be you may thinke it strange that I talke to you so particularly of the things, which are beyond the capacity of those of my age: but you must know, that *Pimander*, who was my father, hath beene curious to search out the antiquities of this Countrey, in such sort, that the more understanding *Druides* discoursed to him ordinarily, while he

he was at his meale : and I, that almost alwayes was with him, remembred that which liked me best. And thus I knew, that in one continuall line, *Amasis* my mother was descended from them, whom the goddesse *Diana* or *Galathee* made choice of. And therefore it is, that being Lady of all those Countries, and hauing yet a sonne called *Clidaman*, she brings vp with vs a number of maydens and daughters of the *Draides* and knights, who beeing in so good a schoole, learne all the vertues which their age will permit. The maides go attyred as you see vs, which is a kind of habite that *Diana* or *Galathee* vslid to weare, and which wee haue alwayes maintained in memory of her. See, *Celadon*, that which you desire to know of our estate, and I make account before you goe away, (for I would you will see vs all together) that you might say that our company giueth place to none other, neyther in vertue nor yet in beautie.

Now *Celadon* knowing who these faire Nymphes were, knew also what respect he was to shew them; and though he had not beeene accusstomed to be among others then Shepheards his like, yet such was the good breeding that he had, that it taught him well enough what was due to such personages. Then, after he had done them the honour which he thought he was bound to: But (sayd he, holding on) I can not but be astonished, to be among so many great Nymphes, I that am but a simple shepheard, and to receiue so many fauours of them. *Celadon* (answered *Galathee*) in what place soever Virtue is, it deserues to be loued and honoured, as well vnder the habite of Shepheards, as vnder the glorious purple of kings; and for your particular, you are with vs of no lesse account, then the greatest of the *Draides* or knights in our Court: for you are not to giue place to them in fauour, sith you doe not in merit. And for your being among vs, know you, that it is not without a great mysterie from our gods, which haue appoynted it, as you may know at lemayne among the Sauages in the Forrest and countrey townes, or whether it be, that they will worke a dessigne in you, aduauncing you greater. Lue onely in rest, and looke to your health. For there is nothing you should more desire, in the state wherein you are, then health. Madam (answered the shepheard, who vnderstood not the words well) If I be to desire health, the chiefe cause is, that I may be able to doe you some seruice, in exchange of so many fauours, which it hath pleased you to doe me. It is true, that I neede not tell you that I came from the wood or pastures,

pastures, otherwise the solemne vow which our fathers haue made vnto the gods, will accuse vs to them, as vnworthy children of such fathers. And what oath is it, answered the Nymph? The history, replied *Celadon*, would be too long, if I should tell you the cause that my father *Alcippe* had to hold it. So it is, that many yeeres since, of a generall accord, all those that kept along the riuers of *Loyre*, of *Lignon*, of *Furan*, of *Argent*, and of all other riuers, after he had well vnderstood the discommoditie, which the ambition of a people called Romanes, made their neighbours feele, out of desire of dominion, assembled together in a great Plaine, which is neere the mount *Verdun*, and there by a mutuall agreement sware all, to flic for euer from all sort of ambition, for that it alone was cause of so much paynes, and to liue, they and theirs, vnder the peaceable habite of shepheards, and since that, it hath beeene obserued (the gods so well liked this vow) that none of them that made it, nor their successors, but he had trauell and paynes incredible, if he obserued it not; and among all, my father is an example most remarcable, and most new: So that hauing knowne, that the will of heauen is, that we should keepe in rest that which we haue to liue on; we haue of late renewed this vow, with so many oaths, that he that breakes it, shall become most detestable. Truely (sayd the Nymph) I am well pleased to heare that you tell me, for it is long since I heard them talke of it, and I could never yet know, why so many good and ancient Families as I haue there are among you, imploy themselues out of the townes, to spend their age in the woods and places most solitary. But, *Celadon*, if the case wherein you are, will suffer, tell me, I pray you, what hath beeene the fortune of your father *Alcippe*, to make him take againe that kinde of life, which he had so long time left; for I assure my selfe, the discourse is worthy to bee knowne. Then, though he felt himselfe yet euill of the water which he had swallowed, yet he constrained himselfe to obey her, and beganne in this sort:

The History of *Alcippe*.

Y<sup>O</sup>U command me (Madame) to tell you the fortune most croſſe and diuerſe of any man in the world, and in which one my leарne, that he that will worke trouble to another, prepares a great part to himselfe. But since you will haue it so, and that I may not disobey you, I will tell you briefly, that which I haue learned by ordinary discourse from himselfe, to whom al these things haue befallen: For, that we might understand how happy

happy we were to liue in quietnesse of spirit, my father hath often recounted vnto vs his strange fortunes. Know then (Madame) that *Alcippe*, hauing beeene bred by his father, in the simplicitie of a shepheard, had a spirit so differing from his education, that euery thing pleased him better then that that sauoured of the village. So that this young Infant, for a presage of what he would come to, and to which when he was in yeeres, he addicte<sup>d</sup> himselfe, had no greater delight, then to make assemblies of other children like himselfe, whom he tooke vpon to set in order, and to arme some with staues, some with bowes and arrows, whom he taught to draw right, the menaces of the olde and wise shepheards not being able to diuert him.

The ancients of our Hamlets seeing his actions, fore-told of great troubles in these countries; and aboue all, that *Alcippe* would be of a turbulent spirit, that would never rest within the limits of a shepherd. When he came to the halfe part of his age, by chance he fel amorous of the shepherdesse *Amarillis*, who at that time was secretly wooed of another shepherd his neighbour, called *Alce*. And because *Alcippe* had so good an opinion of himselfe, that he thought that there was not any shepheardeesse, who would not as freely enterraine his affection as he offered it, he resolued to vse no great Art to tell her it: so that meeting her at the sacrifice of *Pam*, as she returned home, he said vnto her, I never thought I was of so small force, that I could not resist the blowes of an enemy, that wounds me vnawares. She answered: He that wounds by mistaking, should not be called an enemy. No, answered he, which rest not on deedes, but on words onely; but (for my part) I finde that he that offends, howsoeuer it be, is an enemy, and therefore I may well give you that name. To me (replied she) I would neyther haue the deed nor the thought, for I make too great account of your merit. See (adioyned the shepherd) one of the blowes wherein you offend mee more, in telling mee one thing for for that I hold my selfe wronged by you; in asmuch as you say you fauour me. But I see well, you thinke it enough, to beare Loue in your eyes, and in your mouth, without giuing him place in your heart. The shepherdesse then finding her selfe surprised, as not hauing vnderstood his speech of loue, answered him: I make account, *Alcippe*, of your vertue, as I ought, and not beyond my duty; and touching that you take of loue, beleeue it, I will haue it neyther in mine eyes, nor in my heart for any man, and much lesse for those base spirits, which liue like Sauages among the woods. I know well (replied the shepherd) that it is not the election

election of Loue, but my destiny, which compels me to be yours, since that if Loue ought to arise from the resemblance of humour, it would be very hard, that *Alcippe* should not be for you, who from his Cradle hath hated this countrey life, and protesteth vnto you, if I must change my condition, to haue a part in your loue, from henceforth I forsake the Sheephooke and my Flockes, and will liue among men, and not among Sauages.

You may well (answered *Amarillis*) change your condition, but not make me change, being resolued to be neuer lesse mine owne, then I am now, to giue place to any stronger affection: if you will, wee should continue, the life which we haue led, for the time past; change this discourse of affection, & of Loue, into that you were wont to vse to me heretofore, or else thinke not strange, that I banish my selfe from your company, it being impossible that Loue, and the honest *Amarillis* should remaine together. *Alcippe*, that lookt for no such answere, seeing himselfe so far fren from his hopes, was so confounded, that he staid somewhat before he could answere. In the end, being come to himselfe, he began to perswade himselfe, that the bashfullnesse of her age, and sexe, and not want of good will towards him, had made her hold this course: Therefore it was that he answered her; Whatsoeuer you thinke of me, I shall neuer be other then your seruant; and if the commandement you giue me, were not disagreeing with my affection, you were to thinke, that there is nothing in the world that might make me contradict it: you must then excuse me, and suffer me to hold on my purpose, which is but a testimoniall of your merit, and wherein, will you, nill you, I am resolued. The shepherdesse turning her eyes sweetly towards him, I know not, *Alcippe*, said she, whether for a wager, or out of obstinacy you talke thus. It is (answered he) for both, for I haue laid a wager with my desires, to conquer you, or to dye; and this resolution is changed into obstinacy, there being nothing that can diuert me from the othe which I haue made. I would be well pleased, replied *Amarillis*, that you had taken any other for the But of such importunitie. You may name my affections (sayd the shepherd) as it pleaseth you: yet shall not this make me change my mind. Nor you must not thinke much, replied *Amarillis*, if I be as firme in my obstinacy, as you in your importunity. The shepherd would haue answered, but that hee was interrupted by many shepherdesses that came to them. So that *Amarillis* for conclusion sayd very softly to him, You may do me a displeasure, if your purpose be knowne: for I am contented to know your follies, and it will be small pleasure that any others should ynderstand it.

So ended the first discourse betweene my father and *Amarillis*, which did but encrease the desire in him to serue her; for nothing addeth so much to loue, as honesty: And by fortune in the way, this company met with *Celio* and *Bellinde*, who were stayed to behold two turtles, who were cheiring & making loue each to other, no whit afraid to see many about them. Then *Alcippe* remembred the commandement which *Amarillis* had giuen him, could not hold from singing out these verles:

A Sonnet of the restraint of Honor.

**V**enus deare birds dounes, louning ouer all,  
That double without end your kisstes true,  
And tyrde with cares, do still by them renew,  
Now your sweete peace, and sometime your sweete brall.  
When I behold you rest, or stirre your wings,  
As ranist with the case wherein you are,  
O God, then vs how be you happier far,  
That freely nido the sweets your true loue brings:  
Your fortune gives you leaue, freely to shew  
The thing which we must bide, that none may know,  
By lawes vnjust which honor graunteth vs;  
Faint honor that makes vs turne our owne foes,  
For cruell reasonlesse she wills it thus,  
That sleath in Loue alone with pasport goes.

After this time he so suffered himselfe to be transported with his affection, that there was no bound which he ouer-passed not, and she, on the contrary, shewed her selfe alwaies more cold and icy to him, and one day when he was requested to sing, he sayd such verles:

A Madrigall on the coldnesse of *Amarillis*.  
**H**er heart of yce, her eye all fire,  
And mine directly contrary;  
I freeze without, but inwardly  
I scorch with flame of my desire:  
Alas! that Loue hath chosen to possesse  
My heart, and th'ies of my faire shepheardeff  
Gods grant, that once it may be well reverst,  
I in mine eyes, she haue is in her brest.

Lib.2.  
At this time, as I told you, *Alce* made suite to *Amarillis*, and because he was a right honest shepheard, and esteemed wise, the father of *Amarillis* inclined rather to giue her to him, and not to *Alcippe*, because of his turbulent courage; and on the contrary, the shepheardeff better loued my father, because his humour came nearer to hers; which the wise father well perceiuing, and not willing to vse any violence, nor absolute authority ouer her, he thought, that farre distance might diuert her from this will, and so resolued to send her for some time to *Artemis*, the sister of *Alce*, who dwelt about the bankes of the riuier of *Allier*. When *Amarillis* knew the deliberation of her father, as alwaies they endeouour to things forbidden; she tooke a resolution not to goe away, before she had giuen *Alcippe* assurance of her good will: in this dessigne she wrote these words:

**Y**our obſtinacy hath ouer-paſſed mine, but mine ſhall likewiſe ouer-paſſe  
that, which conſtraines me to aduertife you, that to morrow I goe away, and  
that this day, if you may find me on the way, where we met yesterday, & that your  
loue can content is ſelue with words, it ſhall haue occaſion to bee there, and adieu.

It would be ouer-long, Madame, to tell you all that passed particular-  
ly betweene them, besides, that the caſe wherein I am, makes me vniue-  
rable to doe it. It ſhall be ſufficient in abridging it, to tell you that they met in  
that place: and this was the firſt time when my father had auuareſce  
that he was loued of *Amarillis*, and that ſhe couldeſſe him to leaue the  
Courtrey life, wherein he was bred, because ſhe diſdained it, as vnworthy  
a noble couraſce, promising that there ſhould be nothing ſo ſtrong, that  
might diuert her from her resolution. After they were parted, *Alcippe*  
engraues these verles on a tree in the wood:

A Sonnet on the conſtancy of his Loue.

**F**aire *Amarillis*, full of louely graces,  
As ſhe went cropping of the flowres from ſtakkes,  
Ynder her hand that gathered, as ſhe walkes,  
Sprung others ſuddainely up in their places.

Those beauteous locks where Loue did interlace,  
Himſelfe beauning them vp with gentle aire,  
If he ſpyed any of them out of ſquare,  
Right curiouſly he ſet them in their place.

## The History

Sorare a sight Lignon stood still to see,  
Offers his wanes her Looking-glaſſe to bee,  
And after ſaies, So faire a portraiture,

When thou art gone, my ſtreame may beeare away :  
But from my heart there ſhall not ſlip for aye,  
The facall draughte of thy face (Nymph) be ſure.

After ſhe was gone, and that he began to feel the diſpleaſures of her absence, going often to the ſame place where he had taken leaue of his ſhepherdelle, he ſigheth forth theſe verſes :

## A Sonuet on absence.

**R**uler of Lignon, whose eternall ſtreame,  
Through gracious forraſts ruine, watring her brooke,  
Wane upon wane drinking, and tak'ſt no ſit,  
T'will ſhou'rentreſt to thy fathers realme.

Seef thou not how Allier ſnatcheth from thee  
Thy faire, like wrongfull lawes of mighty strong,  
And from thy bankes their honour beares along,  
To drine thuc ſo iſt plaines for remedy?

Against this Ranifer call to ſhine ayde,  
Those, ſhar for her departure all diſmaid,  
Pay teares, that thou maift ſee thy channell ſwell.

Dare onely that thofe eyes and hearts of ours,  
May powre out for thy helpe, ſhousands of howres,  
That ſhall not drye, till thou beeft venged well.

But not being able to liue without ſight of her there, where he had beeene uſed to the good of her view, he refolued, howſoever, to de- part from thence; and while he ſearched for ſome occaſion, he met with one as good as he could wiſh. Some little while before the mother of A-masſ died, and they made preparation in the great towne of Marſellis, to receive her as their new Lady with much triumph. And because the prepa- tations which they made, drew for curioſity, almoſt all the Country, my father

## Of Aſtreſ.

father ſo wrought, that he had leaue to goe thither. And there it was whence the beginning of all his trauailes proceeded. He was about his halfe age, ſome Moones more, his face faire among thoſe of that Coun- try, his haire yellowiſh, curled, and criſped by nature, which hee wore long : and briefly, Madam, ſuch, as to whom Loue (it may be) owed ſome ſecret vengeance. And ſee how he was ſene of ſome Lady, and ſo ſecretly beloved of her, that we could neuer yet know her name. At the firſt that he arriued at Marſellis, hee was clothed like a ſhepherd, but handſomely enough, for his father made much of him : and that he might not commit ſome fooliſh trick, as his manner was, in the Hamlet, he ſet two or three ſhepherds about him, to haue a care of him; principally one, called Cleante, a man whose humour pleased his father well, ſo that he loued him, as if he had beeene his ſonne. This Cleante had one called Clidor, of my fathers age, who, by nature, ſeemed to haue the ſame in- clination to loue Alcippe; Alcippe, who on the other ſide, knew his affection, loued him aboue any other, which was ſo pleaſing to Cleante, that he had nothing that he could deny to my father. This was the cauſe, that after they had ſome daies ſeen how the young Kuitiſts, who were at the Feaſt, went attired, how they armed themſelues, and fought at the Barriers, and hauing ſhewed his minde to his friend Clidor, they both together be- ſought Cleante, to giue them meaneſs, that they might ſhew themſelues among the other Knights. And how, ſaid Cleante to them, haue you the courage to equaill your ſclues to them? And why not, ſaid Alcippe? haue I not as much arme and legge as they? But you haue not learned the ci- vilicites of the Towne. We haue not learned them, ſaid he, but they are not ſo hard, that they ſhould put vs out of hope to apprehend them ſoone enough; and me thinks there is not ſuch diſference betweene theirs and ours, but we may readily change them. You haue not, ſaid he, beeene uſed to Armes. We haue, replied he, courage enough to ſupply that want. And how, adioyned Cleante, would you leaue the Country life? And what, ſaid Alcippe, haue the woods to doe with men? and what can men leaue in conuerſing with beaſts? But, anſwered Cleante, this will be no great pleaſure to you, to ſee your ſelues diſdained by the glorious Courtiers, which wil alwaies reproach you that you are ſhepherds. If it be a shame, ſaid Alcippe, to be a ſhepherd, we muſt be ſuch no more: if it be no shame, the reproach cannot be hurtfull: or if they diſ-eeſe me for my name, I will ſtrive by my actions, to make my ſelue eſteemed. In the end, Cleante ſeeing they were refolued to leade other liues then their fa- thers: But well, ſaid he, my children, ſince you haue taken this resolution,

I will tell you, that though you be taken for shepheards, your birth alwaies came frō the most ancient stock of this Countrey, & from whence descended as many braue Knights, as of any other in *Gasne*; but a consideration contrary to that you haue, made them choose this retired life. Therefore feare not that you shal be welcome among those knights; the principall of which are of ths same blood that you are. These words serued for no other vse, but to enflame them the more; for this knowledge bred in them a desire to put their purpose to effect, without considering what might come of it; whether for the discommoditiēs which that life bringes, or for the displeasure that the father of *Alcippe* and his kindred might conceiue. Afterward *Cleante* was at charge to prouide for all things necessary. They were both so well borne, that quickly they woune the acquaintance and friendship of the principall: and *Alcippe* gaue himselfe in that sort to Armes, that he became to be one of the good Knights of his time.

During these Feasts, which lasted two moneths, my father was beheld, as I told you, of a Lady, whose name I could neuer know: and because he seldome was wanting in any thing that might make him beloued, she was in such sort overtaken, that she inuented a sleight good enough to bring about her intent. One day, as my father stood in the Temple at the Sacrifices which they made for *Amasis*, an old woman came neere him, and sayning to be at her prayers, she said twice or thrice, *Alcippe*, *Alcippe*, not looking on him. He hearing himselfe named, was about to aske her, what she would with him; but seeing her eyes turned another way, he thought she spake to some other. She that perceiued he harkned, went on, *Alcippe*, it is to you I speake, though I looke not vpon you; if you desire to haue the best fortune that euer knight had in this Court, be betweene day and night at the great crosse way, which leads to the place of the Palace, and there you shall know the rest of me. *Alcippe*, seeing her speake in this manner, without looking on her, likewise sayd, he would be there; where in he failed not: for the euening approaching, he went to the place assigned, where he staid not long, but the aged woman came to him, almost hidden vnder a Taffata that she had on her head, and drawing him aside, said to him, Young man, thou art the most happy that liues, being beloued of the most faire, and most louely Lady in this Court, and with whom (if thou wilt promise that, that I shal demand of thee) at this houre I binde my selfe, to make thee iuoy all contentment. The young *Alcippe* bearing this proposition, asked who the Lady was. See, said shee, the first thing that I would haue you promise me, is, not to inquire after her name, and

*Lib.2.*  
and to keepe this fortune secret: the other, that you suffer me to couer your eyes, when I bring you where she is. *Alcippe* sayd to her, Not to enquire after her name, and to keepe this affaire secret, I will willingly performe: but to blindfold mine eyes, I will neuer suffer. And what is it you feare (said she?) I feare nothing, answered *Alcippe*: but I will haue mine eyes at liberty. O young man, said the old woman, that art yet to learne, why wilt thou procure the displeasure of a person tht so loues thee? and will not this displease her, to desire to know more of her, then she would haue thee?

Beleeue me, make no difficulty, doubt nothing, what danger can it be to thee? Where is that courage that thy presence promiseth at the first sight? Is it possible that a perill imagined, can make thee forsake an assured good? And seeing that he moued not, Curled be the mother, said she, that made thee so faire, & so little hardy; without doubt, both thy visage and thy courage are more of the woman, then of that thou art. The young *Alcippe* could not heare, without laughing, these words of the old woman vterred in such choler. In the end, after he had sometime thought in himselfe, what an enemy he might haue, & finding that he now had none, he resolued to go, prouided, she would suffer him to carry his sword, and so let her blind his eyes; and taking her by her garment, followed her whither she would lead him.

I should be too long, Madam, if I should tell you all the particularities of this night. So it was, that after many turnings, and hauing (it may be) many times passed one way, he found himselfe in a chamber, where, his eyes yet bound, hee was vncloathed by the same woman, and laid in bed; a while after, came the Lady, that had sent for him, & comming neere him, uncased his eyes, because there was no light in the chamber: But for all that he could do, he was not able to get one word from her: So that he rose from her in the morning, without knowing who she was; only he judged her faire, and yong: and an houre before day, she that brought him, came to carry him backe, and lead him with the same ceremonies. From that day, they resolued betweene them, that whensoeuer hee was to returne, he should finde a stone at a certaine crosse-way before day.

While these things thus passed, the father of *Alcippe* dies, so that he is now more Matter of himselfe, then he was wont to be; & had not the commandement of *Amaris* bene, and his priuate intent, which he held, the loue which he bare to his shephearde, might haply haue called him backe into the woods: for the fauours of this vñknowne Lady could not put her out of his remembrance, that if the great gifts which he had ordinarily

dinarily of her, had not retained him in this practice; after the two or three first voyages he had retired, though it seemed, since that time, he was come into the fauour of *Pimander* and *Amasis*. But for that a young heart can hardly keepe any thing hidden long, it fell out, that *Clindor*, his deare friend, seeing him spend more then of custome, demanded of him, how he came by his meanes. Whereto, at the first, answering diuersly, in the end he discouered all his fortune: and after, told him, that for all the Art he could vse, he could neuer know who she was. *Clindor* being very curious, counselled him to cut out some halse a foot of the frindge of the bed; and in the day he should resort to the greatest houses which he might best suspect, and there hee might know her, eyther by the colour, or by the piece. This he did, and by this craft, my father had knowledge of her that thus fauoured him. Yet he hath closely concealed her name, that neyther *Clindor*, nor any of his children could euer know it. But, the first time that he went thither after that, when he was about to rise in the morning, he coniured her, that she would no longer hide her selfe from him, that it was labour lost, for he knew assuredly that she was such an one.

She hearing her selfe named, was about to speake, yet held her peace, and stayed till the olde woman came: to whom, when *Alcippe* was risen from the bed, she vsed such threatnings, thinking it was she that discouered it, that this poore woman came trembling to my father, and sware he deceiued himselfe. He then laughing, told the craft he had vsed, and that it was the inuention of *Clindor*. She well eased with that which he had discouered, after a thousand oaths to the contrary, returned to tell this to the Lady, wh<sup>e</sup> was risen of her selfe, to heare their discourse: and when she knew, that *Clindor* was the inuenter, she turned all her choller against him, easily pardoning *Alcippe*, whom she could not hate; notwithstanding, after that day, she neuer sent more for him. And because a spirit offended hath nothing so sweete as reuenge, this woman turned so of every side, that she wrought a quarrell against *Clindor*; for which he was enforced to combate with a cousin of *Pimander*, whom he slew; and though he were pursued, yet he saued himselfe in *Auverne*, by the helpe of *Alcippe*. But *Amasis* so wrought, that *Alaricke*, King of the *Visigots*, being then at *Tholonse*, sent him prisoner to *Vsson*, with commandement to his Officers, to deliuer him ouer into the hands of *Pimander*, who looked for nothing more, then to finde commodity to send for him, that he migh<sup>t</sup> put him to death. *Alcippe* left nothing vntempted to procure his pardon; but all was in vaine: for he had too strong a party against him.

him. Therefore, seeing the assured losse of his friend, he resolued vpon any danger whatsoeuer, to sau<sup>e</sup> him. There was at *Vsson* (as I told you) a place so strong, that it might seeme a folly to any other to vndertake to get him out; yet his friendship, that found nothing so difficult, as to live without *Clindor*, was such, as he made an assault to deser<sup>e</sup> them which were of *Pimander*s part. So, making shew to retire himselfe as discontent, he went with twelue other, and one day of March, presenting themselves at the Port of the Castle, in the habite of clownes, and carrying vnder their garniments, short swords, and baskets on their armes, as men that went to sell; I haue heard him say, there were three fortresses, one within another.

These resolute Pesants came to the vtmost, where few of the *Visigots* remayned; for the most part were gone downe to the base towne, to see the market, and to prouide themselves of what was necessary for the garrison. Being there, they offred their wares at so good a price, that (almost) all that were within, drew downe to buy. Then my father seeing the occasion good and fit, laying hold of the necke of him that kept the gate, thrust his sword into his body. And euery of his companions (at the same instant) did like him, and entring in, put the rest to the edge of the sword; and suddenly shutting the gate, they ranne to the prisons, where they found *Clindor* in a corner, and so many others, that they iudged (being armed) sufficient to defeat the rest of the garrison. To make short, I tell you Madame, that though by the allarme, the gates of the towne were shut, yet they got out, without the losse of a man, though the Gouvernoir (that in the end was slayne) made all the resistance he could.

Thus you see *Clindor* sau<sup>e</sup>ed, and *Alaricke* aduertised, that it was my father that had done this enterprise; whereof he was so much displeased, that he demanded iustice of *Amasis*: and she which would not lose his amitie, was willing enough to content him, and sent presently to apprehend my father; but his friend gaue him such aduertisements, that ha<sup>ving</sup> set his battell in order, he went out of this Countrey: and being incep<sup>t</sup>ed against *Alaricke* more then is credible, went to put himselfe to a Nation that but lately was entred into *Gaule*; and who being warrelike, seized on both the sides of *Rosue* and *Arar*, and a good part of the *Allobrogues*, and being desirous to enlarge their bounds, they made continually warre on the *Visigots*, *Ostrogoths* and *Romanes*. He was welcome with all those whom he would conduct: and being knowne for a man of valour, he was presently honoured with diuers charges. But some yeres

being passed, *Gondiob* king of this Nation comming to die, *Gondebaud* his sonne succeeded to the Crowne of *Bourgony*: and desirous to assur his assayres, at the beginning made a peace with his neighbours, marrying his sonne *Sigismund* with one of the daughters of *Theodorick* king of the *Ostrogoths*: and to please *Alaricke*, who was infinitely offended with *Alcippe*, promised him to keepe him no longer with him. So that (with his leaue) he withdrew to another people, which on the side of *Rhenes* was seised of another part of *Gaul*, in despite of the *Gauls*, and of the *Romanes*. But this discourse would be cumberlome to you, if particularly I shoulde recount all his voyages. For from them he was constrained to go to *London*, to the great King *Arthur*, who at the same time (as I haue heard him often tell) instituted the Order of the Knights of the Round Table.

From thence he was enforced to go to that Realme, which beares the name of *Port du Gaulois*: and in the end, being sought for by *Alaricke*, he resolued to passe the Sea, and to goe to *Bisantum*, where the Emperour gaue him charge of his Gallies. But because the desire of returning into our Countrey, is aboue all others, my father (thoough very great with these great Emperours) yet had nothing neerer his heart, then once more to see his owne chimnies smoke, where so often he had beene made a wanton; and it seemed Fortune gaue him a fit meane, when he least looked for it. But I haue heard say sometimes by our Druides, that Fortune is delighted ~~to come~~ on the other side, when the change is least expected. *Alaricke* came to die, & *Thierry* his sonne succeeded him, who for that he had many brethren, had much to do to maintaine his estate, without heeding the hatred of his father. And so desirous to giue content to every man (for *Bounty* and *Liberality* are the two louers that draw all loues to them) at the entrance to his reigne, he proclaimed a generall abolition of all offences done in his kingdome. See a good beginning to compasse the returne of *Alcippe*; yet might he not returne, because *Pimander* had not forgotten the iniury receiued: notwithstanding, as the *Visgots* were the cause of his banishment, so Fortune would haue them serue as the instrument of his calling backe. Some little time before (as I told you) *Arthur* king of great *Britaine* had instituted the Knights of the Round Table, which was a certaine number of vertuous young men, obliged to goe secke aduentures, to punish euill doers, to do iustice to the oppressed, and maintaine the honour of Ladies.

Now the *Visgots* of *Spaine*, which then abode in *Pampalune*, in imitation of that, chose our Knights, who were to goe diuers wayes, to shew their force

force and helpe. It fell out, that at this time one of the *Visgots*, after he had run thorow many countries, came to *Marsallis*, where hauing made his defiance accustomed, he ouercame many of *Pimander* Knights, whose heads he cut off, and out of extreme cruelty, for proofe of his valour, sent them to a Lady, whom he serued in *Spaine*. Among others, *Amarillis* lost an uncle, who like my father, vnwilling to abide the quiet of the country life, had followed the mystery of armes: and because that while hee was abroad, shee had beene curious to haue of ordinary some newes of him, by meanes of some yong boyes, which hee and shee had appointed for it, as soon as this mis-hap was come to her knowledge, shee wrote to him, not in mind that he should returne, but as acquainting him with her displeasure. *Loue*, which is neuert in a good soule, without replenishing it with a thousand generous desligies, would not suffer my father to know, that *Amarillis* was offended with any man; but presently he takes a resolution to chastise this wrong: and so, with the leaue of the Emperour, came disguised into the house of *Cleante*, who knowing his deliberation, attempted many wayes to diuert him, but *Loue* had stronger perswasions then he. And in a morning, as *Pimander* was going to the Temple, *Alcippe* presents hiimselfe before him, armed throughout; & though he had his vizard vp, yet was he not knowne for his beard, which grew since his departure. When *Pimander* knew his resolution, he made much of him, for the hatred he bare to this stranger, by reason of his arrogancy, and cruelty, and presently caused the *Visgot* to be aduertised by an Herald of armes.

To make short, my father ouercame him, and presented the sword to *Pimander*; and without the knowledge of any body, but *Amarillis* that saw him out of *Cleantes* house, he returned to *Bisantum*, where he was received as before. In this space, *Cleante*, that desired nothing more then to see him at liberty in Forests, discoured him to *Pimander*, who was very desirous to know the name of him that fought with the stranger: He at the first astonyed, in the end moued with the vertue of this man, daunted if it were possible he should be aliue? Whereto *Cleante* answered, recounting to him all his fortunes, and all his long voyages, & in the end, what accompt he was of, with all the Kings whom he serued. Without doubt (then sayd *Pimander*) the vertue of this man merits to be esteemed, and not to be banished, besides the great pleasure he hath done me; Therefore let him returne, and assure himselfe, that I will esteeme of it, and loue him as he deserues: And henceforth I pardon him all that he hath done against me. Thus my father, after he had stayed 17. yeres in *Greece*, came

came into his country, honored of *Pimander* and *Amasis*, who gaue him the chiefe charge, that was about their persons: But see what we are of our selues! One may delight him, with all things in abundance, and the desire satiated remaines without force. As soone as my father enjoyed the fauours of fortune, as he could desire, behold, he lost the taste, and disdained them. And then some good *Angell*, that was willing to draw him out of this gulph, where so often he was like to make shiprake, represented to him (as I haue heard him say) these considerations: Come hither, *Alcippe*, what is thy desire? Is it not to liue happily, so long as *Clotho* spins out thy life? If this be it, or thinkest thou to finde this good, but in quiet rest, or it may be, out of affaires, how can they beare the ambition of the Court, since the happiness of ambition, is the multiplicity of affaires? Hast not thou sufficienly proued the inconstancy whereof they are so full? at least haue but this consideration in thec: Thy ambition is to command many, every of them hath the same desire that thou hast; these their desires propound the same wayes; going the same wayes, cannot they come to the same that thou art, and attaine it, since ambition is a place, so strait that it can hold but one alone, so that either you must oppose against a thousand that will set on you, or else giue way to them? If thou oppose, what can bee thy quiet, since you are to haue an eye to your friends, and to your enemies, and that day and night their weapons are whetting against thee? If thou giue way to them, there is nothing so miserable, as a country decayed. Then, *Alcippe*, come againe into thy selfe, and remember that thy fathers and grandfathers haue bene much wiser then thou: be not more selfewilled, but fixe the diamond nayle at the wheele of this fortune, which thou haft so often proued changeable: come backe to the place of thy birth, leaue this purple, and change it into thy former habits; let thy launce be turned into a sheephook, thy sword into a culter, to open the earth, and not the bellies of men; there shalt thou finde that repose, which for so many yeeres thou couldst never haue elsewhere.

See, Madam, the considerations which led my father to his former profession. And thus, to the great astonishment of all, but with the great prayses of the wiser sort, he came to his former estate, where hee caused our ancient statutes to be renewed, with so good liking of all men, that he might say he was at the height of ambition, though he were impuerished, since he was so well beloued, and honored of his neighbours, that they tooke him for an Oracle. And yet this was not the end of his paines; for being after the death of *Pimander* retired to himselfe, hee had

not beene long in our grounds, but *Lolle* renewes his old blowes, there being of al Loues arrowes, none sharper then that of conuersation. Then behold *Amarillis* so high in his thoughts, that she gaue him more paine then all his former trauailes. It was at that time that he tooke againe the deuice which he had borne, during all his voyages of the Pen of a Lay, meaning to signifie *Peinjay*. Of this loue came great hatred; for *Alce* the father of *Astrea*, was infinitely amorous of this *Amarillis*, and *Amarillis*, during my fathers exile, had permitted this suite by the commandement of her parents, and at this time she cannot withdraw it, without so great trouble, that he is ready to despaire. On the other side, *Alcippe*, that casting off the habite of a knight, but had not left the courage, could not suffer a Riuall, came to handy strokes many times with *Alce*, who wanted not courage: and a man may thinke, but for the parents of *Amarillis*, who resolute to bestow her on *Alcippe*, there had beeene much mischiefe betweene them. But though by this marriage they cut off the boughs of this quarrell; yet their hatred liued so, and grew so high, that there was never familiarity betweene *Alce* and *Alcippe*. And this is (said *Celadon*, addressing himselfe to *Silvia*) faire Nymph, which you heard them talke when you were in our hamlet; for I am the sonne of *Alcippe*, and of *Amarillis*, and *Astrea* is the daughter of *Alce*, and *Hipolite*. It may be, you may think it strange, that not parting from our woods and pastures, I know so many particulars of the neighbour Countries. But, Madame, all that I haue learned, was but from my father, who recounting vnto me his life, hath beeene driuen withall, to tell me the things you haue heard.

So ended *Celadon* his discourse, and indeed, not without paine, for speaking hurt him much, hauing his stomake as yet distempered; and this was the cause that he recounted the History much shorter then otherwise he could. But *Galathes* rested more satisfied then he imagined, for that she knew of what Ancestors this shepheard was descended, whom she loued.

The end of the Second Booke.



## THE THIRD BOOKE OF Astrea and Celadon.

**W**hile the day lasted, these faire Nymphs yeeded so good company to Celadon, that had he not been displeased with the change of *Astrea*, he had had no cause of griefe; for these were both faire and full of iudgement; yet in the case wherein he was, all this was not enough to stay him from wishing himselfe to be alone. And because he saw it could not be without the helpe of the night, that would constraine them to withdraw, hee wished for it every houre. But when he thought to haue beeene alone, they found he more company: for the night being come, and these Nymphs gone into their chambers, his thoughts came to accompany him with so cruell remembrance, that they made him feele their comming otherwise then he wished. What despaires presented not theselves to him? None that Loue might bring forth, especially to a loue so hopelesse. For if against the vniuit sentence of his Mistrisse, he opposed his innocency, sudainly the execution of the arrest came before his eyes. And as hee fell out of one thought into another, his hand, by chance, touched the ribbon where *Astreas* ring was, which he had wound about his arme. Oh! what deadly remembrances came into his spirit? He represented to himselfe all the anger, which at that instant she had painted in her face; all the cruelty his soule could invent, both by words and actions, and all the dianes, with which she had pronounced the award of his banishment.

Staying somewhat on that last mischance, he began to remember the change of his fortune, how happy hee had beeene, how highly shee had fauoured him, and how long it had lasted; from that hee came, to what shee had done for him; how for his sake she had scorned diuers honest Shepheards; what small reckoning she made of her fathers will; the displeasure of her mother; and the difficulties, which arose against their loues: then he went on, berthinking himselfe, that the fortunes of Loue

are

are more assured then of other things, and what a little remained to him of so many fauours, which at last came but to one bracelet of haire which he had on his arme, and a little picture which he hung at his necke, the case whereof he often kissed: as for the ring which he had on his other arme, he coeuiued that rather of force, the of good wil, she gaue him that. But then, at that instant he remembred the letters shee had written to him, during his good fortune, and which he bare ordinarily about him, in a bag of silke. Oh! how great was his anguish? for he feared, that the Nymphs searching his clothes, had found it. In this doubt hee calls lowd upon little *Merill*, for he was lodged in a Wardrobe hard by, to attend him. The boy hearing him call twice or thrice, came to know what hee would. My little friend ( said *Celadon* ) knowest thou not what are become of my clothes? for I haue something thereabout, that I would be sorry to lose. Your clothes (said he) are not farre off, but there is uothing in them: for I haue searched them.

Ah, said the shepheard, thou deceiuest thy selfe, *Merill*, I haue something there that I had rather keepe then my life; and then turning on the other side the bed, begun to bewaile and torment himselfe some good while. *Merill*, that heard him, one way, was loth to displease him; and on the other, stood in doubt, whether hee should tell him what hee knew. In the end, not being able to suffer to see him any longer in this paine, he told him he need not so much disquiet himselfe, and that the Nymph *Galathee* loued him too wel, not to restore him the thing he made shew to be so desirous of. Then *Celadon* turning towards him, And how (saith he) hath the Nymph that which I demand? I beleue (said he) it is the same. At least, I found nothing but a little bag full of papers; and as I was about to haue brought them before you slept, she spye them, and tooke them from me. O Lord, then (said the shepheard) all things fall out the worst they may; and turning on the other side, would talke to him no more. In this meane time had *Galathee* read the letters of *Celadon*: for it was true that shee had taken them from *Merill*, following the ordinary curiositie of them which loue: But shee had straitly charged him to say nothing, because shee had a purpose to giue him the, but he should not know shee had seene them. At that time *Silnie* carried a light before, and *Lionide* was somewhere else, and of necessity, now shee was to bee of counsell. We shall see (said *Silnie*) if this shepheard be the merchant he would seeme to be, and if he be not amorous: for I assure my selfe, these papers will tell tales, and then set it on the table. By this had *Galathee* vndone the string, which was so welltied, that the water had done no hurt; yet

yet there were some papers wet, which she drew out as leasurely as shee could, lest shee might teare them, and hauing spred them on the table, the first shee layd her hand on, was a letter in this sort:

What is it you vndertake, *Celadon*? into what confusion goe you about to thrust your selfe? Beleeue mee that counsell you like a friend; giue ouer your dessigne to doe me seruice: it is too full of discommodities. What contentment hope you for? I am so insupportable, that you were as good vndertake a thing impossible; you must serue, you must suffer, you must haue neither eyes nor loue, but for me; for thinke not that I will haue part with any other, nor that I will receiue a goodwill that is but halfe mine. I am suspitious, I am iealous, I am hard to be wonne, and easie to be lost; soone offended, but very hardly appeased; the least doubt in me, is assurance. My will must be as the Destinies, my opinions as from reason, and my commandements lawes inviolable. Beleeue me, for this once, retyre thy selfe, shepheard, from this dangerous Labyrinth, and flic from a dessigne so curious. I know my selfe better then you do: do not you imagine in your selfe, that in the end you can change my nature; I shall breake sooner then bend. And do not you heercaster complayne of me, if now you beleeue not what I tell you.

Neuer think me to be that I am (sayd *Galathee*) if this shepheard be not in loue; for see a beginning which is not small. There is no doubt (sayd *Silvie*) being so honest a man. And how (replied *Galathee*) are you of opinion, that he must of necessity loue, being so? Yes, Madam, (sayd she) as I haue heard them say, Because that the louer desireth no-thing more then to be beloued; to be beloued, he must shew himselfe ami-able: and that which makes a man ami-able, is that which makes him honest. At this word *Galathee* gaue her another letter, which was wet, to dry at the fire, and in the meane time she tooke another, which was thus:

You will not beleeue that I loue you, but desire that I should be-leeue you loue me: if I loue you not, what will you gaine by the beliefe which I haue of your affection? It may be this opinion may binde me to do so. Hardly, *Celadon*, would this weake consideration effect it, if your merits and seruices which I haue received of you, had not already done it. Now, behold in what state your affayres are, I would you should not onely know that I beleeue you loue me, but moreover, I will that you assure your selfe, that I loue you. And among other things, one onely should make it vnquestionable: if I loued you not, what would make me neglect the contentment of my parents? If you consider how much I doe

OWE

owe them, you may (in some sort) know the quality of my loue, since it not onely counterpoyses, but weighs downe so great a weight. Farewell, and be no more incredulous.

By this time *Silvie* brought backe the letter, and *Galathee* told her (with great griefe) that he loued, and more, that he was infinitely beloued, and read the letter to her agayne, which strucke her to the heart, seeing she was to assault that place where so strong an enemy was already victorious: for by those letters she iudged that the humour of this shepheardeesse was not to be an halfe Mistris, but with a right absolute power commaunded ouer those, whom she vouchsafed to entertaine for hers: she liked well of this iudgement; when she read the letter that had beene dryed, it was thus:

*Lidias* told my *Phillis*, that yesterday you were in a naughty humor; am I the cause, or you? if I, it is without cause: for would not I alwaies loue you, and be beloued of you? And, haue you not a thousand times sworne to me, that you desire but this, to be content: if you, then you doe me wrong, to dispose, without my knowledge, of any thing that belongeth vnto me; for by the donation which you haue made, and which I haue receiued, both your selfe, and all that is yours, doe appertayne to me. Aduertise me then, and I shall foorthwith perceiue whether I may giue you permission: but in the meane season, take this as a for-bidding.

With what emperry (sayd then *Galathee*) doth this shepheardeesse deale? She doth him no wrong (answered *Silvie*) since she gaue him warning from the beginning; and without fiction, if it be she that I think, she hath some reason, being one of the most faire, and complete persons that euer I saw. Her name is *Astrea*, and that which maketh me thinke so, is this word of *Phillis*, knowing that these two shepheardeesses are sworne friends: and yet, as I may tell you, though she be so extreme faire, yet this is that that makes her least ami-able; for shee hath so many other perfections, that this is least apparent in her. This discourse serued but to wound the deeper, since they discouered nothing but the greatest difficulties in her dessigne. And because she would not that *Silvie* as then should know, she shut vp the papers, and went to bed, not without a great company of sundry thoughts, among which, sleepe came stealing by little and little.

It was hardly day, when the little *Merill* went out of the shepheards chamber, who had complayned all night, and his trauell and his sicknesse had but little asswagement till the comming of the morning. And because

because *Galathée* had commaunded him to marke particularly whatsoeuer *Celadon* did, and to repeate it to her, he went to tell her what he had learned. At that time *Galathée* being awaked, talked so loude with *Leo-*  
*nids*, that *Merill* hearing them knocking at the doore, Madame (quoth he) all this night could I not sleepe, for the poore *Celadon* is almost dead, by reason of the papers which you tooke from me yesterdays; and because I sawe him very desperate, I was constrained to giue him some ease, by telling him you had them. How? (lays the Nymph) knoweth he that I haue them? Yes certainly, Madam (answered *Merill*.) and I assure my selfe, he will intreate you to restore them; for he esteemeth them very dearely: and if you had heard him, as I did, I doubt not but he would make you pitty him. Ah! tell me, *Merill* (sayd the Nymph) what he said. Madame (sayd he) after he had asked, if I had not seene his papers, and that in the end he knew you had them, he turned like a man transported on the other side, and sayd: Now all things fall out the worst they may: and after he had beene silent some while, and that he thought I was in my bed, I heard him sigh very loude, and after vttered these words: *Astrea*, *Astrea*, ought these banishments to be the recompence of my seruices? If your loue be changed, why doe you blame me, to excuse your selfe? If I haue failed, why tell you me not my fault? Is there no more iustice in heauen, then there is pitty in your soule? Alas! if there be, why feele not I some fauour, that hauing no power to die, as despaire will haue me, I may do so at least as the rigor of *Astrea* commands? Ha rigorous! If I may not call it cruell commaundement in such an accident as this, who could take a lesse resolution then that of death? would it not giue signe of lesse loue, then of great courage? And here staying awhile, he thus beganne againe:

But wherefore (my traicterous hopes) come you flattering to me? is it possible you should dare to come neere me? doe you say she will change? Consider then (enemy of my repose) what likelihoode is there, that so much time spent, so many seruices and affections acknowledged, so many disdaynes borne vp, and impossibilities ouercome, haue done so little, and yet onely absence may? Hope rather for a fauourable tombe at thy death, then a fauourable repentance from her. After many such discourses, he held his peace a great while: but when I was gone backe, I heard him shortly after beginne agayne his complaints, which he held on vntill day; and all that I could obserue, was but his complaints which he made against one *Astrea*, whom he accused of change and cruelty.

If *Galathée* had knowne lesse of *Celadons* affayres by the letters of *Astrea*,

*Astrea*, she had learned so much from the report of *Merill*, that for her own rest, it had beene good for her to haue beene more ignorant. Yet in flattering her selfe, she conceited to her selfe, that the disdayne of *Astrea* might make the way more easie to that which she desired. Young Scholler in loue! that knowes not that Loue neuer dies in a generous hearr, till she roote be wholly pluckt vp. In this hope she wrote a little scroule, which she folded vp, and put among the papers of *Astrea*. After, giuing the bagge to *Merill*: Hold heere (sayd she) *Merill*: restore this bagge to *Celadon*, and tell him, I would I were able to giue him all the contentment he wants; that if he be well, and would see me, tell him that I am not well this morning. She said this, that he might haue leisure to ouerlook his papers, and reade that which she had written to him. *Merill* went foorth; and because *Leonide* was in an other bed, she could neyther see the bagge, nor heare the charge which she had giuen him: but as soone as he was gone, she called her, and made her come to bed to her: and after some other talke, she spake in this sort to her: You know, *Leonide*, what I told you yesterday of this shepheard, how much it importeth me that he loue me, or that he not loue me; since that time I haue vnderstood of his busynesses, more then I would I had: you haue heard that which *Merill* hath reported to me, and that which *Silvie* said of the perfectiōns of *Astrea*: so that (she went on) since the place is taken, I see a double difficulty arise against our enterprise.

This happy shepheardesse hath much offended him, and a generous heart will hardly suffer a disdaine without any sence of it. Madam, answered *Leonide*, on the one side, I wish you were contented: and on the other, I am well pleased with the discōmodities, for you do your selfe so much wrong, if you continue thus, that I know not if euer you can deface it. Thinke you, though you be neuer so secret, that this life of yours will not bee knowne? and what will become of you, if it be discouered? the iudgement which was neuer wanting in the rest of your actions, is it possible that in this accident it should faile you? what would you iudge of another, that should lead this life? You will answer, you do no euill. Ah, Madam, it is not sufficient for a person of your quality to bee voyd of crime, but you be so also of blame. If this were a man worthy of you, I could brook it wel: but though *Celadon* be one of the chiese of this country, yet is he but a shepheard, and is knowne for no other: And this vaine opinion of good, or ill lucke, shall it haue such power ouer you, that it shall so much abate your courage, that you will equall these keepers of sheep, these Busticks, and these halfe-Sauages, to your selfe? for Gods sake

sake come to your selfe, and consider with what minde I speake these words. She had gone forward, had not *Galathee* in choler interrupted her, I haue told you, I would not haue you vse this discourse: I know not on what I shall resolute: when I aske your counsell, giue it me, and once for al, talke no more to me of it, if you will not displease me.

At this word, she turned on the other side, in such furie, that *Leonide* knew well she had throughly angred her. Indeed there is nothing strikes more to the quicke, then to oppose honor against Loue: for though all the reasons of Loue be vanquished, yet will Loue stil be strong in his will. Soone after, *Galathee* turnes againe and sayes: I never thought, till now, that you had had a minde to be my gouernor: but now, I begin to haue such a beliefe, that you figure such a thing to your selfe. Madam, answered she, I never mistooke my selfe so much, but I know what I owe to you: but since you take in so ill part, that which my duty made me speake, I protest from henceforth, I will never give you occasion for this cause, to enter into choler against me. This is a strange thing in you, replied *Galathee*, that you must alwayes haue reason in your opinion; what likelihood is there, that any should know that *Celadon* is here? There are no more then we three, *Merill* & my Nurse his mother: as for *Merill*, he goes not forth; and besides he hath discretion enough for his age; for my Nurse, her fidelity is well knowne to me, and it is partly by her desire, that all is thus carried: for as hauing told her what the Druide foretold me, she that loues me more tenderly, then if I were her owne child, counselleth me not to contemne this aduertisement: and because I propounded the difficulty of the great number, which would resort to the place where I am, her selfe aduised me to make shewe, that I would take phisick. And what is your purpose, sayd *Leonide*? To worke so (answered she) that this shepheard may wish me well, and till that be, not to let him go away; that if once he come to loue me, I may leaue the direction of the rest to Fortune.

Madame, sayd *Leonide*, God giue you all the contentment you desire. But suffer me to tell you this once, you go about to ruine your selfe in your reputation. What time must there bee to the rooting out of an affection so thorowly grounded, which he beares to *Astrea*, whose beauty and vertue, they say, is without a second? But presently interrupted the Nymph, She scornes him, she is angry with him, she hath driven him away: thinke you not, he will haue courage enough to leaue her? Oh! Madam, put this out of your hopes (said *Leonide*) if he haue no corage, he will never feele this; and if he haue, a man generous will never turne aside for the diffiiculties. Remember your selfe, for example, how many contempts

tempts haue you layd on *Lindamor*, and how cruelly haue you handled him, and what hath he done the lesse, for these disdaines, or cruelties. But be it so, that *Celadon*, because he is a shepheard, haue not the courage of *Lindamor*, and that he hath dentat the blowes of *Astrea*, what good hope you thereof? thinke you that a spirit once deceiued, will easily be deceiued the second time in one kind? No, no, Madam, howsoeuer he be both by birth & conuersation of the homelier sort, yet can he not be so, but he wil dread the fire when the smart of it is yet in his soule. There must be (and that is it which you may best hope for) some time allowed to heale him soundly of this burning, before he can turne his eyes vpon some such like obiect. And what time will it aske? and in the meane time can it be possible to let, but that the gard which is in the base court, will come to the knowledge of it, or in seeing him (for you cannot alwaies keepe him close in one chamber) or by the prattle of *Merill*, who as discreet as he is for his age, yet is but a child? *Leonide*, said shee, cease to trauell longer in this busynesse; my resolution is such as I told you: if you wil make me beleue you loue me, fauour my designe in what you may, and for the rest, refre it to my care. This morning, if the weakenesse of *Celadon* permit it (mee thought yesterday he was reasonable well) you may lead him into the garden; for this day I finde my selfe not well, and I shall hardly rise out of my bed, till towards night. *Leonide* being very sad, gaue no other answere, but that she would be ready to do that, that might be to her content. While they were thus discoursing, *Merill* did his message, and hauing found the shepheard awake, gaue him the good morrow, in the name of the Nymph, and presented to him the papers. Oh! how presently he raised himselfe in the bed? he made him open the curtaines, and windowes, not hauing the leasure to rise, such haste he made to see that, which had cost him so much sorrow. Hee opened the little bag, and after hee had many times kissed it; O secretary (said he) of my life most happy, how camest thou into the hands of strangers? At this word he layd all the letters on the bed; & that he might see if he wanted any one, he placed them in their order according to the time he receiued them, and seeing there remained a little scrowle, he opened it and read these words:

*Celadon, I would haue you know, that Galathee loues you, and that the heavens haue permitted the disdaine of *Astrea*, for that they like not, that a shepheardesse should any longer possesse that which a Nymph desires: acknowledge your good bag, and refuse it not.*

The astonishment of the shepheard was great: notwithstanding, seeing that *Morill* obserued his actions, he would make no shew of it. Then locking them againe together, and lying downe in his bed, he asked who gaue them to him? I tooke them (said he) out of my Ladyes deske; and but for the desire I had to put you out of the paine wherein I saw you, I durst not haue gone for them, for that she is not well at ease. And who is with her (demanded *Celadon*)? The two Nymphs which you saw yester-day, whereof the one is *Leonide*, the Niece of *Adamas*, the other is *Siluie*, the daughter of *Diane* the glorious: and indeed, she is not his daughter, without reason; for shee is the most lofty in her behauour that you shall lightly see.

So received *Celadon* the first aduertisement of the good will of *Galathee*, for though there were neither cipher nor scale to the scroule hee had receiued, yet iudged he that it would not haue beeene done without her knowledge. And then he fore-saw that this would be a surcharge to his sorrowes, and that he must vndergoe it. Seeing then, that halfe of the day was almost passed, and finding hitselfe in good case, he would keepe no longer in bed; thinking, that the sooner he left it, the sooner he might take his leaue of these faire Nymphs. And being risen in this deliberation, as he was ready to goe out to walke, he met with *Leonide* and *Siluie*, whom *Galathee* (not daring to rise, nor yet shew her selfe to him, for shame of the scroule she had writ) had sent to give him entertainment. They went downe into the garden: And because *Celadon* would hide his sorrow, he shewed a countenance as pleasant as he could dissemble: and seeming to be curious to know euery thing he saw, Faire Nymphs (said he to them) is it not heereabout that the Fountaine of the truth of Loue is? I am very willing, if it be possible, to see it. It is hard by, answered the Nymph, for wee must goe downe but this great Wood. But it is impossible to see it, and you must thanke this faire that is the cause, poynting to *Siluie*. I know not (replied she) why you accuse me: For, for my part, I never heard the sword blamed which cut the foole that laid his finger vnder it. It is true, answered *Leonide*: but if I be not deceiued, that which wounds, and your beauty, are not in the number of those, that are seene without homicide. Such as it is (answered *Siluie*, with a little blushing) it hath lynes strong enow, euer to let that goe, that it hath once tyed vp.

She said this vpbrayding her with the infidelity of *Agis*, who hauing sometimes loued her, for a ielousie, or for an absence of two months, was entirely changed: and for *Polemas*, whom another beauty had robbed her of, the which she understood well enough. So I confess, my sister, replied she,

she, my lines are easie to slide, but that is, because I would never take the paine to stiffer them. *Celadon* hearing, with great pleasure, their pretty disputation, that they might not breake off too soone, he sayd to *Siluie*, Faire Nymph, since from you the difficulty procedes, of seeing this admirable Fountain, we shall a little be obliged vnto you, if from your selfe we know how this fell out. *Celadon*, answered the Nymph, somewhat smiling, You haue busynesse enough of your owne, without need to search into any other: yet if curiositie can haue any place in your loue, this prattler *Leonide*, if you request her, will tell you the end, since without any motion, she hath so well told the beginning. Sister, answered *Leonide*, your beauty makes all them to speake much better that discourse of it: and since you give me leaue to tell of one effect the world should take knowledge of, yet lest we too much should trouble the shepheard, I wil abridge for this bout as much as I can possibly. Not for that, interrupted the shepheard, but to giue leasure to this Nymph, to yeeld you the like. Make no doubt of that, replied *Siluie*, but according to her vsage of mee, I shall see what I haue to doe. So what by the one, and what by the other, *Celadon* shall learne from their owne mouth, their life in particular: and that in the delivery he might better heare them, they placed him betweene them, and walking a soft pace, *Leonide* beganne in this manner:

*The History of Siluie.*

They that say, that to be beloued, there needes nothing but to loue, haue not tryed it neither in the eyes, nor courage of this Nymph, otherwise they were to know, that as the water of the Fountaine runs incessantly from the spring, so the Loue which rises from this faire, wanders from her as farre as it can. If when you haue heard the discourse which I am to make to you, you will not auerre that that I say, I am willing you should accuse me of smal iudgement.

*Amasis*, the mother of *Galathee*, hath a sonne, named *Clidamon*, accompanied with all the amiable vertues, that a person of his age and quality may haue; for he seemeth to be borne to all that pertaine to Armes or Ladyes. It is about three yeeres since, that to giue some proofe of his gentle nature, with the permission of *Amasis*, he became seruant to al the Nymphs, and that not by election, but by lot: For, hauing put all the names of the Nymphs into a vessell, and all the young Knights into another, before all the assembly he tooke the youngest among vs, and the youngest among them to the man he gaue the vessell of the Nymphs, and to

to the mayd, that of the men. And then after the sound of the trumpets, the Youth drew, and the first name that came out, was *Silvie*: and the same instant the lot was drawne by the youngest Nymph, who drew that of *Ligdamon*. Great was the applause of euery one, but greater the gentlenesse of *Ligdamon*, who after he had received the scroule, came with one knee on the ground, to kisse the hands of this faire Nymph, who out of shamefastnesse would not suffer him, without the commandement of *Amasis*; who said, it was the least part of scruice that was due vnto her, in the honour of so great a god as Loue. After her all the rest were called: to some it fell out as they desired, to others not: so it was, that *Galathee* had a most accomplished person, named *Lindamor*, who as then was but lately come from the Army of *Merous*. As for mine, he was called *Agis*, the most inconstant and deceitfull that euer was.

Now of those that were thus bestowed, some serued onely in shew, others of good will, ratified to these faire the deuotion which fortune had made of them: and they that maintained themselves best, were such as before had conceiued some affection. Among others, the yong *Ligdamon* was one; this man fell to *Silvie*, a Nymph indeed amiable enough, but not for him, who had formerly set his mind otherwhere. And certaintly, it was his good fortune to bee absent then, for hee would neuer haue done the fained horrage to *Silvie*, that *Amasis* commanded, and that might haply haue wrought him some disgrace: for you must know, (gentle shepheard) that he was brought vp very young among vs, being not aboue ten yeeres of age, when he was placed heere; for the rest, so faire & direct in all his actions, that there was not a woman that thought not well of him: and aboue all, *Silvie* being very neere his age. At the beginning, their ordinary conuersation engendred the amity of a brother to a sister, such as their knowledge was capable to receiue. By degrees, his childhood changing into a state more seriled, about the age of fourteene or fifteene yeeres, he beganne to change his will into desires, and by little and little, his desires into passions: and yet he liued with that discretion, that *Silvie* had neuer knowledge that her selfe caused this desire. When he attained to some good vnderstanding, and that he knew his euill, he iudged within a while, what small hope there was of healing, not one of *Silvies* humours being likely to be hid from him: So that the ioy and liueliness which was in his countenance, and at his actions, were turned into sadness, and his sadness into so heauy a melancholy, that there was no body but might perceiue the alteration. *Silvie* was not one

of the last that asked him the cause, but she could draw out nothing but broken answers. In the end, seeing him continue still in this manner of life, one day when she beganne to complayne of his small amity, and reproching him that she had obliged her to conceale nothing from her, she heard that he was no more able to restraine himselfe, but that a deepe sigh escaped from him in stead of answer. This brought her to be of opinion, that loue might be the cause of his euill. And, see, if the poore *Ligdamon* did not discreetly carry his actions, since she was neuer able to imagine her selfe to be the cause.

I beleue well, that the humour of this Nymph (which shrunke not a iot from this purpose) might be, in part, the occasion. For hardly do we think of a thing estranged from our owne intents. But, it must be confessed, that heerein his wildeome was great, and his coldnesse also, that it could so wholy couer the heate of his affection. She then pressed him more then before, that if it be loue, she promised him all the assistance, and all the good offices that might be hoped for from their amitie. The more he did to auoyde it, the more she desired to knowit: in the end, not being able to defend it any longer, he protested to her, it was loue: but he had made an oath neuer to name the party. For (sayd he) to loue, is a great presumption in me; but constrainyd by so many beauties, it may be excused: and to dare name her, what excuse can couer the discouery of my raskinesse? Is this the friendship (presently answered *Silvie*) which you beare me? Truly (replied *Ligdamon*) I haue done it, and your commandement also, which I beseech you set before your eyes, and this glasse, which will make you see what you desire to know. At that word he tooke vp that which hung at her girdle, and held it before her eyes. Think you how she was surprised; incontynently knowing what he would say; and she hath since sworne to me, that she thought at first it had beene *Galathee*, of whom he would haue spokeu. In the meane time that he had stood to behold her, she stood as rauished to consider his simplicitie in choller against him, but much more against her selfe, seeing well she had drawne this declaration by force from his mouth. Notwithstanding her high courage would not suffer her to make any long defence for the iustice of *Ligdamon*. For at an instant she lifts her selfe vp, and without speaking to him, departs full of despite, that any durst presume to loue her arrogant beauty; that iudgeth none worthy of it. The faithfull *Ligdamon* stayed, but without a soule, and as an insensible Statue. In the end, ecomming agayne to himselfe, he went as well as he could, to his lodgynge, out of which he went not some good time, because the knowledge

Iedge which he had of the small loue of *Silvie* touched him so to the quick, that he fell sicke, so that there was small hope of life, when he resolued to write her such a letter.

The losse of my life was not of force sufficient to discouer vnto you the rashnesse of your seruant, without your expresse commandement; yet, if you judge that I must die and hold my peace, say also, that your eyes must haue had lesse absolute power ouer me. For if at the first summons which their beauty made me, I could not defend my selfe from giuing them my soule, how hauing beeene so often vrged, could I haue refused the acknowledgement of that gift? yet, if I haue offended in offering my heart to your beauty, I am willing, for the fault I haue committed, in presenting to such merits, a thing of so small valem, to sacrifice vnto you my life, without sorrowing for the losse, eyther of the one, or of the other, sith they be no more pleasing vnto you.

This letter was brought to *Silvie*, when she was alone in her Chamber. It is true, that I came in at the same time, and indeed well for *Ligdamon*; for behold the humour of this fayre Nymph: She had conceiued so great a despite toward him, after he had discouered his affection, that not only she blotted out the remembrāce of the amity passed, but so lost her will, that *Ligdamon* was like a thing indifferent to her. So that, when she heard that every one despaired of his recovery, she was no more moued at it, then if she had never seene him. I, that particularly obserued it, could not tell what to iudge of it, but that her youth made her easily lose the loue of men absent. But when now I saw her refuse that which one deliuered her in his behalfe, I knew well that they needed no bad messenger betweene them. This was the cause that I took the letter that she had refused, and which the young boy that brought it (by his masters commandement) had left on the table. She then lesse heedfull then she would haue beeene, ranne after me, and intreated me not to reade it. I will see it (sayd I) and it be but for the deniall you make. Then beganne she to blussh, and said, Reade it not, good sister, binde me to you for it, I con-  
iure you by our friendship. And what shall that be then (answered I) if it may suffer you to conceale any thing from me? Thinke you, that if it allow you dissimulation enough to hide from me, it shall not giue me curiositē enough to discouer you. And how then (said she) is there no more hope of your discretion? No more (sayd I) then of sincerenitē in your amity. She staid some while silent, looking on me, and drawing neare me, said At least promise me, that you will not looke on it, till I haue discoursed to you all that is past. I am content (sayd I) prouided that you proue not

alyer. After she had sworne to me, she would tell me all truely, and I sworne, not to make shew of it, she recounted vnto me all that I haue sayd of *Ligdamon*: and at this present (going forward) he comes to send me this letter, and I haue enough of his complaints, or rather, of his faynings. But (answered I) what if they be true? And if they be (sayd she) what haue I to doe with his follies? For that reason (sayd I) that they are bound to helpe the miserable, that haue throwne him downe headlong. And what can I do to his euill (replied she) Can I doe lesse then liue, since I am in the world? Wherefore hath he his eyes? Why comes he where I am? All these excuses (sayd I) are nothing worth: for you are (without doubt) accessary to his euill. If you were of lesse perfection, if you could make your selfe lesse louely, thinke you he would be brought to this extremity? And truly (said she, smiling to me) You are very pleasant, to charge me with this fault. What would you haue me to be, if I should not be the same that I am? And why, *Silvie* (answered I?) Know you not that he that puts a weapon in the hands of a mad man, is in part culpable of the harme he doth? And why should not you be so, since this beauty, which the heauens, at your birth, haue giuen you, hath beeene by you so curiously sharped with so many vertues and amiable perfections, which no eye (without being stricken) can looke on? And shall not you be blamed for the murders which your cruelty commits? Behold your selfe (*Silvie*) there is no necessity that you should be lesse faire, nor lesse replenished with perfections, but you are to study the more to make your selfe good, as you are faire, and to put as much sweetnesse into your soule, as the heauens haue in your face. But the mischiefe is, your eyes, to do the more hurt, haue taken all away, and haue left nothing at all but rigour and cruelty.

Now gentle shepheard, that which makes me so affectionate to the defence of *Ligdamon*, was, that besides that we are somewhat allied, hee was also well esteemed of all that knew him, and I knew he was brought to very hard tearmes. Then after such like talke, I opened the letter, and read it aloud that she might understand it: but she cast not so much as her eye to it, which I found very strange, and well foresaw, that if I vsed not wondrous great force, I should hardly draw from her any good remedy for my sicke patient: which vrged me to tell her, at the first blow, that in any case I would not suffer *Ligdamon* to vndoe himselfe. Good sister, said she, since you are so pittifull, heale him your selfe. It is not of me, said I, that his healing depends; but I assure you, that if you hold in this sort towards him, as you haue done for the time passed, I will cause you to haue some

some displeasure: for I will make *Amasis* understand of it, and there shall be no one of our companions, to whom I will not tell it. So you shall play short, I loue *Ligdamon*, and I will not see him lost, so farre as I can helpe it. You speake very wisely, *Leonide*, (said she in choler:) these are the offices that I alwaies expected from your amity. My amity, answered I, should be the same for you against him, if he had done the wrong. At this her resolution was. Such as you will, said she, prouided, you do me not the displeasure, to publish the follies of *Ligdamon*; for, though I cannot bee blamed, yet it would trouble me to haue it published. See (cried I out the) what humour is this of yours, *Silvie*? You feare it should be knowne that a man loues you, & you fear not to haue it knowne that you haue caused his death. Because (said she) they may suspe&t the former to be produced by some consent on my part, but not the latter. Let vs leauue this, replied I, and resolute your selfe, I will that *Ligdamon* for the time to come, be entertained in another sort. And then I went on, that shee should assure her to him in such a fashion, that he might no more despaire, that when hee were recovered, I was contented she should vse him as she list, prouided, that she let him liue. I had paine enough to obtaine this grace from her, though I threatened to make it knowne: so, after long debate, and hauing made her beginne againe, once, twice or thrice, in the end shee wrote in this sort:

*If there be any thing in you that pleases mee, your death is the least of all other, the acknowledgement of your fault hath satisfied me, and I will haue no other revenge of your boldnesse, then the paine which you shall haue. Know your selfe hereafter, and you shall know me. Farewell, and liue.*

I wrote these words at the end of the letter, to the end he might hope for better, hauing so good a second.

*Leonide hath put the pen into this Nymphs hand. Loue wills it; your iustice requires it; her indeuour commands it: but her obstatne conceit hath great defence: since this fauour is the first I could procure you, cherish your selfe and hope.*

These letters were brought him so luckily, that yet hauing strength enough

enough to reade them, he saw the commandement that *Silvie* had giuen him to liue: and because till then, he would neuer vse any remedy, that he might not disobey the Nymph, he gouerned himselfe so, that in short time he was better, were it for that his disease hauing spent its force, was declining, or that the contentment of the soule was a good remedy for the paines of the body: so it was, that after that, his disease dayly lessened. But this so little moued this cruell beauty, that shee changed not one whit towards him, and when he was well, the most fauourable answere he could haue, was; I loue you not, neither doe I hate you, rest contented, that of all those which seeke me, you are he that displeases mee least. If he or I requested some better declaration, she vses such cruell words to vs, that no other but her courage could imagine, nor other affection beare them, then that of *Ligdamon*.

But not to draw this discourse in length, *Ligdamon* loues, and serued alwaies after, without any likelihood of hope, but that which I haue told you, vntill the time that *Clidaman* was chosen by fortune to serue her, then he had almost lost resolution; and had it not beene, that he knew by me, that he should be no better vsed, I know not what would haue become of him. Yet though this gaue him some comfort, the greatnessse of his Riuall gaue him more of iealousie. I remember once he gaue me this answere, vpon that which I told him, that he should not grieue so much for *Clidaman*: Faire Nymph (answered he) I will freely tell you whence my care proceeds, and then judge if I haue wrong. It is long time since I haue proued, that *Silvie* cannot be moued, neither by fidelity of affection, nor by extremity of Loue, that it is without doubt that she will neuer bee wounded on that side. Notwithstanding, as I haue learned of the wise *Adamas*, your vncle, every person is subiect to one certaine force, the stroke wherof they cannot auoyd, when ought it is touched. And what may I think, may be that of this faire, if it be not the greatnessse and power, and, as I feare, the fortune, & not the merits of *Clidaman*; his greatness, and not his affection? But indeed, herein he hath wrong: for neither the loue of *Ligdamon*, nor the greatnessse of *Clidaman*, can euer moue one glance of good will in *Silvie*. And beleue not but loue reserues her for an example to others, purposing to punish her by some vnusuall meanes. Now at that time there fel out a great testimony of her beauty, or at least of the force she hath to make her beloved.

It was the day so celebrated, which euery yeere we make holy, the sixt of the Moone of Iuly, and on which *Amasis* vsed to make that solemnne sacrifice, as well for the honour of the Feast, as for being the day of *Galathea*.

thees brith. When they were at Sacrifice, there came into the Temple, a number of men, clad in mourning, in the middest of whom was a Knight, so full of Maiesty aboue the rest, that he was easily iudged to be their master. He was so sad and melancholy, that it appeared that he had somewhat in his soule that troubled him. His habite blacke, in fashion of a mantle, trayning on the ground, which kept the beauty of his proportion from sight, but his face vncouered, and his head bare, the haire whereof yellow and crisped, shamed the Sun, & drew the eyes of all men to him. He came with a stately pace to the place where *Amasis* was, and after he had kissed her robe, he withdrew, waiting till the sacrifices were done, and by fortune, whether good or bad for him, I know not, he stood right ouer-against *Silvie*. A strange effect of loue! He had no sooner set his eyes upon her, but he knew her, though he never saw her before; and to be better assured, he demanded of one of his followers, who knew vs all: his answer was accompanied with a deepe sigh from the stranger: and all the while the sacrifice lasted, his eye never went off her. At last, the sacrifice being ended, *Amasis* returnnes to her Palace, where audience being giuen him, he spake before them all in this sort:

Madam, though the mourning you see in my garments, be much more blacke in my soule, yet can it not equall the cause I haue. And though my losse be extreme, yet thinke I not I am the onely man that haue lost; for you are particularly weakned in your fauchfull seruants, of one, which (it may be) was not the least affectioned, nor the most vnyprofitable in your seruice. This consideration hath made me hope to obtaine of you some revenge of his death against his murderer. But since I entred into this Temple, I haue lost all hope; iudging, that if the desire of revenge die in me, that am the brother of the wronged, by much stronger reason should it shrinke in you, Madame, in whom the compassion of the dead, and the seruice which he vowed you, may without more adoe, cause some good will to arise. Notwithstanding, since I see the armes of my brothers murderer, prepared already against me; not to auoyd such a death, but to instruct others, I will tell you as briefly as I can, the fortune of him whom I lament. Though, Madame, I haue not the honor to be knowne to you, yet, I assure my self, that at the naming of my brother, who never loued but your seruice, you will acknowledge me for your most humble servant. His name was *Aristander*, and we were both the sonnes of that great Cleopatra, which for your seruice visited so often the *Tyber*, the *Rhine*, the *Dan*: and for that I was the yonger, it may be, about nine years, as soone as he saw me able to beare Armes, he sent me into the Army of the great *Merone*.

*Merone*, the delight of men, and the most pleasing Prince that euer came into *Gaule*. To tell you why my father sent me rather to *Merone*, then to *Thierry*, King of the *Visigots*, or to that of the *Burgonyans*, it will be hard for me. Yet I am of opinion, it was, that I might not serue a Prince so neere your estates, that fortune might make your enemy.

So it was, that my successe was such, that *Childeric* his sonne, a Prince warlike, and of great hope, seing me neere about his age, was pleased more especially to fauour me with his loue, then any other. When I came first to him, it was about the time, that that great and wise *Etius* treated of a peace with *Merone* and the *Franks* (for so he called all that followed him) to resist that scourge of God; *Attila*, king of the *Huns*, who having gathered together, from the Deserts of *Asia*, an incredible number of people, even to 500000. fighting men, discended like a deluge, sacking furiously all the countrys, where he passed; and though this *Etius* Lieutenant generall in *Gaule* of *Valentinian*, was come with a purpose to make war on *Merone*, who during the governmēt of *Castinus* was possēt of a part of *Gaule*, yet thought he it better to make him his friend, and the *Visigots* & *Burgonians* likewise, rather then to be ouerthrowne by *Attila*, who lately hauing traversed in *Germany*, was about the bāks of *Rine*, where he stayd not long without aduancing himselfe so into *Gaule*, that he besieged the towne of *Orleance*, where the coming of *Thierry*, king of the *Visigots*, made him raise his siege, & take another way: but beset by *Merone* & *Etius*, with their cōfederates in the field of *Catalonia*, he was defeated more by the valiance of the *Franks*, & the wisedom of *Merone*, then all the other force. Since *Etius* hauing bene killed, it may be, by the commandement of his master, for soime discontentment, *Merone* was receiued at *Paris*, *Orleance*, *Sens*, & other neighbour townes, for Lord, and King, and all that people haue since borne him such affection, that they wil not only behis, but cause theselues to be called by the name of *Franks*, & to please him the better, & their country, in stead of *Gaul* take the name of *Frannie*. While I was entred into armes among the *Franks*, the *Gauls*, the *Romans*, the *Burgonians*, the *Visigots*, and the *Huns*, my brother was among them of loue: armes so much the more offensiuē, for that they turne all their blowes vpon the heart: his disaster was such, (if now I may bee suffered to cal it so) that being bred vp by *Clidassan*, he saw the faire *Silvie*, but seeing her, hee saw his death also, not hauing liued since that, but as drawing towards his tombe, to tell you the cause I cannot: for being with *Childeric*, I knew nothing but that my brother was in extremity, though I found al the cōtentments that might be, as being regarded of my Master,

Master, beloued of my companions, cherished and honored generally of all, for a certaine good opinion they conceiue of me, for affaires that fell out, which (it may be) got me with them, more authority & credit, then my age and capacity might merit. I could not, knowing the sicknesse of my brother, stay longer tyme with *Childerick*, but taking leaue of him, & promising him to returne very shortly, I came backe with the haste that my loue required. As soone as I was come, many ranne to tell him that *Guymanes* was come: for so they call me. His loue gaue him strength e-nough to lift vp himselfe in his bed, & he imbraced me with the most entire affection, that one brother could do to another.

It would serue but to trouble you, and wound my selfe afresh, to recount vnto you the things, which our amity wrought betweene vs. So it was, that either 2. or 3. daies, after my brother was brought to that extremity, that he could hardly draw his breath, and yet that cruell loue inclined him more to sighing, then to the necessity hee had of breathing, and in all his raging fits, we could heare nothing, but the name of *Silvie*: I, to whom the displeasure of his death was so violent, that I could hardly dissemble, wished so much euill to this vñknowne *Silvie*, that I could not hold from cursing her; which when my brother heard, and his affection as yet greater then his disease, hee enforced himselfe to speake this: Brother, if you will not bee my greatest enemy, forbeare, I beseech you, these imprecations, which cannot but displease mee much more then my disease. I had much rather not bee at all, then that they should take effect, and being vñprofitable, what will it auaise you, vñlesse it be to wittenesse to me, how much you hate that which I loue? I know well, my losse will trouble you, and therein I haue more feeling of our separation, then of my end. But since euery man is borne to dye, why with me do you not thanke the heauens, which haue chosen me the fairest death, and the most faire murderer that euer man had? The extremity of my affection, and the extremity of the vertue of *Silvie*, are the armes by which her beauty is serued, to put rye into my griefe; and why do you bewaile me, & wish euill to her, to whom I wish more good then to my soule? I thinke hee would haue said more, but his strength failed, and I more wet with teares of pitty, then when against *Attila* I was all on a sweat vnder my armor, and my armes sprinkled with bloud, all ouer me. Brother, she that takes you from yours, is the most vniust that euer was: and if she be faire, the gods haue done the iniustice in her; for either they should haue changed her face or her heart. Then *Aristander*, hauing gotten a little more strength, replied to me, for Gods sake, *Guymanes*, blasphemē no more in

this

this sort, & beleue that *Silvie* hath an heart answerable to her face, that as the one is full of beauty, so the other is of vertue; that if for louing her I die, doe not you wonder, because that if the eye cannot, without dazing, abide the beames of one Sun without cloudy, how may not my soule remaine dazeled at the beames of so many Suns, which glister in this faire? that if I haue scarce tasted such diuinites, without death, I may haue the contentment of him, that dies to see *Impiter* in his diuinity? I would tell you, that as her death giues witnesse, that no other had euer scene so much of diuinity as shee; so, that no man euer loued so much of beauty, nor so much of vertue, as I. Now I that came from an exercise, that made mee beleue there was no loue forced, but voluntary, with which men go on flattering themselues in idlenesse, said to him, Is it possible, that one sole beauty should be the cause of your death? My brother (answered he) I am in such extremity, that I thinke I cannot answeare your demands: but (said he on, taking me by the hand) for brotherly loue, and for our particular, which binds vs yet faster, I adiure you to promise me one gift. I did so. Then he said on, Beare as from me, this kisse to *Silvy*: and then he kissed my hand: and obserue that which you finde of my last will; and when you see this Nymph, you shall know that which you demand of me. At this word, with a blast his soule flew vp, & his body lay cold in my armes.

The affliction that I felt in this losse, as it capnot be imagined but by him that hath beene in it, so it cannot be conceiued, but by the heart that suffered it, and hardly can the word reach that, which the thought may not attaine: so that without longer abode in bewailing this disaster, I wil say, Madam, that as soone as my dolours would suffer me, I haue set my selfe on the way, as well to renderyou the homage which I owe you, and to demand iustice of you for the death of *Aristander*, as to fulfill my promise which I made him agaist his homicide, and to present that which by his last will he left in writing, to the end that I may call my selfe as iust an obseruer of my word, as his affection hath beene inviolable. But at the instant when I was presented before you, and that I meant to open my mouth against this murderer, I haue found my brothers words so true, that not only I excuse his death, but desire and require the like. This shall bee then, Madam, with your permission, which I will perforne: and then making a great reverence to *Amasis*, he chose from among vs *Silvie*, and resting one knee on the ground, he said, Faire murtherer, though on this faire brest there fall but one teare of pitty, at the newes of the death of the person which was so much yours, you cease not to haue entire & honourable

nourable victory; yet, if you judge that to so many flames which you haue lighted in him, so small a drop shall not bee a great asswagement, receiue at least the burning kisse which hee bequeathis you, when presently his soule turned into this kisse, which he set in this faire hand, rich indeed with the spoiles of many other mens liberties, but in none more fully then that of his. At this word, hee kissed her hand, and then held on thus after he was risen:

Among the papers where *Aristander* put his last Will, we haue found this heere; and because it is enclosed in the fashion you see, and that he directed it to you, I bring it you, with the protestation which by his testa-ment he commaunded me to make before you open it; that if your will be not to grant the request he hath made you, he beseecheth you not to reade it at all, to the end, that as well in death, as in life, he may not feele the strokes of your cruelty. Then he presented her a letter, which *Silvie*, troubled with this accident, would haue refused, but for *Amasis* com-mandement: And after, *Guymantes* beganne his speech againe thus: I haue hitherto performed the last Will of *Aristander*: there remaines, that I should pursue vpon his homicide his cruell death; but if at another time the offence haue giuen mee the command, at this time Loue ordaines, that my most faire vengeance be the sacrifice of my liberty, on the same Altar that yet smokes with that of my brother, who being rauished from me, when I breathed nothing against you, but bloud and death, giues witness, that every eye that sees you, owes you his heart for tribute, & that vniuitly euery man liues, that liues not in your seruice. *Silvie* somewhat confounded with this accident, stayed some long while from an-swer; so that *Amasis* tooke the paper which she had in her hand, and ha-ving sayd to *Guymantes*, that *Silvie* should make answer, she withdrew a-side with so ne of vs, and breaking the boxe, read these words:

If my affection haue not made my seruice pleasing, nor my seruice mine affection, at the least, eyther this affection shall make my death in you more pittifull, or my death assure you of the fidelitie of my affection; and that as no man euer loued more of perfections, so did neuer any loue with more passion. The last testimony which I will giue you, shal be the gift by him whom I hold most deare next you, who is my brother; for I know well, what I giue you, when I ordaine, that he should see you, know-ing well by experiance, that it is impossible he should be, and not loue you. Desire not (my sayre murderer) that he should be inheritor of my fortune, but heare of this, that I haue lesse iustly merited of all others then of you. He that writ it, is a seruant, who for hauing less of loue then one heart

heart was capable to conceiue, would rather die then diminish.

*Amasis* then calling *Silvie*, demaunded what so great cruelty she had vsed against *Aristander*, which brought him vnto that extremity. The Nymph blushing, answered, that she knew not whereof he might com-plaine. I would (sayd she) that you receive *Guymantes* into his place; then calling him before them all, she asked if he would obserue his brothers will? He answered, Yes, so it be not a thing contrary to his affection. He requireth this Nymph (sayd *Amasis*) to receive you into his place, and that you haue better fortune then he. To receive you, I command her; for the fortune whereof he speakes, it is neyther the prayer, nor the com-maundement of another that can frame that, but the proper merit, or the fortune it selfe. *Guymantes*, after he had kissed the robe of *Amasis*, came to doe as much to the hands of *Silvie*, in signe of seruitude: but she was so displeased with him for the reproches which he had giuen her, and with the declaration of his affection, that without the commandement of *Amasis*, she would not haue permitted him.

As they were ready to depart, *Clidaman*, comming from hunting, was aduertised of this new seruant of his mistris, for which he made so loude a complaint, that *Amasis* and *Guymantes* heard him; and because he knew not whence it proceeded, she told it him: and she had scarcely ended, when *Clidaman*, snatching at her word, complained that she had per-mitted a thing so much to his disaduantage, that this was to call backe those ordinances, which the Destinies had chosen for him, which none, nor she knew how to infringe, without loue. Words which he spake with affec-tion and vehemency, because that out of good judgement he had loued *Silvie*. But *Guymantes*, who, besides his new loue, had so good an op-nion of himselfe, that he would giue no place to any person in the world, answered, addressing his speech to *Amasis*: Madam, there be that would not I should be seruant to the faire *Silvie*: they that speake it, know little of loue, otherwise they would not thinke, that your ordinances, nor of all the gods together, were of force sufficient to diuert the course of our affection: therefore it is that I declare conerty, that if they deny me that which heeretofore hath beene allowed me, I shall disobey and turne rebel, & that no consideration ought to change me. And then turning to-ward *Clidaman*, I know the respect I owe you (said he) but I feel withal, the power that Loue hath ouer me. If the Destinies haue giuen you to *Silvie*, her beauty is it that hath goston me iudge, whether of these two gifts ought to be most allowable. *Clidaman* would haue answered, when *Amasis* sayd to him, Sonne, you haue reason to grieue, if they altered our ordinances

ordinances, but they haue not infringed them. You were commaunded serue *Silvie*, but they denyed to others. Sweet oyntments giue the better smell when they are chafed. A louer likewise hauing a Riwall, giueth more prooef of his merits. So *Amasis* ordyned, and now behold *Silvie* well serued. For *Guymanes* forgot not any thing that his Loue commaunded: and *Clidaman*, out of enuy, studied to appeare more carefull.

But aboue all, *Ligdaman* serued her with such discretion and respect, that oftentimes he durst not come neere her, lest he should giue notice of his affection to others. And in my minde, his seruice was as pleasing as any of the rest. But indeed one time he almost lost his patience. It hapened, that *Amasis* hand lighted on a bodkin made in the shape of a sword, wherewith *Silvie* was wont to raise and dresse her haire, and seeing *Clidaman* neere her, she gaue it him to beare to his mistris, but he kept it all the day, to put *Guymanes* to some payne. He doubted not *Ligdaman*: and see how often one may hurt one man for another; for the poysone which was prepared for *Guymanes*, went to the heart of *Ligdaman*, who not being able to dissemble it, that knowledge might not be taken of it, he withdrew himselfe to his lodgynge, where, after he had some while inuenomed his euill by his thoughts, he tooke his pen and wrot this verse:

*A Madrigall on the Sword of Silvie in the hands of Clidaman.*

**T**One, that lay hid in treason  
Of weapon stain'd with bloud:  
But not without all reason,  
Causis from my hope the good:  
For wanting meane to pay  
My heauy seruitude,  
With wages that would way,  
To cover his ingratitude,  
He entertaines me cunningly,  
Though not in loue, in sondiery.

And at the end of these verses he addeth these words:

**O**Ne may auerre (faire Leonide) that *Silvie* doth like the Sunne, that casteth his beames as well on the most vyle things, as on the most noble.

Himselfe brought me this paper, I could not with all my study vnderstand,

derstand, nor draw other thing from him, but that *Silvie* had giuen him a blow with a sword: and leauing me, he went away the most lost man on the earth. See how artificiall a fencer is Loue, that with so small weapons can make so great gashes! It grieued me to see him in this case. And to know if any new accident had befallen him, I went to *Silvie*; but she swore she knew not what it might be. In the end, hauing stayed some time to reade the verses; on a suddaine she lifted vp her hand to her haire, and not finding her bodkin, she began to laugh, and sayd, That her bodkin had beene lost, and some body had found it, and without doubt (it might be) *Ligdaman* knew it. She had scarcely sayd this, when *Clidaman* came into the roome with this murdering sword in his hand. I desired her to let him keepe it no longer. I see (sayd she) his discretion, hereafter I will vse the power I haue ouer him. She fayled not of her purpose: for being neere him, she sayd; See a sword that is mine. He answered, So is he that beares it. I would haue it, sayd she. I would, answered he, you would all of me that is yours. Will you not giue it me (said the Nymph?) How (replyed he?) can I will any thing, since I haue no will at all? And (sayd she) what haue you done with that which you had? You haue snatched it from me (sayd he) and now it is changed into yours. Since then (continued she) that your will is but mine, giue me that bodkin, because my will is so. Since (sayd he) that I will that thing that you would, and that you will haue this bodkin, it must of necessity be, that I will haue it also. *Silvie* smiled a little, but in the end she sayd: I will that you giue it me. And I also (said he) will, that you giue it me. Then the Nymph thrust forth her hand, and took it. I wil neuer refuse it (sayd he) though you will take it from me, and it were this heart for once. *Silvie* had her sword, and I wrot this scroule to *Ligdaman*:

**T**He good which without knowledge hath beene done to your Riwall, with his knowledge is taken from him: iudge in what termes his affayres are, since the fauours he hath, proceeded of ignorance, but the disfauours, of deliberation.

So *Ligdaman* was healed, not by the same hand, but by the same weapon that hurt him. In the meane time, the affection of *Guymanes* came to such an extremity, that (it may be) it came nothing short of that of *Ariander*; on the other side *Clidaman*, vnder the cloke of courtesie had let grow, in his soule, a most ardent and true loue. After they had many times assayed, out of enuy, who should be the most welcome to *Silvie*, and knew that she fauoured and disfauoured them both alike, they resolued

one day, because that otherwise there was mutuall loue betweene them, to know which of the two was most beloued, and came for that cause to *Silvie*, from whom they had such cold answers, that they could not assoile the judgement. Then, by the counsell of a Druyde, who (it may be) was displeased to see two such persons lose their time so unprofitably, which they might much better employ for the defence of the *Gauls*, whom so many Barbarians attempted to ouer-run, they came to the fountaine of the verity of Loue. You know what the property of this water is, and how it declareth, against their will, the most secret thoughts of Louers; for he that lookes in it, sees his Mistris; and if he be loued, he sees himselfe hard by; and if she loue any other, that is his figure that he sees. Now *Clidaman* was the first that presented himselfe, he layd his knee to the ground, kissed the side of the fountaine: And hauing besought the *Demon* of that place, to be more fauourable to him then to *Damon*, he bent himselfe somewhat into it. Presently *Silvie* presented her selfe so faire and admirable, that the louer transported stooped to kisse her hand: but this coatenement was well changed when he sawe no body neare her. He withdrew himselfe, much troubled, after he had stayed some while; And unwilling to speake any thing, he made signe to *Guymanes*, that he should prooue his fortune. He with all the ceremonies requisite, hauing made his request, cast his eye on the fountayne, but was serued like *Clidaman*, because that *Silvie* alone presented her selfe, burning (almost) with her fayre eyes, the water which seemed to play about her. They were both astonished at this accident, and demanded the cause of this Druyde, which was a great Magician. He answered, that it was, for that *Silvie* as yet loued no person, as being not capable to be burnt, but onely to burne. They that thought they could not be so much neglected, having gone before severally, now returned both together, and sodainely both the one and the other shifted on diuers sides; yet the Nymph appeared alone. The Druyde smiling came to withdraw them from beloued at all, and that the shifting from side to side, could not represent their figure in the water. For you must know (sayd he) that as other waters represent the bodies, which are before them, this represents the spirits.

Now the spirit, which is but the will, the memory and the judgement, when it is beloued, transformeth it selfe into the thing beloued; and therefore it is, that when you presented your selues heere, it received the figure of your spirits, and not of your body; and your spirit being changed into,

*Silvie*.

*Silvie*, it represented *Silvie*, and not you. Whereas, if *Silvie* had loued you, she should as well haue beeene changed into you, as you into her: and so representing your spirit, you sawe *Silvie*; and seeing *Silvie* changed, as I told you by this loue, you should haue seene your selues also. *Clidaman* stood very attentiu to this discourse; and considering the conclusion was an assurance of that he feared, being full of choller, drawing out his Sword, he strooke two or three blowes with all his might on the marble of the fountaine: but his Sword being at the first resisted, in the end, it brake in the middle, not leauing any marke of his blowes; imitating heerein the angry dogge, that biteth the stome one flings at him. The Druyde gaue him to vnderstand, that he traualied in vaine, because that his enchantment could not be ended by force, but by extremity of loue: yet if he listed to make it unprofitable, he knew the meane. *Clidaman* nourished for rarity within great Cages of yron, two Lions, and two Vnicornes, which he oftentimes caused to fight with other beasts.

Now this Druyde demanded them to keepe this fountaine, and enchanted them in such sort, that although they were set at liberty, yet could they not leaue the entry of that Cauue, but onely when they were to seeke their foode. For in that while there stayed but two, and euer since they haue done no hurt to any, but those which attempted to go to the fountayne; but they assayled them with such fury, that there is no likelihoode that any will hazard himselfe. For the Lions are so large and terrible; they haue their clawes so long and so piercing; so nimble and swift, and so animated to this defence, that they doe deedes incredible. On the other side, the Vnicornes haue their hornes so poyneted, and so strong, that they will pierce a very rocke: they strike with such force and swiftnesse, that no man can auoide them. As soone as this guard was thus ordered, *Clidaman* and *Guymanes* departed away so secretly, that *Amasis* nor *Silvie* knew nothing, vntill they were farre off. They went to seeke out *Merone* and *Childericke*. For they haue told vs since, that since they were so equally handled by their loue, they would try if Armes would fauour them as equally.

Thus (gentle shepheard) haue we lost the commodity of this Fountaine, which so well discouered the secrets of deceiuing thoughts, that if all were as *Ligdamon*, they would not haue made vs lose it: For, when I knew that *Clidaman* and *Guymanes* were gone, I counselled him to bee the third, assuring my selfe he should be the more fauoured; but he made me this answer: Faire *Leonide*, I alwaies counsell them that are in doubt of their good or euill, that they hazard themselves sometimes, to know the

the truch. But would not this be folly for him, that hauing neuer conceiued any hope of that he desires, to seeke for a more sure knowledge of his disaster? As for me, I am not in doubt, whether the faire *Silvie* loue me, or not; I am but too assured of it, and when I would know more, I neede not aske but of her eyes and her actions. Since that time his affection hath still increased, like the fire, when they lay on more wood: For this is the property of that faculty, to make that which pleases, more delightfull, and that which offends, most offensive: and God knowes how this cruell hath handled him. The time is yet to come, that she would looke on him without disdaine or cruelty: and for my part, I know not how a generous man can haue such patience, because indeed, the offences which she hath done him, touch more of outrage then of rigor. One day, when he met her going out to walke alone with me, because he had a sweete voyce, I prayed him to sing: he said these verses:

## A Song on a desire.

VVhat is this ill that troubles me,  
And will not give me leisure still  
To finde any thing remedie?  
Alas, it is a burning will,  
Which, like a flame, alwaies aspires  
To place most high, and hard to gaine;  
For that the good I most desire,  
Is it that I cannot attaine.

Desire hath, since first it bred,  
For mother and for sister deere,  
An hasty hope, right strong of head,  
That giveth possession wel-neere.  
But though of course a womans hart  
Takes never any hold of Lone,  
Desire will not from my soule part,  
Though Hope from me haue made remoue.

But if all Hope be cleane put out,  
Wherfore desire so labour you  
To bring a greater worke about?  
This will bus shew small vertue true.

And she is alwaies flinty hard,  
Without or fauours or regard.  
So, though my Hope be fully dead,  
Yet will Desire lift up his head.

He had no sooner ended, but *Silvie* takes him vp thus: Hal tell me, *Ligdamon*, since I am not the cause of your euill, why doe you lay it on mee? It is your owne desire which you should accuse; for it is it that makes you traualc in vaint. The passionate *Ligdamon* answered, Desire, indeed, is that which tormenteth me: but it is not that which shuld be blamed, but that which giues it birth, and that is the vertues and perfections of *Silvie*. If the desires, replied she, be not irregular, they torment not: and if they be irregular, and goe beyond reason, they ought to be borne of another obiect then of vertue, and are not the true children of such a father, since they resemble him nothing. Till this time, answered *Ligdamon*, I never heard say, that any disauowed a child, for not resembling his father; and yet the extreme desires are not against reason: for, is it not reasonable to desire all good things, according to the degree of their goodness? and so an extreme beauty shoulde reasonably loued in extremity: so that if they must be blamed in any thing, a man should not say, they are against reason, but beyond reason. Let this suffice, replied this cruell, I am not more reasonable then reason: therefore it is, that I will not auow for mine, that which exceeds. At this word, not to leaue him the meane to answer, shee turned to meeke some of her companions that followed her.

One time, when *Amaesis* returned from that little place of *Mont-brison*, where the pleasure of the garden, and solitarineffe, had stayed her longer then she meant, the night came on her before she came to *Marsellis*. And because the euening was cold, as we went, I asked him on the way, of purpose to make him speake before his mistresse, if he felte not the cold and humidity of the euening? Whereto he answered, that of long time the cold nor heate outward had done him hurt. And asking him, why, and what his receit was? To the one, he answered me, I oppose my burning desires; and to the other, my frozen hopes. If it be so (sayd I suddenly) whence came it, that I haue so often heard you say you burne, and sometime, that you freeze. Ah! (answered he) with a great sigh: Courteous Nymph, the euill whereof I complaine, torments me not outwardly, but inwardly; and yet so deeply, that there is no secret part of my soule so retired, where I feele not the grieve. For you must know, that aboue all other

other, that the fire and colde are incomptables alike. But I haue had within my heart continually the fire on a flame, and the colde frozen, and onely feele the discommodity without any mitigation. *Silvie* could hold no longer from making him feele her accustomed cruelties, but till that word was ended. Yet me thought, she wold scarce giue him the leisure to bring forth, that so full of enuy she was, to make him feele her stings, when turning toward me with a smile, she sayd disdainfully, casting her head on his side. Oh! how happy is *Ligdamon*, to haue both cold and heat when he will? at least, he hath no cause to complaine, nor to feele many discommodities: for, if the cold of his hope freeze, he may chafe himselfe with the heate of his desires; if his ouer-ardent desires doe burne him, he may coole himselfe with the ice of his hopes. It is very necessary (sayre *Silvie*, answered *Ligdamon*) that I should vsē this remedy to maintayne me, otherwile I had not beene long since; but this is but a small asswaging of so great a fire: so that the knowledge of these things is a fresh wound which offendes me the more, for that in the greatnessse of my desires I know their weakenesse, and in their weakenesse their greatnessse. You figure your euill (replied the Nymph) such as you please: but I beleeue not, that the cold being so neere the heate, and the heate so neere the cold, neyther the one, nor the other will suffer his neighbour to be much offended.

Indeede (answered *Ligdamon*) to make me burne and freeze at one time, is not one of the least maruels that proceed from you; but this is the greatest, that is, of your cold, that my heate commath, and of my heate, your ice. But yet it is more maruellous, to see a man haue such imaginations, added the Nymph: for they conceiue such impossible things, that he that beleeveth them, may aswell be taxed for want of judgement, as you that tell them, for want of truthe. I confess, answered he, that my imaginations conceiue things impossible; but that proceeds from my ouer-great affection, and from your ouer-great crueltie; and as this is one of your least effects, that you reproch me with, so it is not one of my least tormentes. I beleeveth, sayd she, that your tormentes, and mine effects, are of greatest force in your discourse. Hardly, sayd *Ligdamon*, can a man say that which he doth not well understand. Hardly (replied the Nymph) may the conceits and vaine Ideaes of a distempred imagination come to be knowne. If the truth, adioyned *Ligdamon*, accompany not this imagination, I should hardly stand in so great need of your compassion. Men (answered the Nymph) make their trophies of our bountie. Do you any whit better, lid he, out of our losse? I neuer sawe (replied *Silvie*) any so y<sup>e</sup> done,

done, but they shifft well enough, as you do all.

The more I tel you of the cruelties of this Nymph, and of the patiences of *Ligdamon*, the more comes into my memory. Whē *Clidaman* was gone, as I told you, *Amasis* wold send after him the greatest part of the young Knights of this Countrey, vnder the charge of *Lindamor*, to the end hee might be taken by *Merone* for the man he was. Among other, *Ligdamon*, as a right gentle Knight, was not forgot. But this cruell would not bid him adieu, faining to be sicke: yet he that would not go, without she knew of it in some sort, wrot me these verses:

On a Departure.

VV *Hy Lote, since thou dost so dñe fire  
That I shold scorch in so great fire,  
Why must I go farre from my Dame?*

I answered him.

T *O wroke in her some mysteries,  
Knowest thou not that from ashes rise,  
The Phoenix, rebirth dyes in the flame?*

Hee had beene an happy man with this answer, but this cruell having found what I wrot, and v̄willing to do him good her selfe, and not suffering any other shold doe it, snachte the pen with great strength out of my hand, telling mee, that the flatteries which I vsē to *Ligdamon*, were the cause of the continuance of his follies, and he had cause more to complaine of me, than of her: At last she wrot this:

*Silvies answer.*

T *He Phoenix from the cinders rise,  
Because that in the flame it die,  
Absence giveth a moreall stroke,  
If presence no more comfort canse,  
Never by cold there will be broke,  
The yce which farr never shalbe so.*

You may thinke with what contentment he pasted: It was to some purpose, for him to be accustomed of long time to such blowes, and that he remembred the disgraces which came from them whom they ferre, ought often to take the place of favour. And I remember, that on this dis-

course, he called himselfe the most happy man in the world, since the ordinary disgraces which hee receiuied from *Silvia*, could not make him doubt that she had him in any great good memory, that she would not acknowledge him for her servant, and that since she vsed not to deale so with others that were not particularly affectioned to her; hee made himselfe beleue, that money was that wherewith she paid those that were towards her, and such as it was, he was to make reckoning of it, because it had her marke: and on this subiect hee sent these verles before hee parted.

## A SONET.

**T**HIS soneraigne beauty, she will haue it so;  
What is impossible, not what I can,  
To make good triall, shes I am the man:  
Such is her will, and mine with hers shall go.

*She shall at last see, that my loue for her,*  
*Is at the spring, like to a springing well:*  
*The more of me she drawes, by sorowes full,*  
*The more she shall perceiue, I loue her more.*

*The spring that brings forth my affection,*  
*Is without more of her perfection:*  
*Eternall in effect, and so is she.*

*Affay sben (rigorously) from my hard face,*  
*To draw incessantly; my loue wants date:*  
*The more you draw, the greater it will be.*

*Leonide* had held on discourse, if a far off shee had not seene *Galathes* come, who after she had long stayd alone, and not able longer to deprive her selfe of the sight of this shepheard, she was dressed the best to her advantage that her glasse could giue counsell, and came forth without any other company then the little *Mari*; she was faire, & worthy to be beloued of an heart, that had not already had another affection. At that time, by the confusion which the water had wrought in *Celadons* stomake, hee felte himselfe ill at ease, that by that time they came at the Nymph, they were constrained to carry him backe, & the shepheard soone after went to bed, where he remained some daies downe lying, and vp-rising of his infirmity, without being either grieuously sicke, or very throughly recoverd.

*The end of the third Booke.*

THE FOVRTH BOOKE OF  
Astrea and Celadon.

*Alabee*, that was thoroughly taken, so long as the sicknes of *Celadon* lasted, stirred not ordinarily from his beds head; and when she was constrained to remoue from thence, either to rest, or for some other occasion, she left him *Leonide* for the most part, whom shee gaue in charge to lose no opportunity, to giue the shepheard to vnderstand of her good will, believing that by this meanes, shee might, in the end, giue him hope of that which his condition denied. And indeed, *Leonide* deceipted her not; for though she were desirous, *Lindamor* might incatified; yet she that looked for all her aduancement from *Galathes*, had no greater desire then to content her: but loue, which ordinarily makes paltyme with the wisdome of louers, and delights to conduct his effects contrary to their purposes, made *Leonide*, by conuersing with the shepheard, to stand in more need of one to speake for her, then any other in the company. For the ordinary view of this shepherd, who wanted nothing that might winne loue, made her know, that beauty hath ouer-secret intelligences with our soule, to suffer it so freely to come neere his powers, without suspition of treason. The shepheard soone perceiued it, but the affection which hee bare to *Astrea*, which yet exceedingly raged, would not suffer him to indure this growing loue, with patience. That was the cause that hee resolued to take his leaue of *Galathes*, when he began to find himselfe somewhat better. But as soone as hee opened his mouth about it, How is it, said shee, *Celadon*, are you hardly vsed by me, that you will be gone before you be throughly recoverd? And when he answerd, it was for feare of troubling her; and for some busines he was constrained to returnde to his Hamlet, to assure his parents & his friends of his health: she interrupted him, saying, No, *Celadon*, doubt not my trouble, so I see you want nothing: and as for your

your affaires, and friends, without me, whose company (it seems) mislikes you much, you shall not be in this paine, since you will no longer. And me thinks the greatest businesse that you haue to do, is to satisfie the obligation which you haue to me, & that youringratitude should not be small, if you grudge mee some moments of your life, which you hold all of mee. Henceforth you must not set your eies on things so base, as your life pased, but you are to leaue your hainlets, and your flocks to them that haue not the merits that you haue; and for the time to come, you must place your eyes on me that can, and will do for you, if your actions alter not my minde. Though the shepheard seemed not to vnderstand this discourse, yet hee conceiued it easilly enough, and from that time auoided, what hee could possibly, to talke with her in priuate. But the displeasure which this life brought him, was such, that almost losing all patience, one day *Leonide* hearing him sigh, demanded the cause, seeing hee was in place where they desired nothing more then his contentment. He answere her (faire Nymph) among all miserable men, I may hold my selfe to bee the most extremely handled by fortune; for commonly they that be in griefe, haue permission to complaine, and haue the comfort to be moaned; but I dare not, for that my misfortune comes couered with the most of the contrary, and therefore in stead of being bemoned, I am rather blamed, as a man of small iudgement, that if you, and *Galathée* knew how bitter the worinewood is, wherewith I am fed, in this place, happy indeed to any other but me, I assure my selfe, you would take pitty of my life. And what want you (said she) to comfort you? At this time (sayd he) I only want leaue to be gon. Would you (replied the Nymph) I should speake of it to *Galathée*? I beseech you (sayd he) by whatsoeuer you hold dearest. Then it must be as by your selfe (sayd the Nymph) blushing: and not turning her head toward him, she went out of the chamber to seeke where *Galathée* was, whom she found alone in the garden, and who now began to suspect there was loue on *Leonide*'s part, fearing sliue nothing forwarded the charge she had giuen her, though she remained since all the day from him, for that knowing how sharpe the weapons of the beauty of the shepherd were, she thought it might as well part two as one: yet being constrained to passe thorow her hands, she went about to deceiue her selfe, as well as was possible; and so set on the same countenance toward the Nymph, as she had accustomed; and when she saw her coming toward her, shee raised her selfe to aske how the shepheard did; and hauing knowne hee was in the same state she left him, she held on her walke, and hauing gon some paces, without speaking, shew turned to the Nymph, and sayd, But tell

tell me, *Leonide*, was there euer man so insensible as *Celadon*, since neither my actions, nor your persuasions, can giue him any feeling of that hee ought to render me? For my part (answered *Leonide*) I had rather accuse him of want of spirit, and courage, then of vnderstanding; for I thinke, either he hath not the iudgement to know, whereto my actions tend, or if he know my words, he hath not the courage to attempt so high: and so, how much the loue of your perfections and fauours may raise him to you, so much the weight of his owne small merit and condition may abase him. But you must not thinke this strange, since the Appletree beareth Apples, and the Oake Acornes; for euery thing brings foorth according to his nature: So, what can you hope the courage of a villaine can produce, but the designes of a weake and base soule? I thinke well, answered *Galathée*, the great difference of our conditions do worke in him a great respect, but I shall never imagine, if he knew the difference, but he hath spirit enough to iudge, to what end I vse him with this sweetenesse, except it be, that hee be so furre engag'd to *Astrea*, that he can not goe backe.

Afslue you, Madame, replied *Leonide*, it is not respect, but sottishnesse, which makes him so mispris'ng. For I may auerre, as you say, that it is true he loues *Astrea*; but if he had judgement, would he not contemne her for you, who deserve so farre beyond comparison? Yet is he so ill aduis'd, that at every turne, when I speake to him of you, hee answers me but with griefe, for being so farre remoued from his *Astrea*, with such displeasure, that one may thinke, that his stay here is infinite-ly troublesome to him. And this morning, hearing him sigh, I asked him the cause. He made me answer, which would moue the stones to pitty; and in the end, the conclusion was, that I should desire you he might be gone. Yes, replied *Galathée*, red with choler, no longer able to dissemble her iealousie: Confesse the truth, *Leonide*, he hath moued you. It is true, Madam, he hath moued me to pitty; and me thinkes, since he hath such a desire to be gone, you ought not to hold him by force. For Loue neuer enters into the heart for the blowes of a whip. I thinke not, replied *Galathée*, but he had moued you to pitty; but speake no more of it: it may be, when he is recoverd, he shall sooner find the effects of despight, which he hath caused to be bred in me, then those of loue, which he hath wrought in you. In the meane time, to speake freely, let him resolute not to go hence at his owne pleasure, but at mine. *Leonide* would haue answered, but the Nymph interrupted her. No more, *Leonide*, sayd shee, it is enough, content your selfe that I say no more, but that this is my resolution.

resolution. So *Leonide* was forced to hold her peace, and to be gone, taking this iniurie so to heart, that she resolued to goe to *Adamas* her vnlke, and to take no more care of *Galathée* secrets, who at that time called *Silvie* that was walking in another alley alone; to whom against her former purpose, she could not hold, in complaingning of *Leonide*, from making her know that, which till then she had hid from her. But *Silvie*, altho young, yet full of iudgement, to pacifie all things, indeuoured to excuse *Leonide* what she could possibly; knowing well, that if her companion meant a despite, and it should come to be knowne, they could not but bring much shame to their Mistris. And therefore she sayd vnto her, after many words: You know well, Madam, you never acquainted me with this businesse; and yet I must tell you, of these particulars you may not iudge me so ignorant as I seemed to be; but my humour is not while since, seeing my companion so diligent about *Celadon*, I suspected that Loue was the cause, and not Compassion of his disease: and because it is a thing that toucheth vs all, I resolued to be assured before I would speake of it; and after that, I beganne to looke into her actions more narrowly then of wont, and wrought so, that yesterday I got on the furder side of the shepheards bed, whiche slept, and by and by *Leonide* came in, who by opening the doore, waked him, without knowing any thing. After many comon discourses, she came to talke of the loue he bare to the shepheardesse *Astrea*, and *Astrea* to him: But (sayd she) beleue me, this is nothing to the price of the affection that *Galathée* beares you. To me, (said he?) Yes, to you (replyed *Leonide*:) and make it not so strange, you know how often I haue told you; yet is she greater then my words. Faire Nymph, answered the shepheard, I can neither maerit, nor beleue I shall haue so great happiness. Besides, what should her meaning be to me, that am a shepheard borne, and desire to liue and die so? Your birth (returnes my companion) cannot but be great, since it hath giuen beginning to so great perfections. O *Leonide*, said then the shepheard, your words are full of mockery; but were they plaine, haue you an opinion, that I know not what *Galathée* is, & who I am? I know it indeed, faire Nymph, and can well measure my meannessse, and her greatnessse with duety. True (answered *Leonide*) I thinke you will vse the measure that men doe, that is good for them that will buy and sell. And doe not you know that gifts will not be measured? and Loue being nothing but a gift, why will you draw it to the ell-wand of duty? Doubt no more of that which I tell you and not to be wanting in your duty, render her as much of loue and of affection,

fection, as she hath giuen you. I sweare vnto you, Madam, till that time, I imagined that *Leonide* spake for her selfe, and I haue no cause to lie; from the beginning this discourse astonished me: but since, hauing scene with what discretion your actions haue beene carried, I much commend the power you haue ouer them; knowing very well, that it is an harder matter to haue absolute commaund ouer ones selfe, then ouer any other.

Mayd (answered *Galathée*) if you knew the occasion I haue to seek the loue of *Celadon*, you would command it, and aduise mee to the same desaigne: For, do you remember that *Druyde* that foretold vs our fortune? I remember it well, said she, it is not so long since. You know (continued *Galathée*) how many true things he hath told you, and *Leonide* also. Now know withall, that he assured me, that if I married any other then *Celadon*, I should be the most vnhappy person on earth; and do you think it fit, that hauing had such prooffe of his predictions, I should contemne them that touch me so neere? And this is it, that I finde such fault with, that *Leonide* should be so much misadvised, to march my pace, making the same declaration to him. Madam, said *Silvie*, enter not into that doubt, for in truth I lie not. And me thinkes you should not anger her too much, for feare that in her complaints she discouer this desaigne to any other. Friend (said *Galathée*, embracing her) I doubt not of that you told me, and I promise you, I will deale with *Leonide*, as you haue aduised me.

In the meane time that they discourse thus, *Leonide* goes to seek out *Celadon*, to whom she recited, word for word, the talke that *Galathée* and she had for his cause, and that he was to thinke that the place where hee was, bare the shew of liberty, but indeede it was a prison: which strucke him so to the quick, that whereas before his disease, he went but as it were creeping, now it grew so violent, that that very night the feauer took him againe so burning, that *Galathée* being come to see him, and seeing him so much impayred, was in great doubt of his life. The next morning his disease increasing so fiercely, he swoyned away twice or thrice betweene their armes: and albeit these Nymphs were never further off, but that the one was at the head, and the other at the feete of the bed, without other repose, then that by broken sleepes extreme heauinessse came stealing on them: yet so it was, that he was very poorely attended, hauing there nothing fit for a sicke man; and not daring to fetch it else-where, for feare of being discouered. So that the shepheard ran in great hazard of his life, and in such sort, that that one night he fel himselfe in great extremity, so that the Nymphs esteemed him as a dead man; but in the end, hee came back to himselfe, and shortly after lost a great deale of bloud, which weakeneth

weakened him so, that hee desired to rest. That was the cause that the Nymphs left him alone with *Merill*. And being retired, *Silvie* all afraid at this accident, addressing her selfe to *Galathee*, said : Me thinkes (Madam) you are ready to fall into a great confusion, if you take not the better order : Judge how great paine it will be to you, if this shepheard perish in your hands for fault of succour.

Alas (sayd the Nymph) since the relapse of his disease, I found it too true, that which you say: but what remedy is there? We are heere altogether vnprouided of things necessary for him, and to haue them from else-where, if my lif: lay on it, I would not doe it, for the feare I haue it would be knowne. *Leonide*, whom affection had made more resolute then *Silvie*, sayd : Madame, these feares are good, when they touch not the life of a man; but where it doth, we are not so much to consider or prevent other inconueniences which may arise. If this shepheard die, thinke you, his death can be kept vndeowne? Since it can sort but to punishment, you must beleue, the very heauens will discouer : but let vs take it at the worst, and that it be knowne the shepheard be heere. What of that? May you not couer it with the cloke of Compassion, whereto Nature inclines vs all? And if it please you to referre this busynesse to me, I assure my selfe to carry it so discreetly, that no man shall discouer any thing. For Madam, I haue (as you know) for my vnkle, *Adamas* Prince of the Druydes, from whom no secret of Nature, nor vertue of hearbs are hidde ; he is a man of great discretion and judgement: and I know, he hath a particular inclination to doe you seruice : if you will employ him in this occasion, I make no question, but it will sort to your contentment. *Galathee* stood some while without answer. But *Silvie*, that saw it the most expedient, and fore-judged, that by meane of the wisc *Adamas*, they might diuert *Galathee* from this shamefull life, answered very readily, that this way, in her opinion, was the safest. Whereto *Galathee* consented, not being able to invent a better. There resteth (saith *Leonide*) to know (that I goe not beyond your commandement) what your will is I should say to *Adamas*, & what I should conceale. There is nothing (answered *Silvie*, seeing *Galathee* stand silent) that more binds a man to secrecie, then frankly to discouer an intire trust: and contrarily, nothing that more constraines to betray, then apparent mistrust: So that it seemeth best, to tie *Adamas* more strongly to be secret, you must tell him before he comes, all things that he is like to discouer when he shall be here. I am (said *Galathee*) so quite besides my selfe, that I hardly know what to say: and for that cause, I referre all to your discretion. So departed *Leonide* with her desire;

fire, though the beginning of the night were very darke, and rested not till she came to her vnkle, whose abode was at the turning of the moun- taine of *Marsellis*, not farre from the Vestals and Druides of *Laignies*: but her journey was longer then shee looked for, for reaching thither by breake of day, shee found he was gone to *Fevrs*, and that he would not retorne of two or three dayes, which was the cause, that without long a- bode, shee set forward on her way, but so weary, that had not the desire of the shepheards recovery been, which gaue her no rest, without doubt, shee had stayed for *Adamas* there, whereas now shee stayed but halfe an houre, for that not hauing beeene vsed to such iourney, shee found it very hard; & when she was a little refreshed, shee went the same way shecame. But hardly had she gone a mile, but she might see farre off, a Nymph alone comming towards her, the same way that she had gone, whom afterwards she knew to be *Silvie*. This meeting brought her but a little cōfort; bele- uing that she came to deliuer the death of *Celadon*, but it was cōtrary; for she understood by her, that since her departure, he had taken good rest, & at his waking, he found himselfe without the feuer, and therfore *Galathee* had sent her to ouertake her, and to tell her so much; and to say, that the shepheard beeing in so good case, there was no neede to bring *Adamas*, nor to acquaint him with the busynesse. It will bee hard to expresse the contentment that *Leonide* had, hearing of the recovery of the shepheard, whom she loued. And after she had thanked God, shee said to her com- panion, Sister, since I know by your speech, that *Galathee* hath not con- cealed from you her desire which shée hath, touching the shepheard, it is necessary, that I should frankly tell you, that this kinde of life infinitely distastes mee, and that I hold it very shamefull, both for her and vs: for she is so passionate, that for all the small reckoning the shepheard makes of her, yet can she not with-hold her selfe; and so hath before her eyes, the predictions of a certaine Druide, that shée thinkes all her happinesse de- pends vpon this Loue: and this is the good which shée thinkes euery one ought to aste & as well as she, as if all looked with her eyes; and that is my griefe: for she is become so iealous of me, that she can hardly indure me to be neare him. Now, sister, if this life come to be knowne (as with- out doubt it will, since there is nothing so secret, but shall be discouered) judge you what they will talke of vs, and what opinion wee shall haue of all others that heare of it. I haue done what I could possibly to diuert her from it, but all to no purpose. Therefore am I resolued to let her loue, since she will loue; prouided, that it be not at our cost. I haue made you this discourse, to shew you, that it is very expedient, we should seek some remedy;

remedy; and that I finde no meane more ready, then by making my vnkle a party, who will bring it to good passe by his counsell and wisedome. Sister, said *Silvie*, I infinitely commend your desine; and to giue you the commodity of bringing *Adamas* to her, I will returne backe, and say, I haue beene at *Adamas* his house, but could neither finde you nor him. It were very fit (answered *Leonide*) that we go to rest our selues in some thicket, that as it seemeth, you haue long sought for me; so am I so weary, that I must sleepe a little, if I meane to finish my voyage. Let vs goe, sister (replied *Silvie*) and beleue you shall effect no small matter, to free vs of *Celadon*: For, I well perceiue the humour of *Galashée*, that with the time, will turne to your great displeasure. At this word they tooke hands, and looking about for some place to spend a part of the day in, they spyeid one on the other side of *Lignon*, which they thought fit for their purpose. Passing ouer the bridge of the *Botroffe*, and leauing *Bonlieu*, the place of the *Druides* and *Veltals* on the left hand, and going downe along the riuier, they came to beslow themselues in a thicke groue, which ioyned hard on the high-way, and wherein there was an Arbor, that affoorded a pleasant seate at all times; out of which, when they had made choyce of the most shadowed corner, they fell asleepe one after another.

And while they thus rested, *Astrea*, *Diane*, and *Phillis*, came by chance, driving their flocks into that place, and not seeing the Nymphs, they sate downe neere them: and because the amities which are beguine in bad fortune, are more straightly riuited in, then those that are conceived in happy times, *Diane*, who was tyed in a fast league with *Astrea* and *Phillis*, since the mis-hap of *Celadon*, bare them so great good will, and they to her, that almost all the day they left not each other: and, indeed, *Astrea* had great neede of consolation; the rather, for that about that time, shee lost *Alce* and *Hippolite*, her father and mother: *Hippolite*, for the fright shooke for the losse of *Astrea*, when she was in the water; and *Alce*, for griefe, at the losse of his deare companion: which yet was a poore helpe to *Astrea*, who might bewaile the losse of *Celadon*, vnder the couer of that of her father and mother: and, as I told you, *Diane*, the daughter of the wise *Bellinde*, that she might not bee wanting in the duty of a neighbour, went often to visite her, and found her humour so pleasing, and *Astrea* againe hers, and *Phillis* that of them both, that they swart so firme a league betweene them, that they never after separated: and this was the first day that *Astrea* came out of her lodging. So that these her two full companions were now with her: but they were no sooner set downe, but they might perceiue farre off, *Semire*, who came to finde her. This

Shepheard

Shepheard had long time beeene amorous of *Astrea*, and knowing that she loued *Celadon*, thought that he was the cause of his bad successe; beeing now perswaded, that hauing driuen away *Celadon*, he might easily obtaine his place, he came to seeke her out, that he might beginne his designe, but he was much deceived; for *Astrea* hauing found out his craft, conceiued such an hatred against him, that when shee spyeid him, shee would lay her hand ouer her eyes, that she might not see him, and desired *Phillis* to tell him from her, that he should never present himselfe to her. And these words were spoken with such a change of looke, and so great a vehemeney, that her companions easily found out her great stomake, which more readily incensed *Phillis* against the shepherd. When he heard this message, he stood so confused in his thoughts, that it seemed he could not moue. At last, ouercome, & enforced by the acknowledgement of his error, he said, Discreet *Phillis*, I protest, the heauens are iust, in giuing me more sorrow then an heart is able to beare, since they cannot equal their punishment according to mine offence, hauing beeene the caule of the breach of the fairest and most intire loue that euer was. But that the gods may not more rigorously chastise me, tell this faire shepheardeesse, that I aske pardou both of her, and of the cinders of *Celadon*, assuring her, that the extreme affection which I bare her, without more, was the cause of this fault; that banished from her, and from her eyes, iustly offended, I may goe lamenting all my life long. At this word hee went away so uncomforable, that his repentance mooued *Phillis* to some pittie: and beeing come backe to her companions, shee told them his answer. Alas! sister, sayd *Astrea*, I haue more reason to fly this wicked man, then to weepe; judge you if I ought not: this is he, without more, that hath beeene the cause of all my sorrow. How? sister, said she, is *Semire* the cause of your sorrow? Hath he such power ouer you? If I durst tell you his wickednes, sayd *Astrea*, and mine owne folly, you would say, that he hath vsed the greatest Arte, that the craftiest spirit could inuent. *Diane* knowing that that was the cause that she spake no more plainly to *Phillis*, for that it was yet but eight or ten dayes that they grew to that familiarity, said to them, that it was no part of her purpole, to take any thing from them by constraint. And you, faire shepheardeesse (said shee, turning to the sad *Astrea*) giue me occasion to thinke that you loue me not, if you be more referred to me then to *Phillis*; for that, though it be not long, that I haue injoyed the good of your familiarity, yet are you to be no lesse assured of my affection, then of hers. *Phillis* then answered, I assure my selfe, that *Astrea* will always speake as freely before you, as before her selfe; her humor

humor being not to loue by halues; & since she hath sworne to be such, she hath nothing in her soule to conceale. It is true (continued *Astrea*) and that which held me from saying more, was onely for that the putting the weapon againe into the wound, will but poyson it. Yet so it is, replied *Diane*, that oftentimes you must vse the weapon to heale it: and for me, I thinke, that to speake freely of the disease to a friend, is, to make him a party: and if I durst desire you, it would be a great satisfaction, to know, what your life hath beene, as my selfe also will not make it dainty, to tell you mine, when you shall be desirous to know it. Since you will haue it so, answered *Astrea*, & that you haue a mind to partake in my sorrowes, I will, so that afterwards you impart to me of your contentments, and that, in the meane time, you suffer me to vse that breuity in the discourse, which you desire to vnderstand from me; and truly, an history so vnförtnate as mine, will not please, but by being short: And being all three set in a round, she began to speake in this manner:

*The History of Astrea and Phillis.*

They that know what it is, when friendship or hateresse from father to son, may well conceiue *Celadon* fortune and mine, and without doubt, may affirme, that they be not deceiued: For (faire *Diane*) I beleue you haue often heard speech of the old hateresse betweene *Alce* & *Hippolite*, my father and mother, and of *Alceippe* and *Amarillis*, the father & mother of *Celadon*, their displeasures accompanying them even to their graue, which hath beene cause of so great trouble among the shepheards of this Country, that I assure my selfe, there is no man ignorant of it along the shore of the cruell and dishonoured *Lignon*. And yet it seemeth that Loue, to shew his power of persons so opposite, would vnite two so straitly, that nothing could breake the lines, but death. For, hardly had *Celadon* reached to the age of fourteene or fifteene yeeres, and I of twelue or thirteene, but that at an assembly which was had at the Temple of *Venus*, which is on the top of this mountaine, seated in the Plaine, right ouer against *Monsieur*, about a mile from the Castle of *Monbafor*, this young shepheard sawe me: and as he hath told me since, he had long before conceiued a good liking, vpon the report which was made of me. But the let which I told you, our fathers tooke from him all meanes, and I must tell you, that I do not thinke he bare a greater liking, then did I, for I know not how, when I heard speech of him, my heart danced in my belly; and this was but a presage of the troubles, which since besett mee

on that occasion. Now at the instant, when he saw me, I know not how he found matter of loue in mee, so that within a while after, hee resolued to loue me, and to serue me.

And it seemeth that at this first view, both the one and the other of vs was at this passe, that wee must loue, so that as often as it was told mee, that hee was the sonne of *Alceippe*, I found a certaine change in my selfe, which was not ordinary, and thenceforth all his actions began to please me, and much more agreeing to my liking, then of all the other yong shepheards of his age: and for that as yet he durst not come neare me, & that speech was denied him, his lookes at his commings and goings spake to me so often, that at last I knew he had a longing to tell me more; and to feel it, at a game that was kept at the foot of the mountaine, vnder the old elmes, that yeelded a pleasant shade, he vsed such arte, that before I was aware, and seeming to bee through want of heed, hee got vnder my hand; for my part I seemed not to note it, & vsed him as I didial the others; but be on the contrary, tooke mee by the hand, so that making shew to cast downe his, I perceived his mouth on mine. This act made me blussh, and making shew not to heed it, I turned my head away as hearkening to the brawle: we danced. This was the cause that he stayd somewhat before he spake to me, not knowing as I thinke where to begin. At last vnto walking to lose this opportunity, which he had so long sought, he aduanced himselfe before me, and rounded in the eare of *Corillas*, that led me in that daece, so loud, yet faining to whisper, that I heard these words: I wold to God, *Corillas*, the contention betweene the father of this shepheardesse, & mine, might be ended in vs two: and then went to his place. And *Corillas* answered him loud enough: Make not you this attempt, *Celadon*; for it may bee, you haue never attempted any thing more dangerous. What hazard so euer it hath (answered *Celadon* aloud) I will not deny that I haue spoken, & giue my hart in pawne. In such promises (replied *Corillas*) they vse not to offer lesse assurance then that: & yet within a while after, it is gaine said. Whosoever (reioyneth the shepheard) makes difficulties to run such a fortune as you threaten, I shal hold him for a man of small courage. It is a vertue (answered *Corillas*) to be couragious, but it is also a folly to be rash. By proofe (replied *Celadon*) you shall know what I will do, and in the meane time, I promise you at a word, that I will never gaine say it. And because I made shew, not to heed their discourse, directing his words to me, he sayd, And you, faire shepheardesse, what is your opinion? I know not, answerd I, of what you speake. He hath told me, sayd *Corillas*, that to draw a great good out of a great euill, hee wishes your fathers ha-  
ered

tered were changed into loue betweene their children. How (answerted I, seeming not to know him) are you the sonne of *Alcipe*? And hauing answred me, Yea, and moreouer, my seruant? Methinks sayd I, it were fitter for you to ioyne to some other, that may haue more occasion to agree with you, then I. I haue heard it sayd (replied *Celadon*) that the gods do punish the offences of the fathers on their children; but among men, it hath not bene the custome: which is not, for that it is not allowed to your beauty, which is diuine, to vse the same preuiledges that the gods do: but if it bee so, you are like then to grant pardon, when it is demanded of you. Is it so, shepheard (interrupted *Corilus*) that you begin your combat with crying mercy? In this combat (answerted he) to be ouercome, is a kind of victory: & for my part, I am willing enough, prouided that she wil take the spoyle. I thinke they had continued their discourse longer, if the dance had held out longer, but the end of it separated vs, and every one went to his place.

Somewhile after they began to propound prizes, for diuers exercises which they were accustomed vnto, as the Lute, to Runne, and cast the Barre; whereto *Celadon*, for being too yong, was not admitted but only to the course whereat he won the prize, which was a garland of diuers flowers, which was set on his head by the whole assembly, with great commendation, that being so yong had ouercome so many shepheards: Hee, without any long dreameing, tooke it off, came to me to set it on my head, saying very low, See the confirmation of what I sayd! I was so surprized, that I could not answere: & had it not bene for *Artemis* your mother, *Phelis*, I had giuen it him againe; not for that comming from his hand, it pleased me not, but because I feared *Alee* & *Hippolite* would not think wel of it. But *Artemis*, that rather desired to quench, then kindle these ancienre hatreds, commanded me to take it and to thanke him: which I did so coldly, that every one might well thinke it should not haue bene done, but by the command of my Aunt. All this day passed thus, & the next day also, the yong shepheard losing no occasion to make his affection appeare to me. And because that on the third day they had a custome to represent, in honor of *Venus*, the judgement which *Paris* gaue of the three goddesses, *Celadon* resolued to thrust himselfe among the maids, vnder the habit of a shepheardesse. You know well, that on that third day, about the end of the feast of the great Druide, they haue vised to cast among the maids an apple of gold, whereon are written the names of the three shepheardesses whom they thinke to be the most faire in the company, with this word,

*Be it given to the most faire of the three;*

And

And that, after they haue dressed her, which is to represent the person of *Paris*, who with the three shepheardesses enter into the Temple of *Beauty*, dedicated to *Venus*, where, the doores being shut, shee giueth iudgement of all three, when she sees them naked, but onely a thinne Lawne, which couers them, from the girdle-stead, almost to the knees. And for that once it was abused, and that some shepheards had thrust themselves among the shepheardesses, it was ordayned by a publique Edict, That he that did commit the like fault, should (without remission) be stoned by the Maides at the gate of the Temple:

Now it hapned, that this Youth (without consideration of the great danger) that day attired himselfe like a shepheardesse, and sortinge himselfe into our company, was taken for a maide; and as Fortune would fauour him, my name was written on the Apple, and *Malte* and *Stelle*; and when they came to let downe the name of her that bare the personage of *Paris*, I heard him name *Oribes*, which was the name that *Celadon* had taken. God knowes if his soule receiued not all the delight it was capable of, when he sawe his dessigne succeed so well. In the end, we were brought into the Temple, where the Judge being set in his seat, the doores being shut, and we three onely remayning with him, we beganne, according to the order, to vnclothe our selues; and because every one must go apart, and speake to him, and make the offers that the three goddesses had sometimes made to *Paris*; *Stelle*, who was most forward to put off her clothes, went first to present her selfe to him, whom he beheld some while: And after he had heard what she would say, he caused her to returne, to giue place to *Malte*, who was got before me, for that ashamed to shew my selfe naked, I delayed (as much as I could) the putting off of my clothes. *Celadon*, thinking the time long, and after he had some short while entayned *Malte*, seeing that I came not, called for mee. In the end, not able to delay it no longer, I was constrained; but, O God, when I thinke on it, I am yet ready to die for shame: yet my haire was dispersed, and almost couered mee, on it I had no other ornamant, then the garland, which the day before hee had giuen me. When the others were gone backe, and when he saw me in this sort; by him I obserued that twise or thrice he changed colour, but I never suspected the cause: for my part, shamefastnesse had tainted my cheek with so fresh a colour, that hee hath since sworne vnto me, he never saw me so louely: and he would haue beeene contented, hee might haue suffered to stay all the day long in that contemplation: but fearing to be discouerd, he was cōpelled to shorēn his contentment; and when he saw I said nothing, (for shame had tied

vp my tongue). And how, *Astrea*, sayd her, shalke you your cause so good, that you need not as well as others, seek the Judges good will? I doubt not, *Orithee*, answered I, that I shall haue more need to seduce my Judge by my words, then *Stella* or *Malthe*: but I know wel also, that I must as well giue place to them in perswading, as in beauty: so that but for the constraint whereto the custome tyes me, I had never come before you, in hope to win the prize. And if you beare it away (answered the Shepheard) what will you do for me? I shall haue, sayd I, the greater obligation to you, by how much I thinke it merits lesse. How then, replied he, will you make me no other offer? The demand (sayd I) must come from you, for I cannot teach you who deserues to be received. Sware to me, said the Shepheard, you will giue me that which I shall demand, and my judgement shall be to your aduantage. After I had promised him, hee asketh of my haire, to make him a bracelet: which I did; and after he had folded it in a paper, hee sayd to me: Now, *Astrea*, I will keepe these haires for a pledge of the oth which you haue made, that if euer you gainesay it, I may offer it to the goddesse *Venus*, and demand vengeance other. That, sayd I, is superfluous, since I am resolued neuer to faile. Then with a smilling countenance, hee sayd to me, God be thanked, faire *Astrea*, that my designe hath falle out so prosperously: for know, that which you haue promised me, is to loue me aboue any in the world, and to receive me as your faithfull seruant, who am *Celadon*, and not *Orithee*, as you suppose; I say, that *Celadon*, by whom loue hath giuen proofe, that hatred is not of power sufficient to disappoint his effects, since even among the displeasures of our fathers, he hath made me so yours, that I had no feare to dye at the gate of this temple, to give you testimony of my affection. Judge, wife *Diane*, what became of me: for loue forbade me to seeke reuenge of my shamefastnes; and yet shame encouraged me against loue: at last, after a confused disputation, it was impossible for me to consent to cause him dye, since the offence which he made, proceeded not but of too great loue to me: yet knowing him to be a Shepheard, I could no longer stay before his eies; and without making other answere, I ranne to my companions, whom I found almost dressed, and taking vp my garments, scarce knowing what I did, I made my selfe ready as soone as was possible. But to be short, when we were all ready, the dissembled *Orithee* placed her selfe at the entry of the gate; and hauing vs all three before her: I ordaine (saith she) that the prize of beauty be giuen to *Astrea* in witnessse whereof I present her the golden apple: & ther is no cause any body shalke doubt of my iudgement, since I haue seene her; and though a maide, yet I haue felt the force. In saying those words,

words, he presented mee the apple, which I received, being much troubled; and the father, when with a loude voyce he sayd, Receiue this Apple as a pawne of my affection, which is as infinite, as this is round. I answered him, Be content, rash man, that I receive it to saue thy life: and that otherwise I would refuse it, as coming from thy hand. He durst not reply, for feare he might be heard and knowne: and because the custome was, that she that received the Apple, was to kisse the Judge, by way of thankefulnesse, I was constrainyd to kisse him: but I assure you, had I not knowne him vntill then, I should then haue discouered him to be a Shepheard: for it was not the kisse of a maide.

Presently, the noyse, and the applause of the company separated vs, because the Druyde hauing crowned me, caused mee to be borne in a chaire to the place of the Assembly, with so much honour, that every one wondered I was no more chierefull. But I was so troubled, and so sore beaten, betweene Loue and Despite, that I scarce knew what I did. As for *Celadon*, as soone as he had finished the ceremonies, he lost himselfe amongst the other Shepheardesses, and by little and little, without the heeding of any body, got out of the company, and put off his borrowed garments, to put on his owne naturall clothes, with which hee came a-gayne to vs; with a face so confident, that no man would euer haue suspected him. As for me, when I sawe him, I might scarce turne mine eyes to him, being full of shame and cholet. But he that noted it, and made no shew of it, found the meanes to come to me, and to say loude enough: The Judge which hath giuen you the prize of beauty, hath shewed good judgement; and me thinkes, that albeit the iustice of your cause do well deserue so fauourable a sentente, yet must not you be sayling to beare him some kinde of obligation. I beleue, Shepheard, answered I softly enough, that he is more obliged to me, then I to him: for that if he gaue me an apple, which (in some sort) was due to me, I haue giuen him life, which his rastinesse merited to lose. So he told me (answered presently *Celadon*) that hee would preserue it onely for your seruice. If I had not more respect (replied I) to my selfe, then to him, I had not let him goe without chasteitement for so great a presumption. But enough, *Celadon*, let vs cut off this discourse, and content your selfe, that if I haue not punished you as you deserue, it was onely for feare of giuing occasion to other to talke their pleasure of me, and not for want of will to see you punished. If there be nothing but that (sayd he) to hinder my death, tell me in what fashion you will haue me die, and you shall see I haue no lesse courage to satisfie you, then I haue had of loue to offend you. This discourse:

course would be too long, if I should tell you all our talke in particular. So it was, that after many replies now on the one side and the other, whereby it was impossible for me to doubt of his affection, if at least the diuers changes of countenance might bewray any thing I sayde to him seeming to be in choler: Bethinke you, shepheard, of the hatred of our fathers, and beleue, that that which I beare, shall not turne to nothing; if you euer more importune me with your follies, which your young age, and my honour, pardon for this time. I vsed these last words, to giue him the lesse courage. For it is true, that his beauty, courage, and affection pleased me; and that he might make no further answer, I turned to talke with *Stella*, who was not farre off. He all astonied with this answer, withdrew from the company, so sad, that in few dayes he was scarce to be knowne, & so solitary, that his haunt was in the places most desolate and sauage of all our woods. Whereof being aduertised by some of my companions, who told me, without conceit, that I was the cause; I began to thinke of his paine, and resolued in my minde, to search some meane to giue him satisfaction. And because (as I told you) he forsooke all company, I was constrainyd (that I might meete him) to drive my flocke that way where I knew he resorted most. And when it fell out twice or thrice to be in vaine, at last, one day, as I was seeking for him, me thought, I heard his voyce among some trees: and I was not deceiued; for comming softly towards him, I sawe him lye along on the ground, and his eies wept teares, so bent vpward to heauen, that they seemed vnmooueable.

The sight of him mooued me so to pittie, beeing somewhat inclined thereto before, that I resolued no longer to leaue him in this paine. Therefore, after I had considered of it awhile, and not willing it might appeare to him that I sought him out, I withdrew some good way from the place, where seeming not to heede him, I sung so high, that my voyce came to his eares. As soone as he heard me, I might see hee raised vp himselfe in a dumpe, and turning his eyes to the place where I was, hee stood like one rauished to heare me, which when I marked, that I might giue him commodity to come neere me, I made as though I would sleepe, and yet I held mine eyes halfe open, to see what it would come to; and, indeed, it failed not of that I purposed: for comming softly towards me, he came & kneeled as close to me as hee could, and after hee had long time stayed in this sort, when I made shew to be fast asleepe, to giue him the more hardines, I perceiued, that after some sighes, hee stoopes downe softly against my mouth, and kisstes me. Then thinking he had taken courage enough, I opened mine eyes, as if I had beene waked when he touched me; and rising

vp, I sayd to him, seeming to bee angry, Vnciuill shepheard, what hath made thee so vnmanerly, to come to disquiet my sleepe in this sort? He then, al trembling, and not raising his knees, It is you, faire shepheardesse, said he, that haue constrained me, and if I haue offended, you must punish your own perfectiōs, which are the cause. These are alwaies, said I, the excuses of your maliperſnesse: but if you holde on to displease mee thus, beleue it, shepheard, I will not beare it. If you call it a displeasure, answered he, to be loued, and adored, in good time beginne to study, what punishment you will inflict on mee; for, now I sweare vnto you, that I shall displease you in this sort all my life, and no rigor of your cruelty, nor enmity of our fathers, nor any let in the world can diuert mee from this deſigne.

But, faire *Diane*, I must shorten these pleasing discourses, being so contrary to the vnförtable ſeſon wherein I am, and muſt onely tell you, that in the end, being ouercome, I ſaid to him, But, ſhepheard, what end is your deſigne like to haue, ſince that they which may trame you to their pleasure, dilallow it? How, replied he preſently, Frame to their pleasure? So farre is it that *Alcippe* hath power ouer my will, that I haue it not my ſelfe. You may diſpoſe of your ſelfe, ſaid I, at your owne pleasure, but not of the obedience you owe to your father, without coſmitting a great fault. The obedience, anſwered he, which I owe him, may not paſſe that which I can ouer my ſelfe: for this is no faulting, not to doe that which one cannot. But be it ſo, that I owe him it, ſince of two euils wee are to ſhuſ the greateſt, I choose rather to be failing toward him, that is but a blemiſh againſt your beauty which is diuine. Our diſcourse, in the end, held on ſo farre, that I muſt ſuffer him to be my ſeruant; and because wee were young, both the one and the other, ſo that we had not Arte enough to couer our deſigne, *Alcippe*, within a while, tooke notice of it, & not beeing willing that this loue ſhould paſſe further on, he resolued with his old friend *Cleante*, to cauſe him to vndertake a iourney ſo long, that abſence might blot out this young impreſſion of Loue. But this diſtance auayled as little, as all the other crafty tricks with which hee ſerued himſelfe ſince. For *Celadon*, though hee were young, yet had a reſolution to ouercome all diſſiculties: that, whereas others meete their contraries with paine, hee tooke them for trials of himſelfe, and called them the touchſtones of his faithfullenesſe: and for as much as he knew, his voyage would be long, he deſired me to giue him the commodity to bid me adieu. I did it, faire *Diane*, but if you had ſeene the affection, wherewith hee beſought me to loue him; the oathes, by which he assured me neuer to change; and

101  
the coniurations, by which hee bound mee neuer to loue other; without doubt, you would iudge, that things most impossible, might fall out sooner, then the losse of this amity. In the end, not daring to stay longer, he said, *My Astrea*, for so hee did in priuate call mee, I leaue you my brother *Licidas*, from whō I haue not concealed any one of my desigues; he knows what seruice I haue vowed vnto you: promise me, if it please you, that I may depart with contentment, to receiue, as comming from mee, all these seruices that he shall doe you, and that, by his presence, you renew the memory of *Celadon*. And, indeed, he had reason to make this request: for *Licidas*, during his absence, shewed himselfe so curious to obserue what his brother had giuen him in charge, that many thought he succeeded in the affection which his brother bare me. That was the cause that *Alcippe*, after he had kept him three yecres out of this Country, calld him back, being of opinion, that so long a time had defaced the light impression, which Loue had made in a soule so young; and that growing more wise, hee might easily draw *Licidas* from affecting me. But his retorne was a strong assurance to me of his faithfulness: For the chilnesse of the *Alpes*, which he had twice passed thorow, could nothing diminish the force of his loue; nor the admirable beauties of those *Romanes*, diuert him from the least part of what he had promised me. O God, with what contentment came he to mee! he besought me by his brother, that I would giue him opportunity to speake with me. I thinke I haue yet his letter. Alas! I haue more charily preserued that which came from him, then himselfe. And then she drew out letters which she had receiu'd from him, and putting out the first (for they were all layd in order) after she had wiped her eyes, she read these words:

**F**aire Astrea, my banishment hath beeene overcome of my patience, God grant the like of your loue; I went ouer with such griefe, and am returned with so great contentment, that not perishing, neither in going nor comming, I shal balaunce giue proof, that one may not die, neither of too much pleasure, nor too much displeasure. Let me then see you, that I may recount my fortune unto you, that are my onely Fortune.

Faire Diane, it is impossible I shoulde remember the discourse which we had, without wounding my selfe, so that the least stroke is as greeuous to me as death. During the absence of *Celadon*, *Artemis* my Aunt, and the mother of *Phillis*, came to see her kinsfolke, and brought with her this shepheardesse, poyning to *Phillis*. And because our fashion of li-

uing

uing better pleased them then that of the shepheards of *Alceer*, she resolute to dwell with vs, which was no small contentment to vs: for by this meanes we grew familiar, and though the friendship was not so strait, as it fell out afterward, yet her humour so pleased me, that I passed ouer many vnquiet houres reasonably well with her. And when *Celadon* was returned, and that he had some while conuersed with her, he gaue so good a judgement, that I may truely say, he is the ground of the strait amity which hath since beeene betweene her and me. It was about this time, that he being of the age of seuentene or eighteene yeares, & I of fifteene or sixteene, we beganne to carry our selues with more wisedome, so that (to hide our loue) I intreated him, or rather, I constrained him, to make loue to all the shepheardeſſes that had any shew of beauty, that the suite he made to mee, might be iudged to be rather common then particular. I say, I constrained him, because I thinke, but for his brother *Licidas*, he would neuer haue giuen his consent. For, after he had many times falne on his knees before me, to call backe the charge I gaue him, in the end, his brother told him, that it was necessary for my contentment it should be so: and that if he knew no other remedy, he might therein helpe himselfe by his imagination: and when he spake to others, he should conceit to himselfe, it was to me. Alas, the poore shepheard had good reason to make such difficulty; for he ouer-well foresaw, that from it would arise the cause of his death. Excuse me (wife *Diane*) if my teares interrupt my discourse, seeing I haue so iust cause, that it were impiety to forbide them me. And after she had dryed her eyes, shee renewed her discourse in this manner:

And because *Phillis* was vsually with me, it was she to whom, at the first, he addressed himselfe, but with such inforcement, that I could hardly restraine from laughter: and because *Phillis* thought he was in earnest, and that she vsed him, as they ordinarilie doe him that beginneth to be a suiter, I remember, that seeing himselfe rudely handled, he often sung this song which he made on that subiect.

## A SONG.

**V**pon a certayne fountaines bankes,  
Which moldy moſſe all ouer-groves,  
Whose water with a winding flowes,  
Wandering through platnes in many crakes,  
A ſhepheard gazing on the wane,  
Sung to his pipe theſe verſes grane,

Cease, one day, cease, so faire for me,  
Before my death cruell to be.

Can it be that this griesous paine,  
Which I for loving you indure,  
If gods be not cal'd in vaine,  
At last may me no good procure?  
Or can it be, that such a Loun  
May never any pistemoone?  
The rather being great and true,  
As that with which I honor you.

Those eyes, whose maner passages  
Hauke often made me hope in vaine,  
Full of so many forgeries,  
Will they forswere themselves so plaine?  
They oft haue told me, that her beare  
At last would rigor force to part:  
Agreeing to which false report,  
The rest of her faire face consart.

But how faire eies of shepheardesse,  
Shall they to such false courses yeeld,  
As are the Courtiers practices?  
It seemes these beauties of the field,  
Though withoute fucus on their skin,  
Yet can they paint their heart within,  
And learme a lesson in their schools,  
To give but words, she bane of fooles.

Enough, it is high time, O faire,  
To end this ouer-cruell fit,  
And thinke that beauty, n'er so rare,  
Which hath not sweetnesse mixt with it,  
Is as an eye that wantz day-light,  
And faire, that is withoute loue quicke,  
As most unworthy of that cole,  
Is like a body wantinge soule.

Sister (interrupted Phillis) I remember it well you speake of, and I shall make you laugh at the manner of his speech to me. For, for the most part, it was with such broken language, that we had need of an Interpreter to make vs understand them; and vsually when he was to name mee, he would call me *Astrea*. But see what our inclination is! I knew well that Nature had (in some sort) preferred *Celadon* before *Licidas*, yet not being able to tell you the reason *Licidas* was more welcome to me. Alas sister, (sayd *Astrea*) you bring to my remembrance the speech, which he vsed about that time of you, and of this faire shepheardesse (sayd she) turning to *Diane*. Faire shepheardesse (said he to me) the wife *Bellunde*, and your Aunt *Artemis*, are infinitely happy, in hauing such daughters: and our *Lignon* is much bound to them, since (by their meanes) it hath the happiness to see vpon her shores these two faire & wise shepheardeſſes. And beleeue me, if I know any thing, they only deserue the amity of *Astrea*: and therfore I aduise you to loue them: for I perceiue by that little knowledge I haue of them, that you shall finde great contentment in their familiarity. Would to God, one of them would vouchsafe to respect my brother *Licidas*, with the like affection that I beare. And for that at that time I had no great knowledge of you (sayre *Diane*) I answered, that I desired he should rather serue *Phillis*; and it fell our as I wished: for the ordinary conuersation he had with her, at the first brought forth familiarity betweene them, and at last he loued in earnest. One day, when he found her at leisure, he resolued to declare his affection with much loue, and with the fewest words he could. Faire shepheardeſſe (said he) you haue knowledge enough of your selues to beleeue, that those which loue you, can not but loue you infinitely. It can not be, that my actions, haue giuen you any knowledge of my affection, for the little you know of it, since none can loue you but in extremity, you may sweare, that my loue is wonderfull great: and yet being such, I demaund of you, as yet, but a beginning of good will. *Celadon* and I were so neere, that we could well heare this declaration, and the answere also that *Phillis* gaue him, which indeede was more rude then I expected from her. For long time before, she and I well enough knew, by the eyes and actions of *Licidas*, that he was in loue with her; and we haue often talked of it, and I haue found in her, rather goodwill to him, then otherwise: yet at this brunt she answered him so bitterly, that *Licidas* went away in despayre. And *Celadon*, who loued his brother more then ordinary, not able to endure to see him vsed in this sort, and not knowing how to take it, grew almost angry with me; whereat, I could not hold from smiling, and at last I told him:

Be not grieved at this answer, Coladon: for we are straitly tyed to it, since the shepheards of these times (for the most part) delight to make every one beleue, that they haue better fortunes then indeede they haue, thinking that the glory of a shepheard shall be increased by the diminution of our honour. And, that you may know, that I know well the humour of *Phillis*, I tooke the charge vpon me, to bring *Licidas* into her good grace: prouided that he continue, and that he haue a little patience: But I must tell you, that when I first talked with her, she put me off so farre, that I could but onely hope, so that I resolued to winne her in time. But *Licidas*, who had no patience, had a purpose to loue her no more; and at that time he would ordinarily goe singing these verses:

STANZA'S  
On a resolution, to loue no more.

VVhen I see those faire eyes that play the conquerors part,  
I strait yeald unto them, as princes of my heart.  
Thinking that rigour should be banished from thence;  
But finding now too well their cruelties offence,  
(I thinke, to eternize on vs their tyranny,)  
This cannot well be done, but rather treachery.

It's true, it is of them from whence alway arise,  
To meaneest of their straines, some am'rous novelties.  
But whereso forsooth this, that like as from the head,  
No sooner water springs, but instantly 'tis fled?  
Right so it is with loue, which with a raning thirst,  
Flies far from those sameies that brought it forth at first.

By his example then, fly we from those faire eies,  
Fly them, and let vs thinke, in it our safety lies,  
And when they will haue vs to follow where they list,  
Let vs not stay for blowes, which we cannot resist.  
For better it is far to sauue our selues by flight,  
Then to attred the death which we may well acgnize.

I thinke *Licidas* had not so readily put end to the cruelty of *Phillis*, in refusing his affection, if by fortune one day shee and I, according to our manner, going forth to walke by *Lignon*, had not met this shepheard in an

Ile of the riuier, in a place very darke, and where there was no appearance of dissembling. We saw him from one side of the riuier, which was large and deepe, to hinder vs from going to the place where hee was, but not from hearing the verses which he went with complaining; and drawing (as it seemed) some ciphers on the sand with the end of his shephooke, which wee could not know, for the distance betwene vs: but the verses were these:

A MADRIGALL,  
That he should not hope to be beloued.

T' Hinke we, in louing her,  
Our faischfull loue can cast  
A ground-worke that may last?  
Alas, in vaine is woe.

I hold to my great paine,  
That that which with my hand,  
I write in flitting sand,  
Will longer time remaine,

Then I for my amale,  
In her soule vairous,  
Shall fixe (in louing thus):  
The bold, that will not faile.

Within a while we heard, after he had beene silent some time, he tooke againe his speech in this manner, with a great alas, and lifting vp his eyes to heauen: O God, if thou beest angry with mee, for that I haue adored with more devotion, the worke of thy hands, then thine owne selfe; why hast thou not compassion of the errore, which thou causest me to commit? Or if thou beest not pleased, that *Phillis* should be adored, either thou shouldest haue put lesse perfection in her, or in me lesse knowledge of her perfections: for is it not a kinde of profaning a thing of that merit, to offer it lesse affection? I thinke, the shepheard held on in such like discourses, but I could not heare them, because *Phillis*, taking me by force by the arme, carried me away with her. And when we were some pretty distance remoued, I sayd, Naughty *Phillis*, why hast thou no pity on this shepheard, whom thou seeest ready to die for thy sake? Sister, answered

red shc, the shepheards of this countrey are such dissemblers, that often their heart denies that which their mouth promiseth, that if without passions we looke into the actions of such as hee, wee shall finde nothing but cunning. And for the words we heare, (for my part) I iudge, that hauing spyeid vs afarre off, he purposely set himselfe in our way, that we should heare his dissembled complaints; otherwise, would they not as well be spoken to vs, as to these woods and wilde riuers? But sister (answered I) you haue forbid him. See (replied she) a great prooef of his small loue! Is there any commandement strong enough, to stay a violent affection? Beleeue me, sister, the loue that may bend, is not strong. Thinke you not, that if he disobey my commaundement, I should thinke he loued me the better? But sister, in the end (sayd I) he obeyed you. And well (replied she) hath he obeyed me; and herein I held him very obedient: but in that he hath quite giuen ouer his suite to me, I hold him for a man very passionate. And why? was he of opinion, that at the first discouery of his good will to me, I should haue taken some witnes, that he might not hereafter gaine-say it?

If I had not interrupted her, I thinke shée had held on her discourse very long; but because I desired that *Licidas* might be vsed in another fashion, for the payne that *Celadon* suffered, I told her that these kind of speeches were of some purpose to be vsed to *Licidas*, but not to me, who knew well, that we are bound to shew more discontentment, when they talke to vs of loue, then we feele, that thereby wee may trie what minde they haue that speake to vs: that I would commend her, if she vsed those terms; but it is great wāt of trust toward me, who haue not cōcealed from her that which was most secret in my soule: & that (for conclusion) since it was impossible she could auoyde the being beloued of some, it was much better it might be by *Licidas* then by any other, since she could not chuse but be assured of his affection. Whereto she answered, that she never had the thought to dissemble with me; and she would be very angry I should haue that opinion of her: and to giue me more prooef, since I desired she should intertwine *Licidas*, she would obey me, when she should know that he loued her as he said. That was the cause that *Celadon* often finding her after with me, gaue her a Letter that his brother had written by my ad- vice.

*A Letter of Licidas to Phillis.*

If I haue not always loued you, let me never be beloued of any: and if my affections euer change, let my present misfortune never change. It is true, that

that some-while I haue hidden my loue within my heare, so that I haue not suffred it to appeare in my eyes nor words. If I haue offended in it, accuse the respect I carry you, who haue ordaineid I should doe so. If you beleue not the oath which I haue made you, take what prooef you will of me, and you shall know that you haue me more yours, then I can assure you by my true, but most feble words.

In the end (wise *Diane*) after many replies on both sides, we so wrought, that *Licidas* was entertained; and from that time we began, all foure, one life, which was not vnplesasing, either of vs fauouring the other, with the most discretion we could possibly. And that we might the better couer our dessigne, we inuented many meanees, were it to talke, were it to write in secrecie.

It may be, you haue noted that little rocke, that standeth vpon the great way, to the Rocke: you must needs know that it is painfull to get vp: but being there, the place is so fenced, that a man may be thereniseene of any; and because it stands on the hie way, wee made choice of it to meete in, that none might spy vs; and if any mette vs going by, wee made shew to be on our way, and that neither the one nor the other might go in vaine, we put in the morning some bough at the foote of it for a marke, that we had somewhat to say.

It is true that we were so neere vnto the high way; that our raysed voyce might easly be heard of them that passed by: this was the onely cause that vsually we left either *Phillis* or *Licidas* to watch, that at what time souer they sawe any come afarre off, they should cough to giue vs warning. And because wee were vsed to write alwayes when we were letted or hindered, and could not come to that place, wee chose out along that little riuer that runnes by the great way, an olde Willow tree halfe eaten for age; in the hollow whereof, we alwayes layd our letters; and that we might more easily make answer, wee vsually left some paper and an inkehorne.

To be short (wise *Diane*) we turned on every side that wee possibly could, to keepe vs from discouery: And naimely, wee forthwith tooke this course, not to talke together, *Celadon* and I, nor *Licidas* and *Phillis*: so that there were many that thought that *Celadon* had changed his minde, because that as soone as he saw *Phillis*, he would haste to intertwine her, and she shewed him all the good countenance she could; and I likewise alwayes, when *Licidas* came in place, brake company from any other, to go talke with him. It fell out in successe of time, that *Celadon* himselfe

himselfe was of opinion, that I loued *Licidas*; and I beleueed he loued *Phillis*: and *Phillis* thought *Licidas* loued me; and *Licidas* suspected that *Phillis* loued *Celadon*, insuch sort, that vnawares we found our selues so cumbered with these opinions, that ialousie made vs know, that a little shewe will cause him breed in an heart that loueth well. Indeed (interrupted *Phillis*) we were Louers and Schollers at that time: for, to what purpose serued it, to conceale that we truly loued, by making men beleue a loue that was not, since you may as well feare, that men should thinke you beare goodwill to *Licidas*, as to *Celadon*? Sister, sister, replied *Astrea*, clapping her hand on her shoulder; we feare not when men doe thinke of vs that which is not; and on the contrary, the least suspition of that which is true, giues vs no rest. Truly ialousie (continued she, turing toward *Diane*) so attached vs all four, that I thinke that life had long lasted among vs, if some good spirit had not wrought in vs a clearing in the presence each of other. Some seuen or eight dayes passed, that we sawe not each other in the rocke, and that the letters which *Celadon* and I layd, were so differing from those we formerly vsed, that it seemed they were differing persons. At last, as I told you, some good spirit hauing care of vs, caused vs (by chance) to meeete all four in that place, without other company. And the loue of *Celadon* (therin more strong then the rest, in that it compelled him to speake first) put these words into his mouth:

Faire *Astrea*, if I thought time could give remedy to the paine I feele, I would retarde my selfe to that which it might bring; but since the older it growes, the more it increaseth, I am enforced to seeke out a better, by the complaint that I am to make to you of the wrong I receiu, and I am more readily brought to it, for that I am to make my complaint both before my Judges, and my aduersaries. And as he was going forward, *Licidas* interrupted him, saying that he was in paine, that in greatnessse differed not from his. In greatnessse (sayd *Celadon*) it is impossible: for mine is extreme. And mine (replied *Licidas*) is without comparison. While the shepheards talked together, I turned to *Phillis*, and sayd, You see (sister) these shepheards will complaine of vs. Whereto shew answered me, But we haue more cause to complaine of them. But yet (sayd I) although I haue great cause to complayne of *Celadon*, yet I haue more of you, who vnder the colour of the friendship you seeme to beare me, haue drawne him from that bee made shew of to me; so that I may say, you haue robbed me. And for that *Phillis* stood so confused at my words, that she knew not what to answer, *Celadon* turning to me, said: Ah faire shepheardeſſe!

heardeſſe! but fleeting as fayre: Is it so, that you haue lost the memory of the seruices of *Celadon*, and of your owne othes? I complayne not so much of *Licidas*, though he haue fayled in his duty of proximity and amity betweene vs, as of you to your selfe: knowing well, that the desire which your perfections may bring into an heart, may make it forget all respect of duty. But is it possible, that so long a seruice as mine, so absolute a power as you haue euer had ouer me, and so entirē an affection as mine cannot somewhat stay the inconstancy of your soule? or in good time, if yet all that commeth from me, be of so small force, how comes it, that your fayth so often sworne, and the gods so often called to witnesse, can not with-hold you from making a new election before my face? At the same time *Licidas* taking the fayre hand of *Phillis*, after a great sigh, hee sayd: Faire hand, wherein I had entirely placed my will, can I liue, and know that thou delightest to be borne to another heart, then mine? then mine, I say, that haue merited so much offortune, if a man may be worthy by the most great, most sincere, and by the most faithfull loue that euer was.

I could not heare the other words that *Licidas* went on with; for I was constrained to answer *Celadon*. Sheheard, sheheard, said I, all these words of faithfulness, and of amity, are more in your mouth, then in your heart: and I haue more cause to complaine of you, then to heare you. But because I make no more reckning of any thing that comes from you, I will not vouchsafe to complaine; so should you doe, if your disimulations would suffer you. But since our affayres be at these tearmes, go on, *Celadon*, loue *Phillis* well, serue her well, her vertues deserue it: and if in speaking vnto you, I blush, it is for spite that I haue loued that which was so vnworthy, and hath so grossly deceiued me. The astonishment of *Celadon* was so great, hearing the reproches I vsed to him, that he stayed a long time, not able to speake a word: which gaue me opportunity to heare what *Phillis* answered *Licidas*. *Licidas*, *Licidas*, let him that ownes me, demaund me. You call me fleeting, and you know well, that that terme agrees best with your actions. But, thinke you in complaing first, you can purge the wrong you doe me? I falter not, but your selfe: for it is more shame to you to change, then it is losse to me in your change. But that which offends me, is, that you will accuse me for your owne fault, and faine a good reason of your owne vnsfaithfulness. Yet it is true, that he that deceiueth a brother, may fayle her that is not so neare him. And then turning her selfe to mee, she sayd: And you, *Astrea*, thinke that the gayne you haue made by diverting him from my amitie,

can no longer last, then vntill some other obiect present it selfe ; though I know well, your perfections haue that power, that if it be not an heart all of feathers, they are able to slay it. *Phillis* (replied I) the prooef shall witnesse, that you are a flatterer, when you speake so of the perfections which are in me ; since hauing deprived me of *Celadon*, they must needs be feeble, not being able to hold him, after they had gotten him. *Celadon* of *Phillis* : but I protest before all the gods, that she hath not kindled the least sparke of loue in my soule ; and that I beare with lesse griefe, the offence you doe me in changing, then that you commit against my affection, in blaming it of inconstancy. It is to no purpose (wise *Diane*) to particularize all our discourse ; for they would be too long, and might offend you ; so that before we parted, we were so well reduced to our good fenses, that I must tell you, we acknowledged the small reason we had to suspect one another. And we haue good cause to thanke heauen, that we made this declaration all four together ; for I thinke, otherwise it had bee ne impossible to roote out this errour from our soule : and (for my owne part) I assure you, that nothing could haue made mee understand reason, if *Celadon* had not spoken after this manner before *Phillis*.

Now since that time, we went with lesse heed then we were wont. But to leaue this trauaile, I enter into another no lesse troublesome : for we could not so well dissemble, but *Alcipse*, that lay in watch, knew, that his sonnes affection to mee was not altogether extinct ; and for his more assurance, hee looked so heedfully to his actions, that noting with what curiositie he went alwaies to the old Willow, where we layd our letters, one morning he came first, and after he had long sought, noting the path which wee had made on the grasse, by often going, hee tooke it for his guide, and the tract brought him right to the foote of the tree, where he found a letter which I had layd there ouer-night : It was thus :

*The letter of Astrea to Celadon.*

**Y**esterday we went out of the temple, where we were assembled to bee present, at the houres which they did to Pan and Siringue, celebrating their day : I shold haue sayd feasting, if you had bee ne there : but the loue I bare you is such, that not the diuine things (if it may be lawfull for me to say so) without you can please mee. I finde my selfe so unsit, for our common busynesse, that but for the promise, which I made to write daily to you, I know not if this day you should see me haue any newes from me. Receive them then at this time, for my promise

When

When *Alcipse* had read this letter, he layd it in the same place againe and hiding himselfe to see the answer : his sonne was not slacke in coming ; and not finding any paper, he writ on the backe of my Letter, and hath told me since, it was thus :

*The Letter of Celadon to the Shepheardesse Astrea.*

**Y**ou bind me, and unbind me at one time : pardon me if this word offend you : when you tell me you loue me, can I haue any greater obligations to all the gods ? But the offence is not small, that you had not written at this time, but for that you promised me : For I am indebted to your promise, and not to your loue. Remember, I beseech you, that I am not yours, because I haue promised you, but because I am truly yours ; and that in like sort I desire not Letters for the conditions that are betweene vs, but for the sole witnesse of your goodwill, not welcomming them as merchandises, but as being sent me from an entire good will.

*Alcipse* knew not who the shepheardesse might be, to whom this letter was directed, for there was no name to it : but see how it came from a spirit that would be crosse ! he thought not much of his paine, to stay in that place aboue 5. or 6 hours, to see who she should be that would come to seeke it : assuring himselfe, the day would not be fully past, but some one would come fetch it. It was late before I went : but presently, when he sawe me, for feare lest I should take him, he turned himselfe, and made shew as if he were asleepe. And I, that I might giue no cause of suspition, turning my pace, tayned to take another way. He contrarily well satisfied for his payne, as soone as I was gone, tooke the Letter, and carried it with him. Whereupon incontinently hee made his dessigne to send away his sonne, for that he would not in any case, there should be alliance betweene vs, for the extreme hatred betweene *Aloe* and him, but rather to the contrary, hee had a purpose to marry him vnto *Malise* the daughter of *Forelle*, for commodity (as he pretended) of their neigbourhood. The words which were vsed betweene vs at our departing, haue bee ne but too much published by one of the Nymphes of *Belinde*. For I know not how that day *Ligidas*, who was at the foot of the rocke, fell asleepe ; and that Nymph, as she went by, heard vs, and wrote downe in her Tables all our discourse. And what? (interrupted *Diane*) are those the verses which I haue heard sung to one of my mothers Nymphes at the departure of a shepheard ? These be they, answered *Astrea* : and because I would not discouer, that it any thing touched me, I durst not demand them. Trouble not your selfe (replied *Diane*) for I will give you a copie to morrow. And after *Astrea* had thanked her, she went forward.

Now, during this absence, *Olympe*, the daughter of shepheard *Lupe-ander*, dwelling on the confines of *Foreſt*, on the ſide the riuer *Furant*, came with her mother into our Hamlet: and, because this good olde woman much loued *Amarillis*, as hauing in their youth beene bred together, ſhee came to viſite her. This young ſhepheardesse was not ſo faire as ſhe was conceited, and had ſo good an opinion of her ſelfe, that ſhee thought all the ſhepheards that looked on her, were in loue with her; which is a rule infallible, for all thoſe that loue themſelues. That was the cauſe, that as ſoone as ſhe came into the house of *Alcippe*, that ſhee began to buſie her ſelfe with *Licidas*, thinking the ciuility hee vſed toward her, proceeded of Loue. As ſoone as the ſhepheard perceiued it, hee came to tell vs, and know how he ſhould behauē himſelfe: wee gaue aduise (that hee might the better couer the affeſtion he bore to *Phillis*) to maintaine *Olympe* in this opinion. And ſhortly after, it fell out by miſchance, that *Arenois* had ſome affaires on the coaſt of *Allier*, whither ſhee carried *Phillis* with her, notwithstanding all the cunning we could inuençt to keepe her back. Du-ther of *Olympe* returned, leauing her daughter in the hands of *Amarillis*, with a purpose that *Licidas* ſhould marry her, iudging, according to that they ſaw, that he loued her very dearely. And because it was an aduance-ment to her, ſhe was counſelled by her mother, to carry her ſelfe as lou-ely as ſhe could. And affiſe you, faire *Diane*, ſhe diſſembled not, for thence-forth ſhe rather ſued vnto him, then was ſued vnto by him: So that one day, when ſhee found him at leaſure, as ſhee thought, within the inward parts of the wood of *Boulien*, where by fortune hee went to ſecke a wan-dring ſheep: after ſome common ſpeeches ſhe laid her arme on his neck, and after ſhe had kiſſed him, ſayd, Gentle ſhepheard, I know not what I haue in mee ſo vnpreeſing, that I cannot by any demonaſtrations of good will, finde place in your good graces. It may be, anſwered the ſhepheard ſhepheardesse, may be thought to be as much blinded as your ſelfe, if you ſee not the offer which I make of my amity; till when, ſhepheard, ordaine you that I loue without being beloued, and that I ſhal ſtill ſeek you, without finding acceptance. I cannot thiſke, that the other ſhepheardesses whom you make ſo much of, are more louely then my ſelfe, or haue any thing aboue me, but the poſſeſſion of your good graces. *Olympe* uttered theſe words with that affeſtion, that *Licidas* was moued at it. Faire *Da-ane*, at all other times, when I remember this accident that befell the ſhepheard, I could not refraine from laughter, but now my miſfortune forbids

Lib. 4. forbids me, & yet me thought I could be angry with none but *Phillis*, who had ſo charged him to loue her: for this fayning at laſt turned to earnest.

Hereupon this miſerable *Olympe*, thinking by her fauours to make her ſelfe beloued the more, made her ſelfe to be ſo much diſ-esteemed, that *Licidas* hauing had of her all that he might, diſdaigned her ſo, that he could not abide ſhe ſhould be neere him. Preſently after this fortune befell, hee came to tell me with ſuch appearance of diſpleaſure, that (I thiſke) hee was ſorry for his fault; and yet it fell not out ſo: for this ſhepheardesse committed ſuch folly, that ſhee grew to bee with childe; and about the time ſhee first perceiued it, *Phillis* returned from her iourney: and if I expected her with great paine, I likewiſe welcomid her with much cōcertyment. But as commonly they first demad of that which neereſt toucheth the hart, *Philiſſis*, after two or three former words, failed not to aſke how *Licidas* diē, & how he behaued himſelfe with *Olympe*. Very well (anſwered I) and I aſſure my ſelfe, hee will not bee long before hee come to tell you newes. I cut my ſpeech the shorter, for feare I might tell her ſomewhat that might anger *Licidas*, who for his part was not without paine, nor knowing how to aboord the ſhepheardesse: at laſt he resolued to ſuffer al things rather then to bee banished from her ſight, and came to finde her in her lodging, where he knew I was. As ſoone as ſhee ſaw him, ſhee ran to him with o-pen armeſ to ſalute him: but giuing a little backe, he ſayd, Faire *Phillis*, I haue not hardines enough to come neere you, except you pardon me the fault I haue done you. The ſhepheardesse thinking he had excuſed himſelfe for comming no ſooner, as hee was accustomed, (anſwered him) There is nothing can hold me backe from ſaluting *Licidas*; and when he hath offendid mee, I muſt pardon him alwaies. At this word ſhee came forward, & welcomid him with great affection, but it was his pleasure when hee brought her backe to me, to pray me tell his errour to his Mistris, that hee might ſpeedily know to what ſhe would condenme him. Not for that the griefe (ſaih he) ſhall not accompany me to my graue, but for the deſire I haue to know what you ordaine of me. This word brought colour into the face of *Phillis*, doubting that her pardon was greater then her mea ning: whereof *Licidas* taking heed, I haue not courage enough ſaid he to me, to heare the declaration you ſhall make of me. Pardon me then, faire Mistris (turning to *Phillis*) if I break company ſo ſoon, & if my life be vnpreeſing to you, and that my death may giue you ſatisfaction, be not couerous of my bloud. At this word though *Phillis* called him back, yet would he not come, but contrarily pulling the doore after him, left vs alone. You may not thiſke that *Phillis* made dainty, to aſke if there were any newes;

newes, & whence so great feare came. Without stay in long discourse, I told her as it was, and withall, laid al the fault on our selues, who did not foresee, that his youth could no longer resist the assaults of this folly, and that his displeasure was so great, that his error was pardonable. At the first I could not obtaine that I desired of her; but some few dayes after, *Licidas*, by my counsell, came to cast himselfe on his knees, and she ranne into another chamber that she might not see him, and from thence into another, flying from *Licidas*, who still followed her, and was resolued, as hee said, not to let her rest, till he had either pardon or death. In the end, not knowing whither to fly further, she stayed in a closet; where *Licidas* entring, and shutting the dores, he set himselfe on his knees before her, and without speaking any other thing, attended the sentence of her will. This affectionate obstinacy had more force in her, then any persuasions; and so staying some while without speaking to him,

Goe, sayd she to him importunate, it is thy importunity, and not thee that I pardon. At this word hee kissed her hand, and came to open mee the doore, to giue me to vnderstand, that he had got the victory; and then seeing his affaires in so good case, I would not let them part asunder, vntil all actions were intirely forgiuen: and *Phillis* so pardoned the shepheard, that seeing him distressed extremely, to hide *Olympe* belly, which now grew great to the view, she offered to assist him in all that possibly shee could. Certainly (interrupted *Diane*) see a strange proofe of good amity, to pardon such an offence which is intirely against amity: and more, to prouide that she which caused it, take no displeasure. Without fayning, *Phillis*, this is too much; and for mee, I protest, my courage knowes not how to brooke it: yet my amity did so then, answered *Phillis*, and by that you may judge of what quality it was in me. Let vs leaue this consideration apart (replied *Diane*) for it would be too hard for you, since the not feeling the offences which be done against amity, is rather a signe of defect, then the ouer-abundance of loue: and for my part, if I had beene one of the friends of *Licidas*, I should haue interpreted rather to the disadvantage of your good will. Ah! *Diane*, said *Phillis*, if you as well knew what it is to loue, as you doe to cause your selfe to bee beloued, you will judge it needfull the friend should know himselfe, but heauen is pleased to haue you be beloued, and not to loue. If it be so, sayd *Diane*, I am more bound to it for such a benefit, then for my life; but I may be capable without louing, to iudge of Loue. It cannot be, interrupted *Phillis*. I had rather hold my peace, answered *Diane*, then speake with so deare a permissi-

talkes

talkes and judges indifferently of all sorts of diseases, though he never had them: I would tell you, that if there be any thing in amity whereof wee may make reckoning, it ought to be the amity it selfe without more; for all other things that please vs, are but to be ioyned with it: and therefore there is nothing that more offends him that loues, then to spie any defect in loue: and not to feele such offences, is (indeed) to haue a spirit feble for that passion. And will you haue mee tell you what I thinke of Loue? It is a musike of many voyces, that well concording, giues a right sweet harmony; but if there be but one discord, it not onely displeases, but makes you forget all the pleasure which they yeelded before. So said *Phillis*, Naughty *Diane*, you would say, that if a man haue scrued you long, the first offence must blot out all the memory of that is passed. The very same said *Diane*, or little lesse. O gods, cryed *Phillis*! shall not hee that loues you, haue worke enough? He that loues me (replied *Diane*) if he wil that I loue him, must beware he offend not my loue. And beleeue me (*Phillis*) that at this bout, you haue done more iniury to *Licidas* then, when he offended you before. Then sayd *Phillis* smiling, At another time I will say, that it is Loue that made me do it; but at this time I will say, it is Reuenge: and to the most curious, I will deliuer the reason which you haue taught me. They will iudge (replied *Diane*) that at another time you know to loue; but at this time you know what it is to loue. Whatsoeuer it be (answered *Phillis*) if it be of defect, it procedes of ignorance, and not of want of loue. For I thinke I am bound: but if euer he returne, I will looke to my selfe for falling backe againe. And you, *Astrea*, are ouer-long silent: then tell vs what assistance I gaue for the birth of this childe. Then *Astrea* tooke it vp againe in this sort.

As soone as this shepheardesse had made this offer of her selfe, *Licidas* accepted of it very boldly; and after that sent a yong shepheard to *Maine* to bring with him, the wise woman of that place; her eyes being closed, that she should not discerne which way she went. Then *Diane* as astonisched, laid her finger on her mouth, and saies, Faire shepheardesse, this is not so secret as you thinke: I remember I haue heard them speake of it. I pray you, said *Phillis*, tell vs what you haue heard, that we may know whether it hath bene told you true; I know not, added *Diane*, if I well remember the poore *Philander* was he that told it me, and I assure my selfe he had it from *Lucina* the wise woman, to whose care it came; and that shee would never haue spoken of it, if any trust had bene repos'd in her. One day as shee walked into the Parke which is betweene *Mont-brison* and *Maine*, with many other her companions, shee saw come towars her a man

Q

whom

whom she did not know: who at his comming, did commendations from diuers of her kins-folks that were at *Fews*, and then he told her some particular, that he might separate her a little from the other women which were with her: & when he saw her alone, he gaue her to vnderstand, that a better occasion had brought him to her; for it is (said he) to coniure you by all the pitty you euer had, to giue your helping hand to an honest woman, that is in danger if you denie your aide. The good woman was a little surprised to heare him change his discourse at once: but the yong man besought her to hide her astonishment as well as she could; & that he had rather dye, then any should suspect this businesse: *Lucina* being assured, and having promised to be secret, and that he should only tell her at what time shee should be ready: You must make no iourney for these two months, sayd the yong man; and that you may not lose by it, behold here the money which you might gaine elsewhere in that space. At that word hee gaue her some pieces of gold in a paper, and returned without passing thorow the towne; but after he had knowne of her, whetlier she could trauaile by night, and she answered, seeing the gaine so great, No time could stay her: within fiftene or sixteene dayes after, as shee went out of *Mates*, about fife or six of the clock at night, she saw him come with a visage alchaged; and comming neere her, he sayd, Mother, the time hath deceived vs, wee must be gone, the horses carry for vs, and necessity presses vs. She would haue gone back to her house, to giue some order to her businesse: but hee would not suffer her, fearing shee shold speake to some budy. So being come into a valley farre from the high way, shee found two horses with a man of some sort, and clothed in blacke, that held them. As soone as he saw *Lucina*, he came to her with open face; and after many thankes, hee caused her to sit vp behind him that went to fetch her; after, mounting on the other horse, they rode a roud trot ouerthwart the field; and when they were some distane from the towne, and that the night began to drawe darke, this yong man taking an handkercher out of his pocket, bound it about the eyes of *Lucina*, for all the resistance shee could make; and after they had twice or thrice turned about the horse wheron she rode, that she might haue no knowledge of the way, which they meant to take; and then falling againe to their troth, rode a great part of the night, shee not knowing which way shee went, but that they made her passe a riuier (as she thought) twise or thrice, and then setting her on the ground, made her walke a while on her feet; and as shee could iudge, it was thorow a wood, where at last she spred a little light a-crosse the handkercher, which within a while after they rooke cleane away. And then she found her selfe vnder

a tent of rapistry, fitted in such sort, that the wind might not enter: on the one side she saw a yong woman in a field bed, that complained much, & was masked, at the beds feete shee perceiued a woman who had likewise her face couered, and who by her habit seemed to bee aged, shee held her hands ioyned together, and had teares in her eyes: on the other side there was a yong maide of the chamber masked, with a light in her hand at the beds head stood leaning that honest man whom shee found with the horses, who seemed infinitly to feele the griefe of this woman, which was leaning vpon her stomake; and the yong man which brought her behind him, went about to giue that which was necessary, there being on the table in the midst of the tent two great candles lighted. It may easily be beleued, that *Lucina* was astonisched to see her selfe in this place; but shee had not leisure to be long so; for one may judge, that this little creature waited but for the comming of this woman to come into the world. The mother felte the throwes of her down lying, which lasted but halfe an houre, before the deliuery of a daughter: but this was a diligence yet greater then ordinary, to deliuier her, and lay her in bed, and put the childe into a cradle, and send away *Lucina*, after they had well contented her, yet her eyes againe closed as shee came. Now if they had trusted her, shee thought their mistrust gaue her leaue; and now you see all that I could know of *Philander*. *Astrea* and *Phillis*, who had bene attentiu to her discourse, looked one on the other much astonished, & *Phillis* could not chuse but laugh; and *Diane* demanding the reason: It is, sayd shee, because you haue told vs a story which we never knew, and for my part I cannot imagine how it may be: for, for *Olympe*, she was never in that danger; & of necessity it must be some other then a shepheardeesse that had so good furniture. Indeed (answered *Diane*) I take this honest man for *Licidas*, the old woman for the mother of *Celadon*, and the chamber-maide for you; and iudge you whether you disguised not your selues, that you might not be knowne. I assure you, sayd *Astrea*, that this was not *Olympe*: for *Phillis* vsed no other arte, but to cause her come to her house, and by chance her mother *Artemis* was then gone to the riuier of *Alles*; and because *Olympe* was vnder the bands of *Amarillis*, of necessity she must faine to bee sickle, which was easy for her to do, by reason of the disease she went with; and after she had spent some time, she told the mother of *Celadon*, that the change of the aire might happily bring some asswagement, and that she was certaine that *Phillis* would be well pleased to haue her neere her. *Amarillis*, that thought she should bee charged with her sickenesse, was well contented with this resolution; and

and so *Phillis* came to fetch her. And when the terme approached, *Licidas* went to bring the wise woman, and blinded her eyes that shee might not know the way: but when shee was come, he vnbound her, knowing well that shee knew not *Olympe*, as hauing neuer seene her before. Thus you see all the art that was vsed: and as soone as shee was well deliuered, shee went home, and they haue told vs since, that shee vsed a pretty tricke to bring vp the childe; for, as soone as shee came thither, shee suborned a simple woman, that fained to haue borne it, to come to father it vpon a shepheard, who vsed to waite on her mother, saying that shee had it by him. And for that this poore shepheard knew himselfe innocent, he refused it, and reviled her; so that shee that was prepared for the purpose, followed him to the chamber of *Lupander*; and there, though the shepheard refused it, yet shee left the infant in the middel of the chamber, and went her way. They told vs, *Lupander* was very angry: but the conclusion was, that *Olympe* turning to her mother: Must it be so (sayd shee) that this little creature should stay without nourishment? It cannot help anothers fault, and it shall be a worke pleasing the gods, to bring it vp. The mother, who was good and charitable, agreed; and so *Olympe* brought vp her childe at home. In this meane time *Celadon* was with *Forelle*, where they gaue him all the good entertainment they might; and especially *Malib* had commaundement from her father, to doe him all the honest kindnesses she could: but *Celadon* was so discontented with our separation, that all their honest respects were in place of punishment to him, and he went about with such a sadness, that *Forelle* not beeing able to brooke the contempt he had of his daughter, aduertised *Alcippo* of it, to the end he might no longer expect this alliance, who knowing the disposition of his sonne, moued (as I thinke) out of pity, purposed once more to vse some piece of cunning, and thenceforth neuer to torment him any more. During the abode that *Celadon* made with *Malib*, my vnykle *Phosion* so wrought, that *Corebe* a very rich and honest shepheard, became a suiter to me; and because hee had all the good parts that one might wish, many men talked of it, as if the marriage had beeene resolued on. Whereupon *Alcippo* meaning to make vse of it, deuised this crafty tricke I tell you:

There was a shepheard named *Squinder*, dwelling on the bounds of the *Forrest*, in an Hamlet called *Argentat*, a cunning fellow, and vnruly, and who among his other industries, knew so well to counterfeite all kinde of Letters, that the man whom he imitated, can hardly discerne the falsehood. To him *Alcippo* shewes what he found at the foote of the tree,

as I haue told you before, and causes him to write another to *Celadon* (in my name) which was thus:

The counterfeited Letter of Astrea to Celadon.

Celadon, since I am compelled by my fathers commandement, you may not thinke it strange, that I pray you to end this loue which heeretofore I haue coniured you to hold eternall. Alce hath given me to Corebe; and though the match be to my aduancement, yet can I not leaue to feele sensibly the separation of our amity. Yes, since it is folly to contrary that which must not fall out otherwise, I counsell you to armee your selfe with resolution, and so to forget all that is passed betweene vs, that Celadon haue no more memory of Alstrea, as Alstrea is constrained, from henceforth, to lose (for duties sake) all the remembrance of Celadon.

This Letter was brought so finely to *Celadon*, by a young shepheard vñknownc. O God! what was he at the encounter, and how great was the displeasure that cut his heart? Then sayd hee by *Astrea*, It is true that there is nothing of durâce in the world, since that firme resolution which you haue so often sworne, is so readilly changed. Now you will make me be a witnesse, that what perfection soever a woman may haue, she can not bereaue her selfe of her inconstancie by nature. Haue then the heauens agreed, that for my greater punishment, my life should remaine after the losse of your amity, to the end that I shoud onely liue more extremely to feele my distrest. And then falling into a swowne, he came no sooner to himselfe, but the complaints were in his mouth. And that which most easily perswaded him of this change, was this, that the Letter did but confirme the common report of the marriage betweene *Corebe*, and me. He lay all that day on a bed, vñwilling to speake to any person; and the night being come, he deprived himselfe of his companions: he tooke to the largest and desolatest wood, shunning the meeting of men, more like a savage beast, desiring to die farre from the society and companie of men, since they were the cause of his sorrow. In this resolution hee ranne thorow all the mountaines of *Foreste*, on the side of *Cernieres*, where at the last he chose a place which he thought least frequented, of purpose to finish the rest of his sad and mournefull dayes there. The place is called *Lapan*, where riseth one of the springs of the disastrous riuier *Lignon*; for the other spring proccedeth from the mountaynes of *Chotnezel*.

Now on the sides of this fountaine he built a pretie Lodge, where he liued retired more then sixe moneths, during which time, his ordinary nourishment were teares and plaints. It was at that time that hee made this song.

A SONG  
Of Celadon vpon Astrea change.

IT must be, that my constancy  
Hath quite borsened me of fense.  
If I feele not the iniury  
Your change hath wrought to my offence:  
And feeling it, I should remaine,  
Without recourse to your disdain.

Forsworne, you have disdained mee,  
For one you scarce had in your eye:  
Because hee hath more (it may be)  
Of goods, and wealthier is then I.  
Vnfaulthull, darst thou be so bold,  
To sacrifice to Calfe of golds

Where are the othes which we did make?  
Where are the teares that showering fell  
To gods, when we our loue did sake?  
No doubt the heauens did marke shew well  
Though your heart do is now forget,  
Tis your owne mouth did publish it.

Perjurid eyes, vnfaulthull flame,  
That louest nothing but to change.  
Let Long on beauty like the same  
Of thine, for me, worke vengeance strange,  
That makes a shew of bearing loue,  
Only the greater flame to moue.

So ouer-prest with sad distresse,  
In Loue bestrid, one gan complaine,  
Whon it was told him his Mistresse  
Did for another him disdaine,

And shaudring heauen for encre pity,  
Premis'd to venge his iniury.

The wretched downe himselfe he threw,  
Neete Lignon floud, and as he sat,  
Upon the sand with finger drew  
These cipheres as he us'd of late.  
This happy cipher, (oh (said he))  
To vs no more will proper be.

And then a sora childe of the paine,  
Whiche dolour just strok in his face,  
Upon the sande dropping amaine,  
These double cipheres did deface.  
Deface (said he) ob showering teare,  
Them in my haire, but not thes there.

Thon Louer, that right cowardly  
Solang breylift so doltfully,  
A soule all made of forgery,  
Since then her change know'st certaintly,  
Either thou shourely art to die,  
Or else recouer presently.

The solitarinelle of Celadon had beene much longer; but for the commandement that Alcippe gaue to Licidas, to seeke out his brother, hauing a purpose in himselfe (since he so well saw how vnprofitable his erasure was) no more to crosse this amity. Now Licidas had long sought him, but for a chance that befell vs the same day.

I was vpon the banks of Lignon, and held mine eies ouer his stremme, thinking at that time of the losse of Celadon; and Phillis and Licidas talked together some good while, when we saw some little balles, that lay swimming on the water. The first that tooke heed to it, was Phillis, who shewed it to vs, but we could not ghesse what it might bee. And because Licidas knew the curiositie of his mistresse, to gue her satisfaction, he went as far as he could into the water, and so reached with a long branch, that he tooke one; but seeing that it was but waxe, because hee was wet, and angry that he tooke such paine for a thing of so small worth, hee cast it in a rage against the ground, and breaking it vpon a great flint stone, it fell

all in pieces, and there remained nothing but a paper, which had beene put therein, which *Phillis* ranne presency to take vp; and hauing opened it, we read these words:

**C**oe, paper, more happy then him that sends thee, to see these shores so much beloved, where my shepheardesse dwells: and if accompanied with teares, wherewith I make this River to swell, it chancesthee to kisse the sands where her steps are imprinted, stay thy course, and abide with good fortune, where my mis-  
hap denies me to be. If thou happen to come to her hands, which haue taken from me my heart, and she demand of thee, how I doe, tell her, O faithfull paper, that if touched with repentance, she wot thee with some teares, tell her, that by unbew-  
ding the bow, she can never heale the wound which she hath made in her faith of  
my Love, and that my grieves are witnessses, both before men and gods, that as she  
is the most faire, and the most unfaithfull in the world, so I am the most faith-  
full, and most affectionate that liues; with assurance, notwithstanding, never to  
have consentment but in my death.

We no sooner cast our eyes on this writing, but we knew it all three to be from *Celadon*, which was the cause that *Liciadas* ran to draw out the others which floated on the water, but the stremme had carried them so farre, that hee could not come by them; yet we ghesst thereby, that hee abode about the head of the *Lignon*; which caused *Liciadas* in the morning to goe secke him luckily, and vised such diligence, that three dayes after he found him in solitariness, so changed from that that he was wont, that he might scarce know him: but when hee told him that he must come to me, and that I so commaunded him, he could hardly be perswaded, but that his brother came to deceiue him. At last, the letter which hee brought from me, gaue him such contentment, that within few dayes hee came to his former countenance, and came to finde vs out: yet not so soone, but that *Alcippe* dyed before his returne; and some few dayes after *Amarillis* followed him. And then wee were of opinion, that fortune had done her worst against vs, since these two were dead that contraried vs most. But it fell not out so, by the mischiefe that the suite of *Corebe* went on so, that *Alice*, *Hippolite*, and *Phacion* would give mee no rest; and yet it was not from them that our mischiefe came, though *Corebe* were in part a cause: for when hee came to make suite to mee, because hee was very rich, hee brought with him many shepheards, among whom was *Semire*, a shep-  
heard indeede repleasre with good qualities, if he had not beene the most perfidious

perfidious and subtil fellow that euer was. As soone as hee cast his eye on me, he had a purpose to serue me, forgetting the friendship that *Corebe* bare him. And because *Celadon* and I, to cloke our amity, had layd a plot, as I told you, to dissemble; he, to make loue to al the shepheardeſſes, and I, to ſuffer indifferently the wooing of all ſorts of ſhepheards: hee thought at firſt, that the good acceptance that I gaue him, was the bree-  
der of ſome greater affection; and he had not ſo loone knowne what was  
betweene *Celadon* and me, if (by miſchance) he had not found my letters: For though, to his laſt loſſe, it was well knowne hee loued mee, yet there  
were fewe that thought I loued him, I carried my ſelfe ſo coldly ſince *Ce-  
ladons* laſt returne. And because the letters which *Alcippe* had found at  
the foote of the tree, cost vs deare, wee would no more rely on thoſe we  
wrote our ſelues, but inuented a newe trick which wee thought more au-  
ſured. *Celadon* had fastened to a corner of his hat, on the inſide, a little piece  
of felt, ſo cunningly, that he could hardly ſee it, and this was locked with  
a button on the outſide, where he fayned to bind vp the brimme of his  
hat: in that he put his letter, and making ſhew to play, either he cast me  
his hat, or I tooke it from him, or he let it ly; or fayning to runne or leap  
better, cast it on the ground, and ſo I tooke and returned the letter. I  
know not by what miſfortune, one day, when I had one in my hand to  
glue him, running after a Wolfe which came neere my flockes, I let it fall,  
vnhappily for me, which *Semire*, that came after, took vp, and ſaw it was  
thus:

*The letter of Astrea to Celadon.*

**D**ear Celadon, I haue received your letter, which was as welcome to me, as  
I know mine are to you, and I finde nothing that doth not ſatisfie me, excepte  
the ſhakes you give, which (me thinkes) is to no purpose, neither for my love,  
nor for *Celadon*, who of long time is wholly given mine. For, if they be not yours,  
know you not, that what ſoever wanteth, that title can never please mee? And if  
they be yours, why do you give me ſeparated that, which at once I haue received,  
when you gaue your ſelfe to me? Vſe it no more, I pray you, if you would not haue  
me think, that you haue more ciuitie then Love.

After he had found this letter, he purpoſed to ſpeak to me no more of  
Love, vntill he had done ſome euill to *Celadon*, and began in this ſort. In  
the firſt place, hee beſought me to pardon him for being ſo rafh, that hee  
durfte raife his eyes on me, which my beauty compelled him to doe, but he  
well

well knew his small merit, and therefore he protested to me, neuer to mistake more, onely he desired me to forget his boldnesse. And after that, he made himselfe so great a friend & familiar to *Celadon*, that it seemed there was nothing which hee loued more; and to abuse mee the more, hee neuer met me, without finding some occasion to speake to the aduantage of my shephearde, couering his intent so cunningly, that no man would thinke, that he had any such designe.

These praises of the person whom I loued, as I told you, deceiued me so, that I took extreme pleasure to entertaine him, and so two or three moneths passed, right happily for *Celadon* and me: but this was (as I beleue) the more to make me feel that, which since I cease not, nor euer shall cease to bewaile. At this word, in place of speech, her tears represented her displeasures to her compaines with such abundance, that neither the one nor the other durst open their mouth, fearing to increase her sorrow: for the more you labor by Reason, to dry the teares, the more they increase their springs. At last she began again thus: Alas, wise *Diane*, how can I remember this accident & not die? From that time *Semire* was so familiar, both with *Celadon* and me, that for the most part, we were together. And when hee thought hee had gotten sufficient credit with mee, to perswade that which he meant to vndertake: One day, when he found me alone, after we had long talked of diuers treasons that the shepherds did to the shephearde, whom they made sliue to loues. But I wonder much, said he, that there bee so fewe shephearde, that take heed to their deceits, though otherwise they be very circumspect. That is, answered I, for that Loue hath shut vp their eyes. Without fayning, replied he, I beleue so; for otherwise it were not possible, but you should know what they would doe to you; and then holding his peace, he seemed to prepare himselfe to say more, but as if he repented that he had told me so much, he beganne againe in this sort: *Semire*, *Semire*, what thinkest thou to doe? Seest thou not that shee delights in thy deceit? Why wilt thou trouble thy selfe?

And then addressing himselfe to me, he went on: I see well (faire *Astrea*) that my discourse hath brought you some displeasure. But pardon me, for that I haue bin compelled to it by the affection which I haue to your seruice. *Semire* (sayd I) I am bound to you for this good will; but I shall be much more, if you finishe that which you haue begunne. Ah shephearde (said he) I haue told you too much; but, it may be, you shall (in time) know more of it, and then you shall judge, that (indeed) *Semire* is your seruant. Ah most malicious! how true hee seemed in his wicked promises! for I haue since knowne but too much, to leaue in mee onely

the

the desire to liue. So it was, that at that time he would tell me no more, to make me the more desirous; and he thought it was time, one day when (according to custome) I pressed him to let me know the end of my contentment: and I coniured him by the power which I had sometimes ouer him, to tell me all that which he had begunne. He answered, Faire shephearde, you so coniure me, that I hold it a great fault to disobey you: I would I had neuer begunne that discourse, which I foresee the end will bring you. And after I had assured him of the contrary, he had the skil so well to perswade me, that *Celadon* loued *Aminthe* the daughter of the sonne of *Cleante*; that *Jealousie* the ordinary companion of soules which loue dearely, beganne to perswade me, that it might be true: and this was a mischiefe extreme, that then I remembred not the commandement which I gaue him, to make shew of louing other shephearde. Notwithstanding, desirous to make an end, to dissemble my displeasure, I answered *Semire*, that I did neuer beleue, nor would, that *Celadon* made particular choice of me before others; that if it seemed we vsed any familiarity, it was but by reason of the long acquaintance which we haue had together; but as for his loue-suites, they were indifferent. Now answere the crafty companion, I thanke God your humour is such: but since it is so, you cannot choose but take pleasure to heare the passionate discourse which he had to his *Aminthe*. I protest to you (wise *Diane*) when I heard him name his *Aminthe*, I changed colour; and because he offred me to heare their words, me thought I was not to shunne the knowledge of the perfidiosenesse of *Celadon*, alas, more faithfull then I well aduised: and so I tooke his offer, and indeede hee fayled not in his promise. For, within a while after, he came running to me; and assuring mee, that hee left them close together, and that *Celadon* layd his head in *Aminthes* lap, who sate and rubbed his head, telling me the particulars, the more to torment me: I followed him so besides my selfe, that I remember neither the way I went, nor how neere he brought me to them; yet they perceiued me not, because, as I haue iudged since, they cared not who heard, and therfore regarded not who hearkened. So it was, I found my selfe so neare, that I could heare *Celadon* say, Beleeue me (sayre shephearde) there is no beauty can be more livelyprinted in a soule, then that which is in mine.

But *Celadon* (answred *Aminthe*) how is it possible that an heart stirring as yours, can haue the hardinesse, to hold long that which loue can graue? Naughty shephearde ( replied my *Celadon*) let these reasons goe by, measure not me by your wand, nor weights of any other; honor me with your good graces, and you shall see if I will not preserue them as well in

my

my soule, and as long as my life. *Celadon, Celadon*, (replied *Aminthe*) you shall be wel punished, if your iest turne to earnest, and if the heauens (in my reuenge) make you loue this *Aminthe*, whom you now sport your selfe with. Hitherto there was nothing, but in some sort it might be born. But O God! to faine what was the answer he gaue. I pray Loue, sayd he, (faire shepheard) if I mocke, that he cause the mockery to light on mee; if I haue deserued any grace from him, that he inflict on mee the punishment you threaten. *Aminthe* not able to iudge his intent by this discourse, answered him not but with a smile, and with a casting of her hand ouer her eyes, which I interpreted in my language, that she refused not, but that she beleueed his words for true: But that which touched me most to the quicke, was, that *Celadon*, after he had beene some-while without speech, fetcht a deepe sigh, which she accompanied presently with another. And when the shepheard rose vp to speake to her, she layd her hand ouer her eies, & waxed red, as halfe ashamed, that this sigh had so escaped her: which was the cause that *Celadon* lying downe in his former place, a little after sung these verses:

*A Sonnet when he knew how they sayned to loue.*

**F**ayning to loue me, she complaines in wanton wise,  
And after me she sighes, when me she fighing spies:  
And by her fayned teares, would witness to endure,  
The heare which in my soule she knowes is ouer-faine.  
The louer most expert, when she the Maide putt on  
Of her deceiptfull traimes, knowes no way so to be gone:  
He must be without heare, not to desire a whis,  
To be so sweetly gull'd, by such her forging wit.  
My selfe deceite my selfe, in fashond that I see,  
And my contentments all confederate against mee:  
My hearts glasse, traitors, lights that untrusty are.  
I know you all right well, your iugling trickes I spie,  
But whereto serues it me, since Loue doth me deny?  
Seeing your treasons trickes, I shoulde therof beware.

After he had held his peace awhile, *Aminthe* sayd, And why, *Celadon*, doe you trouble your selfe so much? I feare, said he, rather to trouble her, whom in any sort I would not but please. And who is that, said she, since we are alone? Ah! that she had deceived her selfe so; and it had beene well for

for my part, as any other in the company. It is but you, answered *Celadon*, that I feare to importune, but if you command mee, I will goe forward. I dare not, replied the shepheardesse, vse any commandement, where euen the payer is vndiscreete. You may vse, replied the shepheard, what termes please you, but in the end I am but your seruant. And then he began again in this sort:

### A M A D R I G A L.

Vpon a resemblance of his Lady and himselfe.

**I** May be bold to say our hearts  
Are both made of the hardest rocke;  
Mine, that indures such rig'rous smartes,  
And yours, in that it beares the shocke  
Both of Loues blowes, and of my teares.

*But when the grieves I call to minde,  
Which makes my sufferings euer be  
In this extremitie, I finde  
I am a rocke in constancy;  
And so are you in crueltie.*

Faire *Diana*, it was beyond my power to stay longer there, and so stea-  
ling softly from them, I returned to my flocke, so sad, that from that day I  
opened not my mouth. And because it was very late, I draue my sheepe  
into their folds, and passed a night, such as you may imagine: Alas! all  
this had beene nothing, if I had not ioyned thereto the folly, which I shall  
bewaile as long as I haue teares, neither know I who inuicled me: for if  
I had had any judgement remaining in me, for this new icalousie, at the  
least, I might haue inquired of *Celadon*, what his purpose was, & thogh he  
would haue dissembled it, I shuld easily enough haue found out his fictiō.  
But without other consideration, the next morning, when hee came to  
ooke me at my flock, I talked to him with such disdaine, that desperately  
he cast himselfe into that gulph, where drowning himselfe, he hath at one  
blow drowned all my contentment. At this word she grew pale  
like death; and had it not beene for *Phillis*, who raysed her vp,  
pulling her by the arme, shee had beeene in danger  
of swoyning.



## THE FIFTH BOOKE OF Astrea and Celadon.

**S**He noyse that the shepheardeſſes made, when *Aſtrea* fell into a ſwoone, was ſuch, that *Leonide* waked with it, and hearing them talke neir her, her curioſity gaue her a mind to know who they were; and becauſe after they had reſretched themſelues, theſe three ſhepheardeſſes roſe to goe away, all that ſhe could doe, was, to awaken *Silvie*, to ſhew them her. As ſoone as ſhe ſaw them, ſhe knew *Aſtrea*, though ſhe were much changed, for the diſpleaſure ſhe tooke for the loſſe of *Celadon*. And the other two, ſaid *Leonide*, what are they? The one, ſaid ſhe, that is on the left hand, is *Phillis*, her deare companion; and the other is *Diane*, the daughter of the ſage *Bellinde*, and *Celio*, and I am angry that we haue ſlept ſo long; for I am assured we ſhould haue heard ſome of their newes, there being ſome likelihood, that the occaſion which withdrew them from others, was but to talke more freely.

Truly (answered *Leonide*) I protest, I neuer ſaw any more beautille then *Aſtrea*, and comparing her with all others, I finde her beyond them all. Chelle (replied *Silvie*) what hope *Galathée* may haue, to diuert the affection of the ſhepheard. This conſideration touched *Leonide* alſo to the quick, for her part, as well as *Galathée*. But loue, which neuer lookeſ on the expence of any person, without giuing them, for their payment, ſome kinde of hope, would not handle this Nymph more niggardly then others: and ſo, though there were no great likelihood, yet he would not ſayle to promise her, that the abſence of *Aſtrea*, and the loue which ſhe made ſhew to beare him, might haply make a change of will; and after ſome other ſuch diſcourse, the Nymphs diuided themſelues, *Leonide* taking the way of *Fœrs*, and *Silvie* that of *Isoure*, in which meane time the

three

135  
three fayre ſhepheardeſſes, hauing gathered together their flockes, went ſhortly after to their Lodges.

They had hardly ſet foote in the great paſture, where they were wone to assemble, but they perceiued *Licidas* talking with *Siluander*. As ſoone as the ſhepheard ſaw *Aſtrea*, he became pale, and ſo changed, that for feare leſt *Siluander* ſhould know any thing, he brake company with ſome bad excuse: but diſirous to auoyde the meeting with them, *Phillis* went to crosse his way with *Diane*, after ſhe had told *Aſtrea* the bad ſatisfaction this ſhepheard had of her; and because *Phillis* would not loſe him, hauing (till then) ſo charily kept him, althoſh he endeououred to paſſe beyond them, yet ſhe ouertooke him, & ſmiling, ſayd: If in this ſort you ſlie from your friends, what will you doe to your enemies? He anſwered, The company which you ſo cheriſh, will not ſuffer you to hold that name. She (replied the ſhepheardeſſe) of whom you complaine, ſuffereth more paine for offendiſg you, then your ſelue doe. That is (ſaid the ſhepheard) but to breake the weapon, rather then heale the wound. By this time *Aſtrea* came, & addressing her ſelue to *Licidas*, ſaid thus: I am ſo farre (ſhepheard) from ſaying, that the hatred you beare me, is vniuſt, that Iauerre, you know not how to hate me ſo deadly, as you haue occaſion. Notwithſtanding, if the memory of him which is the cauſe of this euil ſatisfaction, be yet as liuely in your ſoule, as it ſhall euer be in mine, you ſhould remember, I am that thing in the world he moſt loued; and it will be euill for you to hate me, ſince yet there is nothing that he loued, more then me. *Licidas* would haue anſwered, and (it may be) according to his paſſion, more eagerly. But *Diane* laying her hand on his mouth, ſayd vnto him: *Licidas*, *Licidas*, if you receiue not this ſatisfaction, as you haue had reaſon hitherto, ſo may you be blamed as much for being vneſonable. *Aſtrea* not reſting on *Diane* ſpeech, tooke her hand from his mouth, and ſayd: No, no, (wiſe ſhepheardeſſe) reſtraine not *Licidas*, let him vſe all the rigorous words hee pleaueth, I know they be the effects of his iuſt griefe: yet I know well alſo, that therein hee hath no more loſſe then I. *Licidas* hearing theſe words, and the maner in which ſhe deliuereſ them, gaue teſtimony (with his teares) that ſhe had wonne him; and not being able to comauand himſelfe ſo readily, notwithstanding all the deſence that *Phillis* and *Diane* could make, he freed himſelfe from their hands, and went on the other ſide; which *Phillis* perceiuing, that ſhe might haue the whole viſtory, followed, and knew ſo well to repreſent him the diſpleaſure of *Aſtrea*, and the viſtany of *Semire*, that in the end ſhe brought him backe to the company.

But

But in this meane time *Leonide* held on her way to *Fews*, and though she made great haste, yet could she not reach beyond *Pensine*, because she had slept ouer-long: that was the cause that she waked long before day, desirous to returne in good time, that she might stay some-while in her returne with the shepheardesses whom she left; yet durst she not goe vntil the light might shew her the way, for feare of losinge herselue, though she could not possibly close her eyes all the rest of the night. As she lay entertaining her thoughts, and as she was heedfully hearkening, she heard one talke somewhat neere her: for there was but a slight partition that diuided one chamber into two, for that the Master of the house was an honest shepherd, that out of courtesie & the lawes of hospitality, freely intretained al passengers, without enquiring what they were, and because his lodging was scant, he was faine to make that diuision, to make the more chambers. Now when the Nymph came thither, there were two stangers lodged, but because it was late, they were withdrawne already and aslepe, and by fortune the chamber where the Nymph was lodged, was of this sort, and hard by theirs, without heeding it when she lay downe, hearing one murmur hard by her bed (for the beds head stood that way, that she might the better vnderstand) she layd her eare to an open place of the wall: and by chance one of them lifting vp his voyce somewhat higher, she heard that he answer'd the other thus, What would you I shuld say more, but that loue makes you so impatient? And well either she shall be found wearied, or sicke, or distempered with some accident that hath made her stay. And must one despaire for that? *Leonide* thought she knew the voyce, but she could not remember it so well as the other, so soon as he answer'd, But looke you, *Climante*, that is not the thing that puts mee to paine; for her failing shal never hurt me so long as I hope to haue a good issue of our enterprise: that which I feare, and which layes mee on thornes as you see me, is, that you haue not well instructed her in what we deliberated, or else shee gives no credit to your words. *Leonide* hearing this discourse, and knowing him well that spake, astonished and desirous to know more, approched so neere the wall, that she lost one word, and then heard *Climante* answere, God speede me with this man. I haue told you diuers times heretofore, it is impossible. True, said the other, in your judgement. Wel answere *Climante*, to give assurance, and to free you of this paine, I will once more tell you all the cariage.

*The history of the deceit of Climante,*

**A**fter wee were parted, and that you made me know, *Galathée*, *Silvie*, *Leonide* and the other Nymphes of *Amasis*, as well by sight as I vnderstood

derstood before frō the discourse which you had made, I thought that one of the principall things which might serue our purpose, was to know how *Lindamor* would be apparellled at the day of his departure; for you know that *Clidaman* & *Gayemantes* were gone to seek out *Meroue*: *Amasis* commanded *Lindamor* to follow with all the yong knights of that country, to the end that *Clidaman* might be made knowne to *Meroue* to bewhat hee was. And by mis-haps (it seemeth) that *Lindamor* had a purpose to keepe his cloathes more secret then he did before. So it was, that as I went spyng out some occasion, one euening as he was in the midst of the streeete, I heard him command one of his followers to go to the taylor that made his cloathes, to bring him the garment which he had cause d to be made against the day of shew, for that he would assay it: and becau se hee had expresly forbidden him, to let any one see it, he gaue him a ring for a token. I followed this man a far off, to know the lodging, and the morrow after in good time, knowing the name of the taylor, I entred boldly into his house, and told him I came from *Lindamor*, because *Amasis* pressed him to be gone, & that he feared those garments would not be made in time, & that I should not giue credit to that hee should say, but I should see them my selfe to tell him the truth. And then going on, I sayd, he would haue giuen me the ring you wote: but he sayd to me, it would be sufficient that I should tell you, that yester-night hee had sent for the garments, and hee that came to fetch it, brought it you. So I deceiued the taylor, and markt the garments the best I could: and when I made shew of haste, he answered it was time enough, for that, that very day he had seene a letter of *Amasis* in the assembly of the towne, whereby shee ordained they should put themselves in armes within fwe weekes, because that on the day which shee had appointed, shee would haue the assembly in their towne to make the generall muster, which *Lindamor* and his troops were to make, to go to find *Clidaman*; and her wil was, that the next morning you should be receiuied for Generall of this countrey in his absence. By this meanes I knew the day of *Lindamors* departure; and moreover, that you were to stay in this country, which was an accident that fell out very luckily for our designe, thogh you were wel enough informed before. Following this, I drew aside into the great wood of *Sarignies*, where, on the shire of the little riuer that r̄us a-crosse, I made me a cabbinet of boughs, but so close, that many passed by without seeing it; and I concealed it, to the end that men might thinke that I had kept it long for, as you know, no man knew mee in this country: and the better to shew that I had long stayed there, the leaues with which I couered this Lodge, had beene long dry, and then

then I tooke the great glasse which I had caused to be made, which I set on an Altar, which I raised of Hawes and Thornes, mingling them with some herbes, as Veruaine, Suckary, and such other. On the one side, I placed the Guy, which I sayd to bee of Oke: on the other, the serpent of gold, which I fained to haue taken the sixt of the first moone, and in the midſt, the ſheet in which I gathered it: and beſide al these, I hung the glaffe in the darkeſt place, to the end my craft might be the leſſe perceiued: and iuſt ouer-againſt it, but ſomewhaſt higher, I fittē the painted paper, where I had drawne ſo liuely the place which I meant to ſhew Galathée, that there was no body but might know it, and that thoſe which were beneath, iſt they liftē vp their eyſ, might not ſee it: on the ſide where I came in, I enterlaced booughs and leaues in ſuſt fort together, that it was impaſſable; and becauſe, iſt they came on the other ſide, and turned to the contrary, without doubt they had eſpied my craft, I made round about a reaſonable great hedge, where I placed the Cenſers on a row, and forbade every body to goe beyond them. Iuſt before the myrrour there was a table, whereon Hecate was painted; And this table had the lower part of it wrought with Steele, and, as you know, it hung by ſome horſe haireſ, ſo ſlender, that by reaſon of the darkeneſſe of the place, there was none could perceiue theſe: as ſoon as they were drawn away, the table falls, and with the weight ſtrucke with the Steele on a flint, ſo purpoſely placed, that it neuer fayled of ſtriking fire. I had ſet in the ſame place a mixture of brinſtone and Salt-Peter, which ſhould take hold on the fire, in ſuſt ſore, that it would raife a flame with ſuſt ſuddenneſſe, that there was not the man that was not much aſtoniſhed. This I inuened, to make them beſeeue that it was either a diuinity, or an enchantment. So it was, that I found all this ſo well placed, that there was nothing to reforme. After all theſe things, I beganne to let my ſelue be ſene, but very rarely and ſuſtdenly: When I perceiued any man ſaw me, I drew to my Lodge, where I made ſhew to ſuſtayne my life onely with rooteſ, but in the night I went three or four miles off, in oþer habites, to buy me all things neceſſary.

Within ſome few dayes after, they tooke notice of me, and the bruite of my life was ſo great, that it came to the eares of Amasis, who came often to walke in thoſe great gardens of Montbrifon. And among oþers, one time when ſhe was there, Sylo, Silnie, & Leonide, and diuers other of their companions, came walking along my little riuer, where, at that time, I made ſhew to gather herbeſ: as ſoone as I knew they perceiued me, I went a great pace to my cabbin: they that were curiuouſ to ſee mee, and talke with me, followed me to the great trees. I had by this time ſet me on my knees;

knees: But when I heard they approched, I came to the doore, where the firſt that I met with, was Leonide: and for that ſhe was ready to enter, thrue ſting her backe a little, I ſayd to her very rudely, Leonide, the Diuinity which I ſerue, commands you not to profane his Altars. At theſe words ſhe ſtept backe halfe amazeſ: for my habit of a Druyde made them giue me honour, and the name of the Diuinity gaue me feare, and after ſhee was auuerted, ſhe ſaid to me: The Altars of your God, whosoeuer he be, cannot be profaned by receiuing my vowes, ſince I come but to render the honor which heauen demands of vs. Heauen (anſwered I) demands, indeed, vowes and honour, but not diſſering from that they ordaine: ſo that if the zeale of the Diuinity which I ſerue, hath brought you hither, then muſt you obſerue that which it commaunds. And what is his commaundement, ſayd Silnie? Silnie (ſayd I) if you haue the ſame intent that your companion hath, doe you both that which I tell you, and then your vowes ſhall be pleaſing to him. Before the Moone begin to wane, waſh your right leg to the knee before day, and the arme to the elbow, within this riuer that runnes before this holly Caue: And then, the leg and arme being naked, come hither with a garland of Veruaine, and a girdle of Suc-corie; after that I will tell you what you are to doe to be partakers of the ſacred myſteries of this place, which I will open and declare to you. And then taking her by the hand, I ſayd, Will you, for teſtimony of the graces wherewith the diuinity whom I ſerue, fauours me, that I tell you part of your life, and what ſhall befall you? Not I (ſayd ſhe) for I haue no ſuſh curiouſty. But you, my companion (ſayd ſhe) (addressing her ſelue to Leonide) I haue ſene you heretofore diſirous to know it. Now ſatisfie your deſire, I beſeech you (ſayd Leonide) preſenting her hand to me. Then re-remembering that that you told me of theſe Nymphes in particular, I tooke her hand, and asked her, iſt ſhe were borne in the day or night; and knowing that it was in the night, I tooke her lefthand, and after I had ſome-thing conſidered of it, I ſaid, This line of life, clean, wel mark'd, & long, ſhews that you ſhall liue, from the diſeaſes of your body, in good health: but this little croſſe which is in the ſame line, almoſt at height of the angles, which hath two little liues aboue, and three beneath, and theſe three alſo which are at the end of the line of life towards the turning, ſhew in you the diſeaſes which Loue ſhall giue you, which will hinder you from that health of ſpirit, which you haue of body. And theſe five or ſix points, which (like little graineſ) are ſowed heere and there on the ſame line, make me iudge, that you neuer will hate them that loue you, but rather, that you delight to be beloved and ſerued.

Now marke this other line, which takes his root from that we haue al- ready spoken of; and passing through the middle of the hand, lifts it selfe against the mount of the Moone, they call it the naturall Meane: those cuttings that you see, which skant appeare, signifie that you are easily angry with them, ouer whom Loue gives you authority. And this little starre which turnes against the ground of the pulse, shewes that you are full of bountie and sweetenesse, and that quickly you will lose your choler.

But behold, this line which we call *Mensale*, that ioyneth with the meanes naturall (so that they two make one angle) this sheweth you shall haue diuers troubles in plotting for loue, which will make your life some-whiles vnplesasing; which I judge the racher, considering that soone after the meane failes; and that meets with that of life, so that they seeme to be the angle of the *Mensale* and of the other; but this tells mee, that late or never you shall haue the conclusion of your desires. I would haue gone on, when she tooke away her hand, and layd, this was not the thing she demanded; for I speake too much in generall; but she would cleerely know what would become of a dossigne which she had. Then I answered her: The heavenly powers themselves onely know that which is to come: but onely that that by their bounty they give knowledge of to their seruants, and that sometimes for the publike good, sometimes to satisfie the ardent supplication of them that often importune their Altars; and many times to shew, that nothing is hidden from them: and yet it is the part of a wise Interpreter, to tell nothing but what he thinketh necessary, because the secrete of the gods are not to be divulged without cause. I tell you this, that your curiositie might content it selfe, that I haue discoursed with lessie cleerenesse then you desire; for, it is not necessary I should say otherwise vnto you. And that you may know that God is not so sparing of his graces, but that he talketh familiarly with me: I will tell you the things which haue befallne you, by which you may judge how much I know.

In the first place (sayre Nymphs) you know, I never sawe you before, and yet at the first meeting, I called you all by your names; which I did, for that I am willing you shoulde thinke mee to know more then the common sort, not to the end that any glory shoulde befall me (that were too great a presumption) but to the Deity which I serue in this place. Now you must beleue, that all that I shall say to you, I haue learned from the same Master: and in this I lyed not, for it was you, *Polemas*, that told mee it: but becaus (continued I) it may be, the particularities will make me ouer-long, it will not be amisse to place our seruets vnder these nearer trees.

trees. At this word we weng, and then I began againe in this sort. Truly (interrupted *Polemas*) you coulde not carry this beginning with more arte: You will judge (answered *Climanche*) that the proceeding was with no lesse wisedome. I began my speech then in this sort:

Faire Nymph, It may be about three yeeres, that the gentle *Agis* in a full assembly, was giuen you for seruant, at the beginning you were indifferent; for till then, the young yeeres of you both, was the cause that your hearts were not capable of the passions which Loue conceiued: but since that, your beauty in him, and his suite in you, began to kindle, by little & little, these fires, whereof Nature gaue the first sparkes in vs at the houre of our birth, so that that which was indifferent, became particular to you both, and Loue in the end formed it selfe, and was borne in his soule, with all the passions which vnsually accompany it, and in you a good wil, which made you like better of his affection and seruices, then of any other. The first time that in earnest he made his ouverture, was, when *Amasis* going to walke in the faire gardens of *Manbris*, hee tooke you vnder the arme, & after he had stayed somewhile without speech he told you at last, Faire Nymph, it is not for nothing that I dispute in my selfe, whether I shoulde or whether I shoulde not declare that which I haue in my soule; for to dissemble, may bee allowed in that which may sometimes bee changed: but that which constraines mee to speake at this time, shall accompany me even to my Tombie. Here I stayed, and sayd to him, Will you haue me repeat (*Leomide*) the same words whiche you answered? Withoutlie, then (said *Polemas*) you put your selfe into great hazard of being discovered: Not a whit (answered *Climanche*) and to give you proofe of perfection of my memory, I will tell you the very words. But (replied *Polemas*) what if I had forgot to tel them you? Oh (adioyncd *Climanche*) I doubt not of that: but so it is, that the subiect of the words was that that you told me, & she her selfe doth not remember the words theselives: so that out of the opinion that it was a god that had told me, she beleued they were the very same. If you had not bin so familiar with her, as your seruite affection made you, I had not so easily undertaken it: but remembred that you had told mee that you had serued her long, and that service was well accepted of, till the time that you changed affection, and that you are become the seruant of *Galabee*: and namely, that that was the cause, that to do you a displeasure, she held on *Lindum* hard against you. I boldly told her all that had passed at that time, knowing, Loue woulde not suffer that one should conceale any thing, from the person whom they loue. But to come againe to our purpose, she answered, I am willing you shoulde say what you please,

but we will beleue what we list. This she said, as beeing a little pricked with that which shee would shoule haue beeene concealed from her companions. I went on: Well, *Leonides*, you may beleue what you please, for I assure my selfe, that I haue said nothing, which in your soule you haue not found for true. You answered him as seeming not to vnderstand what he would say. You haue reason, *Agis*, not to hide by dissimulation, that which must accompany you so long as you liue; otherwise it beeing impossible but it must be discouered, you shall be taken for a double person, a name which is honourable to no sort of people, but much lesse to them who make the profession that you doe. This counsell then (answred hee) and my passion, constraine mee to tell you (faire Nymph) that neither the iuequality of your merits to me, nor the small good will which I haue found in you, could not hinder my affection nor my boldnesse, that they haue not raysed me vp to you, so that if not the quality of the gift, but the will is to be receiued, I may say with assurance, that none can offer you a greater sacrifice: for that heart which I give you, I giue with all the affections, and with all the powers of my soule: and so all that, which after this deuotion is not found to be yours, I disauow and renounce it as not appertaining to me.

The conclusion was that you answered, *Agis*, I will beleue these words, when the time and your seruices shall haue told me them, as well as your mouth. See the first declaration of amity which you had of him, whereof afterwards he gaue you such proofe, as well by fute hee made to marry you, as by the quarrells which he had against many, whom hee was lealous of. It was at that time, that when you would haue frized your haire, you burnt your cheeke, whereupon he made this verse.

## A SONG

Of *Agis*, on the burning of *Leonides* cheeke.

V V Hile Lome did please himselfe to play,  
Within the gold of your faire haire,  
A sparkle of his fiers rare,  
Unhapply on your cheeke did stay.

You cruell Nymph may iudge theron,  
How sore the smart of fire stings,  
Since that but one small sparke alone,  
So much of dolour with it brings.

Meane

Meane while that your eye forth did dart,  
Whenes with it the conquest goes,  
So many fires against my heare,  
Your cheeke was herte by one of those.

You cruell Nymph may iudge theron,  
How sore the smart of fire stings,  
Since that but one small sparke alone,  
So much of dolour with it brings.

While that my heare, that flaming was,  
To dart as you had purposed,  
His fire that could no further passe,  
Burned your cheeke in your soules sted.

You cruell Nymph may iudge theron,  
How sore the smart of fire stings,  
Since that but one small sparke alone,  
So much of dolour with it brings.

And to make it appeare to you, that I truely know these things by a divinity which cannot lie, whose eie & eare perceeth euен to the depth of the heart, I will tell you a thing on this subiect, that no man could know but you and *Agis*. She was afraid I would discouer some secret which would anger her; and it was my purpose to giue her that apprehension: and that was the cause that she sayd to me (much disquieted) Man of God, though I beleue not but that you and others may say that on this subiect which imports me, yet this discourse is so sensible, that it will bee hard to handle it with so gentle an hand, but the wound will bleed: therefore I beseech you to make an end. She vttered these words with such a change of countenance, and a voyce so broken, that for her better assurance, I was constrained to say, You are not to thinke me of so small a consideration, that I know not how to conceale that which may offend you; nor that I am ignorant, that the least wounds are sensible enough in that part which I touch; for it is to the heart that all these strokes are directed: but because you will know no more, I will hold my peace. And it is time that I goe to the Divinity that calls me. And at that instant I arose, and gaue them the good day. Then after I had made some shewes of ceremonies ouer the riuer, I sayd very loud; O soueraigne Deity! which abidest in this

this place, behold, how with this water I cleanse my selfe, and vncloath me of all the prophaneness which the conuersing among men might leue in me, since I came out of thy holy Temple. At these words I dipped my hands thrice into the water : and then taking vp in the hollow of the one, I receiued it thrice into my mouth, my eyes and hands lifted vp to heauen, and so went to my Cabbin without speaking to them, and because I doubted they had the curiositie to come see what I did, I went before the Altar ; where making a shew to cast my selfe on the ground, I drew out the horse haire, which taking their effect, let the little steele table that stood before the glasse, fall, which fell so to purpose on the flint, that it strucke fire , and instantly tooke hold on the composition which was vnder it, so that the flame burst forth so suddainely, that the Nymphs which were at the doore, seeing at the first the Mirrour glister, and presently the fire so suddaine and violent , tooke such a feare, that they returned with great opinion both of my holinessse, & of the respect to the diuinity which I serue. Could this beginning bee better cartied then it was? No certaintie (answered *Polemias*) and I thinke well, for my part, that euery body which had not knowne of it before, might be easily deceipted.

While *Climanthe* talked thus, *Leonide* harkened to it, so rauished from her selfe, that she knew not whether she slept or waked: for she saw well, that all that he told her, was very true, yet could she not well belieue that it was so; and while she disputed in her selfe, she heard *Climanthe* beginne againe. Now these Nymphs went away, and I could not know what report they would give of me, yet by conjecture, there was no likeli-hood, but they would tell to every one the admirable things which they had seene, and as renowne increases alwaies, the Court was full of nothing but of me. And at that time I had much adoe to continue my enterprise, for an infinite company came to see mee ; some of curiositie, others to be instructed, and many to know, if that which they talked of me was so: And I was driven to vse great cunning. Sometimes to auoyd them, I gaue out that that day was a mute day for the Deity that I serued; another time, that some body had displeased it , and that it would not answer vntill I had appeased it by fasting: another tyme, I set downe conditions for the ceremonies which I caused to vse , which they could not performe without some good time : and sometimes when all was finished, I found matter to say , that either they had not well obserued all , or that they had done too much or too little; and so I made them begin againe, and went waining time. As for them whom I knew any thing by , I dispatched them quickly, and that was the cause, that others desirous to know as much

much as the former , submitted themselves to what I would. Now during that time, *Anasis* came to see mee, and with her *Galathee*. After I had satisfied *Anasis* about that which she demanded , which was in summe , to know what the voyage should be that *Clidaman* had vndertaken, and I had told her, that he should runne an happy fortune, that hee should be wounded, and be in thre bagges with the Prince of France, but that in the end, he should reueue with all sort of honour and glorie : she went from me wonderfully contented, and desired mee to commend her sonne to the Deity which I serued. But *Galathee* much more curious then her mother, drawing me aside, said ; Father, bind me, in telling me, what you know of my fortune. Then I said, she should shew me her hand: I stood looking on it some-while , and made her scratch thrice vpon the ground: and having set the left foote forward , I turned her towards the East, and there made her looke vpward. I took the measure of her foote, and of her hand; after that, the compasse of her necke : and with that measure I measured the girdle, in height ; and in the end , looking at once on both her hands, I said, *Galathee*, you are happy, if you knew your houre, & thrice-happy, if you let it not passe, either out of coldnes, or for loue, or want of courage. But if you make not your self incapable of that good whereto heauen hath destinated you , you can not wish to attaine to more happiness , and all that good, or all that euill is prepared you by loue. Be aduised then to take firme resolution, not to suffer your selfe to be intangled with the perswasions of Loue, nor the counsell of friends, nor commandement of parents; which vnsesse you do, I thinke there is not any thing vnder heauen so miserable as you shalbe. O God ! said *Galathee*, you amaze me.

Be not amazed, said I: for that which I tell you, is but to your good, and that you may carry your selfe with all wisedome , I will discouer vnto you all that the Diuinity that instructed me shal permit; but remember to keepe it so secret, that you trust no liuing creature with it. After shee had promised mee , I continued in this sort : Daughter, for the office whereunto the gods haue called mee . (suffer me so to name you.) you are, and shall be serued of many great and worthy Knights, whose vertues and merits may diuersly excite and moue you ; but if you shall measure your affection, either by your merites , or by the iudgement you shall haue of their loue and fauour, and not according to that that I shall declare vnto you , you fill your selfe as full of misfortune, as any creature out of the graces and fauours of the gods may in any wise bee. For I which am the Interpreter of their will and pleasure, in telling you this,

this, I take from you all excuse of ignorance, so that now you are disobedient to them, if you doe contrary; and you know, that the heauens rather demand obedience and submissiōn, rather then any other sacrifice: and therefore bethinke your selfe well of what I am to tell you. That day that the Bacchanals runne thōtōw the streets raging and storming, full of the Euthusiasme of their god, you must be in the towne of *Marselles*, where many gallant Knights shall see you. But take good heed to him that is clothed with cloth of gold, and greene, and whose whole suite shall be of that colour: if you loue him, I henceforth bewayle your misfortune, and you cannot say other, but that you shall be the marke of all disasters, and of all misfortune, for you shall then feel that which I may not tell you. Father, answered she (somewhat astonished) I know a good remedy for this, not to loue at all. My childe (replied I) this remedy is very dangerous, for that, not onely you may displease the gods, in doing that which they will not, but also, in not doing that which they will. Therefore take heed to your selfe. And how (replied she) must I behau my selfe? I haue told you heretofore (answered I) what you ought not to doe: at this time I will tell you what you ought to do.

It is necessary in the first place, that you know that all things corporall or spiritual, haue every one their contraries, and their sympathisants, from the least we may come to the prooſe of the greatest: but for the knowledge which you ought to haue, this discourse may be unprofitable; and, this that I say to you, is to no other end, but to cauſe you glorie the better heed, that as you haue this misfortune contrary to your happiness, so haue you a destiny so capable of making you happy, that your felicity can not be expressed; and in this the gods will recompence that, to which they haue subiect you. Since it is so (answered she) I coniure you, faſher, by the Diuinity which you ſerue, to tell me what it is? It is (sayd I) another man, whom if you eſpouse, you ſhall haue with all the happiness that a mortall may haue. And who is he? Presently answered *Galathée*: Fayre Nymph, that which I ſpeak, commeth not from my ſelfe, but from *Hecate*, whom I ſerue. So that if I ſay no more, think not it commeth from want of will, but it is because ſhe hath not, as yet, diſcovered it vnto me.

But if you haue a longing, obſerue the things that I ſhall tell you, and you ſhall know what ſhall be necessary. For though the gods do good to men that please them liberally; yet will they be knowne to be gods, and the ſacrifices of mortals delight them as acknowledgements which they give, not to be unthankfull for the benefits received. After ſome other talke

talke, this Nymph, being much prouoked, ſayd vnto me, that ſhe desired no more, and that ſhee would obſerue all that which I ſhould ordayne. Now is time, at this instant (ſayd I) for the Moone is at the full, or little wanting; and if you ſuffer it to wane, you can doe no more. And then I gaue her the ſame commaundement, which I had done before to *Silvia* and *Leonide*, to wash before day in the next riuier, the legge and the arme, and to come in that ſort, with a garland of Veruine, and a girdle of Suc- cory, before this caue, and that I would prepare things neceſſary for the ſacrifice: but there muſt be care that thofe which be preſent, be in other ſtare then ſhe. Well, ſaid ſhe, I will come with two of my Nymphs, and that ſo ſecretly, that no man ſhall know of it; but take heed you ſpeake not before them, ſo that they take knowledge of this affaire, for they will labour to diuert me. I was much eafed at this aduertisement, hauing had the ſame feare; ſo that ſeeing her to haue ſuch prouidence, I iudged ſhe had a purpoſe to follow my aduice, otherwise ſhe would neuer haue bene ſo carefull. Then went ſhe away, with aſſurance to returne the third day after. Now that which made me ſay, that it muſt be before the Moone wane, was, that if any others came to importune me in the like things, I might finde excuse by the wane of the Moone, and ſo I ſaid, it muſt be before day, that there muſt be the fewer persons: and for the day of Bacchanals, I made account, that it would be the day when *Lindamor* was to take his leau of *Amasis* at *Marselles*, and conſequently, of her, and that he ſhould be clad in greene. Now all theſe things thus reſolved and prepared, I gaue order to prouide that which ſhould be needfull for the ſacrifice which we were to make the third day. For though I knew not that my ſtory very well, yet muſt I make my ſelfe ſeeme expert therein, that they that were better acquainted with it, might find nothing to gaineſay. You know, that from the beginning we had made our preparation, and we had gaue order to prouide all that was neceſſary.

The morning being come, the day beganne ſcarce to peape, before I found her in ſtare. I ordayne her with *Silvia* and *Leonide*, and without fiction, I wished them, that you had bene there, to haue enjoyed contentment, to behold that faire, whose haire (at the pleasure of the winde) hung wauing about vncouered; but with a Garland of Veruine you ſhould haue ſene that arme naked, and that legge white like Alabaster, all full & polished, ſo that there was no appearance of bone; the thigh, long and ſtreight, the foote ſmall and fine, which ſlaame those of *Theris*. I muſt tell you true, I delayed the time the more, that I might the better behold thofe beauties; ſo that I told them that they were to perfume all

their body with Incense, mixed with brimstone, that the visions and deli-  
ties of *Stix* might not offend them, and shewed them a fit place for that  
purpose, somewhat remoued aside, where they could hardly be seene.

Vpon the winding of the next hill, whose feete this little riuer waters, there groweth a Boxe tree, spreading branch vpon branch, with diuers leaues, whose twigges having never beeene fownded with any toole, be-  
cause that wood is dedicated to *Diana*, the one reaching and shaddowing  
the one the other; so that hardly can the Sunne pierce thorow, either at  
his rising or setting, and at noone, a kinde of twi-light compasseth it or-  
dinarily.

This place thus fit, encouraged them, but much more the curiositie of  
knowing what they desired. Then after they had taken the perfumes ne-  
cessary, they went to vnclath themselues all three. And I, which well  
knew the place, stepping ouer the riuer, camme on the other side where they  
were, and had the commodity to see them naked. Without faining, I he-  
ver in my life saw any thing so beautifull: but among all, I found *Leonide*  
admirable; what for the proportion of her body, what for the whitenesse  
of her skyn, or soundnesse of complexion, she surpassed them much: so as  
I condemned you as a man vnexpett in beauties, for leaving her for *Ga-  
lathes*, who in trut h hath some good fauour in her face; but for the rest, so  
poorly sorting with that she would see me, that in reason she may call her  
selfe an abuser. O God *Chloris* be than (said *Polemias*) with can heare one  
speake thus of her he loued? If you will please me, leue these banes, and  
hold on your discourse, for there is great difference, if you compare *Leonide*'s  
face with *Galathes*. In this said *Climantibus* you may haue some reaso,  
but belue me that knowe it by sight, the face of *Leonide* is that which is  
least beautifull in all her body: Then would I comfobles (said *Polemias*),  
all in choler) to hider her face, and to shew what she hath more beautifull.  
But see you, you had your eyes so troubled with the darknesse of this  
place, and your minde so wholly on your enterprise, that hardly can you  
shew any good judgement. But let this ge by, and on with your dis-  
course, I pray you. *Leonide*, that heard all this talke, seeing with what ill  
dame *Polemias* spake of her, grew so much displeased with him, that neither  
since she could pardon him and on the contrary, thought shee wished euill  
to the impostures of *Climantibus*, yet loued she him in some sort, when shee  
heard him praise her: for there is nothing that more wins a maid, then  
the commendation of her beauty, and especially, when she is out of suspi-  
cion of flattery. While she was in these thoughts, shee heard him goe on  
thus: Now chiefe faire Nymphs, I came back to mee, and found mee  
before

before my Caue, where I made a ditch for the Sacrifice: for that presently  
when they beganne to cloath themselues, I returned and had the leasure  
to make a good party. I digged a trench some foure foote about, and then  
I made threec fires about it, with Incense of Smallage and Poppey, and  
with a Censer I perfumed the place three times about, and as often my  
Cabbins, and then I couered the body with Veruine, and made every  
one of them a Crowne of Poppeys, and put in their mouth some salt,  
which I made them chew. Afterwards, I tooke three black Heyfers,  
and the fairest that I could choose, which had never beeene knowne of the  
Ram, whose haire black and long was like silke, it was so soft and pleasant:  
I draue these beasts, without felling, to the ditch, where turning me to the  
East side, I took hold on them on the head with my left hand, and with my  
right, I tooke the haire which grew betweene the hornes, and put it into  
the Cruze, mingling it together with milke, flowre, wine, and honey; and  
after I had four times called *Hecate*, I thrust the knife into the heart of  
the Beasts, one after another, and saued the blood in a basin, and then cal-  
ling againe on *Hecate*, I poured it by little and little. Then thinking there  
remained nothing to doe more, I raysed my selfe on tip-toe, and doing  
like one transported, I said to the Nymphs, It is time, and taking *Gala-  
thes* by the hand, we entered all four in. I was made gastly, I looked sta-  
ring, mane eyes rowling in my head, my mouth gaping, and my body sha-  
king with the holy Eutheusiasene. Being neere the Altar, I said, O holy  
Deity, which abidest in this place, grant mee, that I may answere this  
Nymph truely, about that which she demands. The place was darke, and  
there was no light, but that which two little candles gaue, which were  
burning on the Altar; and the morning, which by this time was cleere,  
gaue a little light to the painted paper, that it might be the better repre-  
sented in the Looking-glaſſe. After I had said some words, I fell on the  
ground, and hol ding downe my head some while, I raysed it, and turning  
to *Galathes*, I saul, Nymph, beloued of heauen, thy vroes and thy sacri-  
fices are received; the Deity which we haue called on, wils, that by sight,  
and not onely by the eare, thou shouldest know where thou art to finde  
thy good. Come neere this Altar, and say after me, O great *Hecate*, which  
art resiant at the Lake of *Stix*, let the dog with three heads not bark  
at thee, when thou descendest; so let these Altars awakes snoake with  
pleasing Sacrifices, as I promise every yeare to charge them with the  
like, prouided, great Goddess, that by thec I may see that which I desire.

At this last word I touched the horse haire, wherewith the little table  
hung, which falling, and nothing hindering it from striking on the flint,  
made

made the fire accustomed, with a flame so quicke, that *Galathes* was surprised with feare. But I held her, and sayd; Nymph, be not afraid, this is *Hecate*, who shewes you that which you demaund. Then the smoke, by little and little, vanishing, the Looking-glass might be seene, but somewhat troubled with the darkenes of the smoke, which was the cause, that taking a wet spunge which hung by for that purpose vpon a Cane, I wiped twice or thrice on the Glasse, which made it cleere; and by fortune, the Sunne rose at that time, shining so fitly on the painted paper, that it shewed so lively in the Glasse, as I could wish. After they had beheld it some-while, I sayd to *Galathes*: Remember (Nymph) that *Hecate* makes thee know by me, that in that place which thou feest represented in this myrrour, thou shalt finde a Diamond hafse lost, which a faire and ouer-scornefull hath dis-esteemed, thinking it to be falle, and yet it is of inestimable valem: take it, and keepe it curiously.

Now this riuier is *Lignon*, this is *Sanlag* which is there, this is the coast of *Mons-verdun*, vnder that hill, where it seemed the riuier had his course heretofore. Marke well the place, and remember it. Afterwards, leading the Nymph aside, I sayd: My childe, you haue (as I haue told you) an influence infinitely malicious, and another most fortunate as one would wish; the malicious I haue told, keepe you from it, if you loue your contentment. The good is that which you see in this Glasse: marke then well the place which I haue caused you to see: and that you may the better remember it, after I haue done speaking to you, returne to see it, and note it well: for the day that the Moone shall be in the same stace that it is in now, about this very houre, or a little sooner or later, you shall find him whom you ought to loue. If he see you before you see him, he shall loue you, but hardly shall you loue him: on the contrary, if you see him first, he shall haue somewhat to doe to loue you, and you shall presently loue him. Now must you, by your wisedome, overcome this contrariety; resolve then, both to vanquish your selfe, and him (if need be,) for without doubt, in time, you shall hit on him: if you find him not the first time, returne the next Moone after at the same day, about the same houre; and do so the third time, if you meeete him not at the second. *Hecate* will not make the day certaine to me.

It please the gods to mixe paine in that they giue vs, that obedience which herein we render them, may witnesse how we esteeme them. Then taking a little sticke, I came to the looking glasse, and pointed with it to every place. Behold (sayd I) the mountaine of *Sentre*, see the *Mont-verdun*, see the riuier of *Lignon*. Here see you a lake on the shorke of it there, and

Lib. 5.  
and a little lower *le Pre*: you may well remember it, hauing passed often that way as you hunted. Now, Nymph, *Hecate* sends you word by me, that if you obserue not that which she sets down to you, as you haue promised her, she wil augment the mis-fortune which the Destinies threaten. And then a little changing my voyce, I sayd, And I am right glad, that before my departure I haue bin so happy too, as to giue you this aduise: for though I be not of this country, yet so it is, that your vertue, and your piety to the gods, haue bound mee to loue you, and to beseech *Hecate* that she would preserue and make you happy; and by this you may see I am wholy belonging to that goddesse, since she, hauing commanded mee to depart hence, to morrow without gaine-saying I am resolued, and bid you adieu. At this word I led them out of my cabbin, & taking from them the herbes I had set about them, I burnt them in the fire, which as yet was flaming, and then withdrew my selfe.

I will now tell you, whyl I said, It was at the full moone, for you were angry that I gaue her so long terme: I did it, to the end that *Lindamor* might bee gone before shee went, there being no likelihood that *Amasis* would suffer her before: and then, you that were to take the charge of all the Province, must haue some time to stay about *Amasis*, after the going away of all the knights, to beginne to set things in order; whereas if so presently you should haue gone to hunt, every one might haue murmured: for you know how much a man that deales in matters of state, is subiect to enuie and slander. I gaue three moones after, to the end that if you falle one day, you might be there another. I told her, that if shee saw you first, that shee should easily fall in loue with you; that if it were you, it should be otherwise: and that only, because I knew well that you should see her first: so that shee should find this difficulty of Loue true in her selfe; for as you know, she loued *Lindamor*. I told her I must bee gone the next day, that shee should not thinke it strange, if shee came to seeke me out for some curiositie: for hauing performed that which wee resolute on, I had reason to make haste, that I might not bee knowne of any *Druide*, who would haue caused me to bee punished, and you know well, that hath alwayes bene my feare. Thinke you, I haue forgot any thing? No certaintie, sayd *Polemas*: but what might that be, that hath kept her backe so long time? For my part (sayd *Climanthe*) I know not, except it bee, for that shee hath mis-taken the daies of the moone: but since no busynesse presles you, and you may yet stay here the time that I haue set her, I would aduise you to do it, and euery morning two dayes before, and after, you faile not to goe in good time; for it is true, that the first day wee were too late. And what

what will you (sayd *Polemas*) that I should do? The losse of the shepheard that drowned himselfe, was the cause: and you know, the shore of the riuere was so full of folke, that I could not stay there alone without suspition: but wee haue not foreflowed much, and there is no likelihood that shee was there that day: for I assure my selfe, that the same occasion which hindred me, hath likewise stayd her, lest she shuld be seen. You shal never perswade mee so, (replied *Climanthe*) shee was too desirous to obserue that which I appointed. But it seemes to be time to rise that you may be gone: and then opening the windowes, he saw the day breake. Without doubt (sayd he) before you be at the place where you shuld be, the houre will be past: make haste; for it is better to haue many houres to spare, then a momēt too short. And will you (sayd *Polemas*) that wee go now, being more then 15. dayes since the time is past? It may be, she hath reckoned wrong; let vs not faile to finde her. *Leonide*, who feared to be seene either of *Polemas* or *Cimanthe*, durst not rise before they were gone: and that shee might know the face of *Cimanthe*, when it was day, she beheld him so, that shee thought it impossible hee could disguise himselfe to her: and as soone as she saw they were out of the house, she dressed her selfe, and hauing taken leaue of her hoast, held on her ioyage so confused in her selfe, at the malitious impostures of these two persons, that she thought any other might as well bee deceipted as shee: so it was, that the small esteeme which *Polemas* made of her beauty, strucke her so to the quicke, that she resolued to prevent his malice with her wisedome, and so worke so, that *Lindamor*, in his absence, might not seale the effects of this treason, which she thought she could not better do, then by the meane of her vncle *Adamas*, to whom she had a purpose to declare all that she knew. In this resolution she hasted to go to *Fews*, where she thought to find him, but she came too late for that morning hee was gone home-wards, hauing the day before dispatched that which belonged to the sacrifice. And the Sun began to wax hot, by that time he came into the plaine of *Mons-Verdun*: and because on the left hand he perceiued a tuft of trees, which as he thought, gaue a louely shaddow, hee turned his step thither to rest himselfe a little. As soone as hee was there, hee spied afar off a shepheard comming, that seemed to seeke out that place for the same cause that brought him: and because hee seemed to bee very sad when hee came, lest hee might draw him from his thought, hee would not salute him, but without shewing himselfe to him, he would harken whil he went talking to himselfe: and shortly after he was set down on the other side of the bush, he heard him vse these words, *And why should I loue this fletter? In the first place her beauty cannot* constrainc

constraine me: for it is not enough to giue her the name offaire, and then her merits are not such, as if they be not ayded with other considerations, may hold an honest man in her seruice: and lastly, her loue, which was all that bound me to her, is so changeable, that if she haue any impression of loue in her hart, I think, it be not only of wax, but of wax newly wrought, she so easily takes the figures of al nouelties; and it is like her eyes, that receiue the figures of all that is represented to them, but lose them, as soone as the obiect is no more before them, that is, I loue her, I must avow, it is because I thinke shee loues mee: but if it be not so, I excuse her, for I know well, she thinks she loues me. This shepheard had gone on, but a shepheardesse by fortune came to him, who seemed to haue followed him afar off; and though shee heard some words of her selfe, yet made she no shew, but now contrary sitting downe by him, shee sayd, *Well, Corilas, what new care is this that makes you so sad?* The shepheard answered her as disdainfully as hee could, without turning his head on that side: It is that which makes me search, with what new deceit you will beare them, whom from this time you shall beginne to loue. And why, sayd the shepheardesse, can you beleue that I affect any other then you? And you, sayd the shepheard, can you beleue that I thinke you affect me? What thinke you then of me, sayd the shepheardesse? All the worst (answered *Corilas*) that you can beleue from a man whom you hate. You haue (added she) strange opinions of me. And you (said *Corilas*) strange effects in you. O God (sayd the shepheardesse) what a man haue I found in you? It is I (answered the shepheard) that with more reason may retort it on you, *Stelle*, what a woman haue I found: for there is nothing more capable of loue the you, you, I say, who take no delight but to deceiue those that trust in you, and who imitate the huntsman, who pursueth the beast with such care, whose heart afterwards he giues to his dogs. You haue, said shee, so small reason in that you say, as he should haue lesse that will stay to answere you. I would to God (said the shepheard) I might alwayes haue as much in my soule, as I haue now in my words, I should not haue that sorrow that afflicts me. And after they had both held their peace awhile, she raised her voyce, and spake, singing to him in this sort, & he likewise, that she might not want answer, replied.

A Dialogue betweene *Stelle* and *Corilas*.

S T E L L A.

V V *Hast thou then, my shepheard bee,*  
*For want of an inconstant loue?*

C O R I L A S.

*To follow your quicke spirit free,*  
*Requires a wing nimble to borne,*

Much

## The History

Much rather then a courage high,  
To follow you were foolery.

S T E L.

You have not alwaies thought it so;  
That loving me is such a crime.

C O R.

Speake not of times past long ago,  
He limes not well, mends not in time.  
Nothing returns that's past before,  
And I remember it no more.

S T E L.

What's this, but not so know to lome,  
Yes bring the contrary thereto?

C O R.

Wherfore will you no se reprove,  
For that your selfe knowes not to do?  
You lome out of opinion,  
And not out of election.

S T E L.

I lome you, and will lome you still,  
Though your lome chang'd be in this wise.

C O R.

Mind me, no change I never will:  
Her, where my fante engag'd lies.  
Thinke not, that evry day like you,  
I change my old lome for a new.

S T E L.

What, are you then resolued, tell,  
To secke a lome that's fresh and rare?

C O R.

If heretofore you pleas'd me well,  
I judg'd you, then to be more faire,  
But now in very deed I see,  
Your beautey in a poore degree.

S T E L.

Will you unfaulfull bring to nought,  
An amity that was so great?

C O R.

You charge me with your owne defaute,  
Somethys amysde be, when you have

## Lib. 5.

## Lib. 5.

## Of Afric.

But you may say what fitt your brabes:  
The thing that was, comes not againe.

S T E L.

But if you loued me indeed,  
What makes you then so soone to stard?

C O R.

When one his errorr better beedes,  
To change his minde, is wisedomes part:  
It's better to repente, though late,  
Then still to hold a wantering gate.

S T E L.

Can neither duty nor yet honor,  
Know such an humor to subdue?

C O R.

What if I can see in you more,  
That may this amity renew,  
Wherin your fainings snared me,  
Which I mistooke so sillily?

S T E L.

I may (you see) for my retenga,  
Another lome, and not be loued.

C O R.

Rights seeme of such disease to change,  
Shall heale me, as in yours I proued:  
And if I then do otherwise,  
I must haue lost my Iudgements eies.

S T E L.

Hast you then no kind of remorse,  
For so greas infidelity.

C O R.

I haue promissh, that lome offorce,  
She owes me hers that asketh me,  
But you may aske and make your mane,  
All Lome twixt vs is dead and gone.

The shepheardeesse seeing hee stood not without reply to her demands,  
leaving to sing, said: And why, Corillas, is there no more hope in you? No  
more (said he) then faithfulness in you; and thinke not that your fained  
nor fayre words can change my resolution. I am too much grounded in  
this

this opinion, so that it is in vaine for you to try your armes against mee, they are too feble, I feare their blowes no more: I counsell you to proue them on others, whose knowledge may make them misprize them as I haue done. It cannot be but you shall finde some, whom the heauens (to punish some secret fault) haue ordained to loue you, and they shall be the more pleasing to you, for that noueltie delights you aboue all things. At this bout, the shepheardesse was stung in earnest: but sayning to turne the offence into laughter, she said as she was going away, I make good sport, *Corilas*, both at your selfe and your choler, we shall see you shortly in your good humour. In the meane time, be content that I patiently suffer your fault, which you cast on me. I know ( replied the shepheard ) it is your custome to make sport with them that loue you. But if the humor which I haue, last, I assure you, you may longer play vpon me, then on a man that shall loue you. So parted these two enemies; and *Adamas*, who had heard them, hauing knowledge by their names, of the families of which they were, was desirous to know more of their affaires: and calling *Corilas* by his name, made him tyne to him; and because the shepheard seemed to be astonished at this surprize, for the respect which is had to the habite and quality of a Druyde, that he might be more assured, he caused him to sit downe by him, and then talked thus vnto him: My childe, (for so I may call you) for the loue I haue alwayes borne to them of your family, there is no cause you shoulde be sorry for your speaking so freely to *Stelle* before me. I am glad that I haue seen your wisedome: but I desire to know more, that I may the better counsell you in this affaire, that thereby you may commit no errour. And for me, I know not that ther shoulde be any difficulty, since the lawes of coiuility and curtesie do more binde me (it may be) then you may imagine. As soone as *Corilas* had the sight of the Druyde, he knew him well, hauing often seen him at divers sacrifices; but hauing never spoken to him, he had not the boldnesse to tell thoro wout what had passed between *Stelle* and him, though he much desired, that every one might know the iustice of his cause, and the vnfaitfulness of this shepheardesse: which *Adamas* perciuing, that he might encourage him, gaue him to understand, that he knew a good part already, and that many had reported it to his wrong, which hee heard with no great pleasure, for the loue he had alwaies borne to his. It will (said *Corilas*) be losse of time for you to heare the particularities of our villages. So far is it (replied he:) it shalbe a great satisfaction, to know that you haue not heene wronged; and besides, I meane to passe away some part of the heate here, and so the time may be employed.

Since you command it so (said the shepheard) I must beginne my discourse somewhat higher. It is a good while since *Stelle* remained the widdow of an husband whom the heauens had giuen her, rather for name sake, then effect; for besides that he was sickly, his age, which drew neer to 75. yeeres, so weakened his forces, that it constrained him to leaue this young widdow, almost before she was truly married: the loue she bare him, wrought in her no great feeling of his losse, no more did her humor, which was never wonted to take neere to heart, the accidents that befell her. Remaining then well satisfied in her selfe, so see her selfe freed at one blow, of two so heauy burthenes; to wit, the importunity of an angry husband, & the autority which her parens accustomed to haue ouer her, presently she thrust her selfe in good earnest, into the world: and though her beauty such as you see, bee not of that sort that may tempt men to loue her, yet her behaviour, for the most part, displeased not them that saw her. She might be about 17. or 18. yeeres: an age fit enough to commit many follies when they be at liberty. This was the cause, that *Saliam* her brother, an honest and wise shepheard, and one of the best friends I had, not able to indure her licentious and vnuall behaviour, that he might deprive her of such occasions, resolued to send her farre from her *Hamlet*, and place her in such company, where shee might passe her more dangerous age without reproach. For effecting this, he prayed *Cleanthe* to like well, that she might be a companion to his little daughter, *Aminthe*, because they were about an age, though *Stelle* were some deale older. And because *Cleanthe* liked well of it, they began a life so priuate and so familiar, that these two shepheardeesses were never the one without the other, many wondering, that being so differing in humor, they could be so straitly ioyned; but the sweete behaviour of *Aminthe*, and the supple nature of *Stelle*, caused it, and so *Aminthe* never withstanded the deliberations of her companion, and *Stelle* never found euill in what *Aminthe* willed. In this sort they liued with such priuacy, that there was nothing hidden betweene them. But at last, *Liss*, the sonne of shepheard *Genetian*, leauing the frosty places of *Mount. Lune*, descended into our plaines, where hauing seen her in a general assembly, which was had at the Tēple of *Venus*, just ouer-against *Mount. Sue*, then when *Astrea* got the prize for beauty: he grew so amorous of her, that I cannot tell whether he be in his graue; and she found him so to her liking, that after many voyages, and many messages,

messages, their affections were so forward, that *Lysis* beganne to talke of marriage, whereto shee made as good an answer as he could desire. In this space *Salius* was constrained to make a long journey, so that hee knew nothing of this treaty: besides that, shee had now taken so great authority ouer her selfe, that shee would impart none of her affaers to him. On the other side, *Aminthe* seeing her so soon resolved on this marriage, many times asked her, if it were in good earnest, and it seemed fit, in a matter of so great importance, to be well aduised. Trouble not your selfe, said she, I will easily dispatch this businesse. Hereupon *Lysis*, who serued with great eagernesse, set downe a day assigned, to make the assembly, and put himselfe to the expences vsuall in such occasions, holding his marriage most assured: but the accustomed humour of many women, to make no man master of their liberty, letted her from going on with her former purpose, which shee endeououred to breake, by demands most vnseasonable, that shee thought the parents and friends of *Lysis* would never give their consent. But the loue which he bare her, being stronger then all difficulties, she was (in the end) constrained to breake it, without other cloke, then the smalnesse of her good will. If *Lysis* were offended, you may iudge, receiuing so great a wrong: yet could he not drive away this loue, but he would be the conquerour. And, I remember, that vpon this discourse he made these verses, which since (when we were friends) hee gaue me.

A SONNET  
On a despight of Loue.

**D**espight, weake Warrior, captaine audacious,  
That leadst me to the field, Under so feble armes,  
Against a Loue so arm'd with arrowes, and with charmes,  
Loue so accustomed to be victorius,

If Loue but of his wing (when first alarme appears)  
Doe melt the Icicles which fill mine eyes like rhume,  
What will the fires doe, which even the gods consume,  
And which bears downe mannes by torrent of their teares?

I mercy come to cry, vanquish me, I beare my hands,  
Swooping unto her yoke, that so abundane stands,  
Whiche of shins owne defens shall much encrease the glory.

Fox

For safetie I doe wish that pitty arrowe prove,  
And of my shepheardeesse if shee prouoke the Loue,  
My blood, my triumph, be my death my victory.

That which caused this change in *Stello*, was a new affection, which the wrong of a shepheard called *Semire*, bred in her soule, whereof *Lysis* was the last that knew it, because shee kept it rather from him then any other. This shepheard, amongst all the men that euer I sawe, is the greatest dissembler, and most crafty, otherwise an honest man, and a person that had many louely parts in him, which gaue occasion to this shepheardeesse to refuse (contrary to promise) the alliance of *Lysis*, setting that in place of a fauour to her new louer, who yet triumphed not long in this victorie. For it fell out, that *Esperander* making an assembly for the mariage of his daughter *Olympe*, *Lysis* and *Stello* were called thither: and because wee were neare of kinne, *Olympe* and I, I would not sayle to be there. I know not if it were the reuenge of loue, or the inconstant nature of the shepheardeesse, by her vncertaine carriage, brought it about where shee was party: so it was, that as soone as shee sawe *Lysis* againe, shee tooke a fancie to recall him: and to effect it, forgot none of those allurements, wherein Nature had beene vnwisely prodigall vnto her. The displeased courage of the shepheard gaue him armour enough, not to loue her, but onely to hide his affection.

In the end, towards euening, that euery one is busied, either in dancing, or in entertaining the person he likes best of, shee followed him in such sort, that thrusting him against a window, from which he could not honestly escape, he was constrainyd to sustaine the forces of his enemie. On the other side, *Semire*, who had alwayes his eye on her, hauing marked the pursutes that shee made all that euening to this shepheard, following the nature of every louer, beganne to let some ialousie breed in his soule, knowing well, that the Candle lately put out, will easily be lighted againe; and seeing that shee had shoued him vp against the window, that he might heare what shee sayd to him; making shew of talking with some other, he came so neare her, that he heard her aske him, why he did fly from her so mainely. Truly (sayd *Lysis*) this is a strange kinde of pursuing me, and with too brazen a brow. But though I know (sayd *Stello*) whence these iniuries grow, it may be, that hearing me, and iudging without passion, all the wrong will not lie on that side you thinke. For Gods sake (answred *Lysis*) shepheardeesse, leue me in peace, and let it suffice, that these iniuries proceed from the hatred I beare you, and the occasion of my hatred from

from your ficklenesse, which makes it iustifiable, that may it please heauen, that he that hath done all the wrong, may likewise feele all the displeasure. But let vs treade all these things vnder foote, and lose you as well the memory, as I haue lost the will to loue you. I understand (answering *Stolle*) whence your anger growes; and indeede you haue reason to carry your selfe in this maner. Behold, I beseech you, the great wrong which is done, not to take one for an husband, as soone as he is tendered. Is it not the custome, alwayes to make a demand twice? Indeed, if I had not taken you at a word, I had done you great wrong. But how apparent is it to refuse a manso constant, that had loued me but three moneths? *Lysis* seeing before his eyos, that which her outrage would not suffer him to loue, and which his loue would not permit him to hate, knew not with what words to answer her: yet to interrupt this torrent of words, he said, *Stolle*, it is sufficient we haue long since proued, that you do know better what to say, then to do, and that words flow highest in your mouth, when reason in you is at the lowest ebbe. But, hold that which I tell you for in-violable; as much as I haue heeretofore loued you, so much at this houte do I hate you: and there shal never be day of my life, that I will not proclame you for the most vngratefull and deceitfull wotman that is vnder heauen.

At this word, offering violence to his affection, and the arme of *Stolle*, wherewith she leaned on the wall, to keepe him in against the window, he left her alone, and went amongst the other shepheards, that (for that time) warranted him against his enemy. *Semire* (as I told you) heard all this discourse, and remayned so astonied, and so ill satisfied with her, that from that time, he resolued never to make account of a spirit so flitting. And that which yet gaue him more will, was, that by chance, hauing long sought occasion to speake to her; and seeing *Lysis* had left her alone, I went to her: for I must confess, that her allurements and trickes had more force in my soule, then the wrong she had done to *Lysis*: had given me knowledge of the imperfection of her spirit; and as every man goes flattering his desires, I went fancyng, so that that which the merits of *Lysis* could not obtaine of her, my good fortune might procure me. So that, so long as his wooing lasted, I would never let my affection appeare; for besides the kindred that was betweene him and me, there was a very strait amity: but when I sawe that he went off, thinking the place to be voyd (I never tooke heed to the suite of *Semire*). I thought it to some purpose to discouer somwhat to her, rather then to attend till she had another designe. So then, addressing my selfe to her, and seeing her very pensive, I sayd,

sayd, It must needs be some great occasion which made her so changed, for this sadness was not vsuall to her quicke humour. It is the rage of *Lysis* (answered she) that will alwayes remember the time passed, and walkes reproching me, for the refusall I made of him. And that, said I, shall it grieue you? It cannot be otherwise, answered she, for we cannot put off our affection, as we may our smocke. And he takes in so euill part my delay, that he alwayes calleth it a farewell. Traly (sayd I) *Lysis* deseruies not the honour of your good graces, since that, not being able to winne them by his merits, he ought at least to endeuour it by his long seruices, accompanied with a strong patience; but his boylng humour, and it may be, his little loue will not suffer him. If this good lucke might befall me, with what affection would I receiue it, and with what patience would I attend it? Father, it may be, you will thinke it strange, to heare mee tell you the sudden change of this shepheardesse; and yet I sweare vnto you, that she receiued the ouverture of my loue, so soone as I made it; and so, that before wee parted, shee liked well of my offer of the seruice which I made her, and gaue me leaue to call my selfe her seruant. You may well thinke, that *Semire*, who was listening, remayned no more satisfied with me, then he had beene with *Lysis*, and indeede from that tyme hee withdrew his suite; yet so discreetly, that many thought *Stolle* had beene the cause by her refusall: For she made no shew of grieuing much at it, because the place of his loue was filled with a new designe which she had in me, which was the cause that I receiued more fauours from her then otherwise I shoud. Which *Lysis* soone perceiued. But loue, which will alwayes triumphs ouer friendship, with-held me from speaking to him, fearing to displease the shepheardesse; and though hee were very angry that I concealed it from him, yet shoud I never haue spoken to him of it, without the permission of *Stolle*, who made shew to desire that this busynesse might passe by his hands. And since (as I haue noted) she did it with a purpose to reiambake him once againe with her. But I, who then tooke no heede to all her trickes, and who sought after nothing but the meanes to content her; one night when *Lysis* and I lay together, I vsed this language to him, I must confess (*Lysis*,) that at last Loue sports himselfe with me: and more, the e is nothing can deferre my death, but that which shall come from you. From me (answered *Lysis*) You may be assured that I will never be wanting to our friendship, though your mistrust hath made you commit as great an offence; and thinke not but I haue knowne your loue: but your silence, which displeased me, made me hold my peace. Since you (replied I) haue knowne it, and haue not spoken to me of it, I haue

haue the more cause of offence. For I confess, I haue failed in some things against our friendship in my silence, but you must consider, that a louer is not himselfe, and in all his errors you are to accule the violence of his disease: but you that haue no passion, can haue no excuse, but the want of friendship.

*Lysis* beganne to laugh, when he heard my reasons, and answered me: You are pleasant, *Coriles*, to pay me with a demaund; yet will I never gaine-say you: and since you haue this opinion, see wherein I may amend this fault. In doing for me ( answered I ) which you could not for your selfe: that is, ( I must tell you at last ) that if I attayne not the loue of *Stelle*, there is no hope in me. O God, then cryed *Lysis*, to what passage hath your misfortune led you? Flie (*Coriles*) this dangerous sea, where indeede there are nothing but rockes and bankes, marked with the shipwracke of those which haue taken the same course. I speake out of experience, as you know. I hope your merits may else-where gaine you a better fortune then me, but neither vertue nor reason can do it heere. I answered, It is no small contentment to me, to heare you vse this language: for till now I was in doubt you had yet some feeling, and that madē me the more reserued; but since ( God be thanked ) it is not so, I desire in this loue to draw out an extreme prooef of your friendship. I know that the hatred which succeeds loue, measures it selfe after the greatness of the fall, and haing so dearely loued this fayre shepheardesse, comming to hate her, the hatred should thereby be the greater: yet haing knowne by *Stelle* her selfe, that I cannot come to that I desire, but by your meanes, I adiure you by our friendship, to assist me, be it by perswading her, be it by intreating her, or in any sort that may be; and I call it an extreme prooef. For, I doubt not, but that hating her, it will grieue you to speake to her: but it is my amity, which desires it might be manifested, that it is greater then your hatred. *Lysis* was surprized, expecting from mee another prayer then this, whereby, besides the displeasure which he had to speake to *Stelle*, hee now sawe himselfe bereaued for euer of the person he loued most. Yet he answered, I shall do all that you will: you cannot promise more to your selfe of me, then I haue of good will: but bathinke you of what is passed betweene vs, and that I haue alwayes heard them say, that for messages of Loue, you must not serue your selfe of persons that are hated. It is true, there is no necessity to looke on *Stelle* so neare, since I can assure you, you may as well dispatch your busynesse of this kinde, as well as any other. Behold then, the poore *Lysis*, instead of a Louer, becomes messenger of loue, a mystery which his friendship commauded him to

do for mee, not of his owne seeking, but with an intent to serue mee as a friend, though since ( it may be ) Loue caused him to change ( in some sort ) his purpose, as I will tell you. But in this we must accuse the violence of Loue, and the ouer-absolute power he hath ouer man, and admire the friendship he bare mee, which suffered him to agree to the bereauing of himselfe for euer of that which he loued, that I might possesse it.

Some dayes after, seeking occasion to speake with her, he found it so fitly to his purpose with her, that there was no body by, to interrupt their discourse, so long as he pleased to make it; and then renewing the remembrance of the iniury he received, hee so armēd himselfe against her allurements, that Loue had small hope hee could vanquish him at that bout: which was not, for that the shepheardesse studayed not as much to surmount him, as he did to find sureties for his liberty: but because he opposed against loue, despite and friendship; the first armēd with offence, the other with duty, he remaинed vnconquered at that combat. Before he began to speake, shee seeing him to approach, went to meeke him, with words of the same fashion. What good lucke ( sayd she ) is that which brings me the much desired *Lysis*? what vnhopēd for fauor is this? I begin to haue good hope of my selfe, now you are come backe: for I may truly sweare, that since you left me, I never found intire contentment. Where-to the shepheard answered, More affected, then faithfull shepheardesse, I am more satisfied with the confession you make, then I haue bene offendēd at your infidelity. But let vs leaue this discourse, and forget it for euer, & answere me to that I demaund. Are you yet resolued to deceiue all them that loue you? For my part, I know well what to beleue, none of your humors to my cost being vñknowne to me: but that which I must demand of you, is to know at your shoppē, if a man may part at a better rate: for if you speake with affection, oþer, or other sort of assurance, that no man shall be deceived by you, for certaine they are of my rāke. The shepheardesse looked not for these reproches, notwithstanding shee forbore not to answere him, If you come but to iniure me, I thankē you for this visitation: but you haue good occasion to complaine of me. I complaine, ( answered the shepheard ) I beseech you set that aside. I complaine no more then I do iniure you, and so far am I from vsing complaint, that I commend your humor: for if you should longer make shew to loue mee, I should liue the longer time in deceit: and did it please God, that the losse of your loue brought me no more grieue then dammage, you should haue no cause to say, I complained, no more then I will iniure you, since iniury and truth can be no more together, then you and faithfullnesse. But it is true; that you are

the most deceitfull and vngratefull shephearde of *Forrests*. Me thinks (answered *Stelle*) little courteous shepheard, this discourse might better fit another mans mouth then yours. Then *Lysis* changing a little his fashon, Hitherto (sayd he) I haue vsed my tong for the most despite of *Lysis* : now I wil vse it for one that hath more busines with you, that is a little wise shepheard that loues you, and holds nothing at so high price, as your good graces. She thinking that he mocked her, Let vs leaue this discourse, said she; & let it suffice, *Lysis*, that you haue loued me, being at this houre vñwilling to renew the remembrance of your errore. Indeed (replied suddenly the shepheard) they were indeed errores that compelled mee to loue you, but you erre no lesse, if you thinke I speake of my selfe: it is for poore *Corilas*, who is so subiected to that that is not in you, that for any thing that I can say of your humor, it is impossible to withdraw him. I haue told him that I haue prooued in you, the small loue the little assurance that is in your soule, and in your words. I haue sworne ynto him, that you will deceiue him, and I know you will not keepe me from being periured: but the poore miserable is so intangled, that hee is of opinion, that what I could not attayne, his merits may reach to; and yet, to free him of deceit, I told him, that the greatest impediment to obtain any thing of you, is merit; and that you may credit that, I tell you, see a letter which he hath written to you. I make no question but, if hee haue failed, you will make him do penance. And because *Stelle* would not read my letter, *Lysis* opening it, read it aloud.

The letter of *Corilas* to *Stelle*.

*I* t is impossible to see you, without louing you, but much more to loue, without being exirme in that affectio: so that if for my defensio: n please you to consider this swrte, when this paper shall present it selfe before your eies: I assure my selfe, that the greatness of my bur: shall obtray by pisy, as much pardoun from you as the boldnesse which hath raised me to this worth, may merit of my punishment. Accordyng the iudgements which you shall gine, suffer me a thousand and a thousand times to kisse your faire hands, without being abte by such a number to equalize the deathe, which the refusall of this supplication shall give mee, nor the felicities, which shall accompany me, if you ressue me, as truly I am for your affectionate, and fauorit seruante.

As soone as *Lysis* had done reading, he held on, Well, *Stelle*, what deathe shall he die? of how many shall he be quit? for me, I begin to complaine, and you to thinke by what meanes you may hold him in the opinion he is in;

in; and after, how you may make him find your deniall more bitter. This speech touched the shephearde of good earnest, seeing how far hee was gone oft from louing her; so that to interrupt him, she was constrained to say, Me thinks, *Lysis*, that if *Corilas* be of the minde this paper makes shew of, he was ill aduised to employ you, since your words are more able to winne hatred then loue, and you seeme rather a messenger of war then peace. *Stelle* (replied the shepheard) he was so farre from being ill aduised in this election, that if hee had shewed as much iudgement in the rest of his actions, he should not stand in so great neede of your succours: he hath had twyalt of your fancies; hee knowes what your allurementes are; and of whom might hee better serue himselfe, without suspition of making himselfe a competitor, then of a louing friend, such as I am, whom you hate more then death? And yet the Arte wherewith I serue my selfe, is not bad: for representing you so louely as you are, you may the better acknowledge the honor he doth you to loue you. But let vs leaue this talke, and tell me, in good earnest, whether he be in your good grace, and how long hee shall continue; since, in truth, I dare not retorne to him, without bringing him some good answer: I coniure you by his loue and ours passed. To this reason the shepheard added some others, with so many prayers, that the shephearde of *Corilas* belueed hee speake in good earnest; whereto she easily perswaded her selfe, according to her good nature: for it is the custome of them that easily affect thespelues, to thinke that they are more easily affected. It was so, that for this time *Lysis* could obtaine of her nothing, but that the loue of his cousin for default of his owne, shouldest not be vnplesing to her; but Time should be her counceller. And after, at diuers times haue sollicitid her, so that shee had what assurance he would: and because he remembred her flitting humour, he laboured to bind her with a promise written with her owne hand, and knew so well to turne her on euery side, that he had what he would. He came backe in that sort to me, and discoursed vnto me all that hee had done, except this promise; for knowing the humour of *Stelle*, he doubted alwaies that shee would deceiue him, and if he spake to me of that paper, I might be further engaged, and so more painefull to withdraw mee. All this was without the knowledge of *Aminthe*, from whom *Stelle* concealed it, rather then from any other. When I had receiued such assurance of that which I most desired, after I had thanked the shephearde, I beganne, with her permission, to give order for the mariage, and made no difficulty to speake openly of it, though *Lysis* alwaies fore-told me, that in the end, I should be deceived: but the apparence of the good we desire, so flatters

vs, that hardly giue we care to them that tell vs the contrary.

While this marriage was divulged, *Semire*, who, as I told you, had left his suite, by reason of *Lisis* and mee, beeing prouoked with a speech which shee had vsed of him, resolued (to make the contrary appere, at what price soeuer) to returne into her good graces, with a purpose to leaue her in the end, with that boldnesse, that shee might never say more, that this separation proceeded from her. There was no neede to vse any great Arte, for her changing humour easily suffered her to returne to her nature: and so at a blow, behold her resolute to forsake me for *Semire*, as a little before shee had left *Semire* for me, yet was shee not altogether without paine, because of the promise which shee had written, not knowing how to gaine-say it. In the end, the day of marriage beeing come, when I had assembled the most part of my kindred and friends, I held my selfe so assured, that I receiued the reioycings of al the world: but shee, that had another thought, while I was busied in welcoming those that were come, brake all this meeting, with excuses more poorely grounded then the former; wherewith I was so enraged, that getting from her without bidding adieu, I conceiued so great disdaine of her lightnesse, that never since shee could cope with me.

Now judge, father, if I haue cause to complaine of her, and, if they that tell it to my disaduantage, were well informed. Indeed (answered *Adamas*) you may see a woman vnworthy of that name, and I wonder how it is possible that hauing deceiued so many, there should be any that would trust her. I haue not yet told you all (replied *Corillas*) for after every one was gone but *Lisis*, shee so wrought, that *Semire* stayed with her vntill euening. In the meane time, as I thinke, shee laboured to vse soone arte to haue her promise backe, because shee saw well hee was throughly angry with her. In the end, very boldly shee spake to him thus: Is it possible, *Lisis*, that you haue so forgotten the affection which so often you haue sworne to me, that you haue no minde to please me? I, sayd *Lisis*, the heauens sooner kill me.

At this word, what impediment soeuer shee vsed, hee got out of the house to be gone: but shee took such hold on him, and taking his hand betweene hers, shee went with him, clasping in such a fashion, that every one might iudge, that there was loue, and though he right well knew her humour and her deceits, yet could hee not containe himselfe from being pleased with her flatteries, though he gaue no credit to them, which hee well witnessed, when considering her actions, he said, O God, *Stelle*, how doe you abuse the graces, wherein the Heauens (without reason) haue beeene so

so prodigall to you? If this body did inclose a spirit which had any resemblance with the beautey, who is hee that could resist you? Shee, who knew what force her allurements had, placed all her arte in her eyes; all her fictions in her mouth; and all her malice in her inuention, wherewith shee so turned him on all sides, that shee almost set him besides himselfe, & then shee vsed these words: Gentle shepheard, if it bee true, that you bee that *Lisis*, which sometimes haue so dearely affected me, I coniure you by the remembrance of the time so happy for me, that you will haere mee in priuate, and beleeue, that if you haue had any occasion to complaine, I will make it plaine vnto you, that this second fault, or at least, as you esteeme it so, was not committed but to remedy the former. At these words *Lisis* was ouercome; yet, that hee might not shew his weakeenesse, hee answered, See, *Stelle*, how farre you are gone from your opinion; so far am I from desire to doe any thing that might please you, that there is nothing displeasing, which I will not endeavour to do. Since there is no other remedy (answered the shepheardesse) come backe into the house to displease me. With this intent, answered he, I will. So then they went in: and as they stood by the fire, shee began to speake thus: In the end (shepherd) it is impossible I should longer liue with you and dissemble: I must put off the maske to al my actions, and so you shal know, that poore *Stelle*, whom you haue accounted so fitting, is more constant then you imagine, and desires onely that you should know it, that for the satisfaction of the wrongs you haue done mee, you would freely confess you haue wronged me. But (said shee) (suddainly breaking off that speech) what haue you done with the promise which you haue had of mee in the behalfe of *Corillas*? for if you haue deliuered it him, that onely may breake off our affaires; who being in the place of *Lisis*, would not beleeue shee loued him, and would not bee deceiued like him. This shepheard being of opinion, that shee would doe that for him for which shee refused me, without difficulty gaue her this promise, which hee had alwaies kept most charily and most secretly: as soone as shee had it, shee tore it, and going neere the fire, made it a sacrifice: and then turning toward the shepheard, smiling, shee sayd, There is no more for you to doe, gentle shepheard, but you may hold on your way, for it is ouer-late. O God, cried *Lisis* (finding her practices) Is it possible that the third time I should be received by one person? And what cause haue you (said *Stelle*) to say you are deceiued? Ah! perfidious and disloyall (said he) did you not come out to tel me, that you would make it plaine, that this last fault was to repaire the former, and to make prooфе that you are constant, you layd open your naked heart and intentions?

tions? *Lysis* (said shee) you come alwaies with your iniuries; if I never loued you, am I not constant, not to loue you now? And haue I not made you see what my heart is? and whereto tend my actions, but hauing that I would of you, I leaue you in peace? Beleeue, that all the words which you haue made me lose for an houre together, was, but to recover this paper; and now (since I haue it) I pray God to giue you the good night. What an amazement, thinke you, was the shepheard in? It was so great, that without speech, or spending further time, halfe besides himselfe, hee went homeward: But certainlye, he hath had since good occasion to bee reuenged: For *Savire*, as I haue told you, which was the cause of my euill, or rather of my good, so I may cal that separation of amity, feeling in himselfe yet the displeasure of the first disgrace which she had done him, seeing this extreme leuity, and considering that (it might be) she might serue him so, he resolued to prevent it: and so hauing abused her, as we were (*Lysis* and I) he broke the treaty of marriage, in the middest of an assembly, which he had purposely caused to be made, which procured many to say, that by the same weapon whereby a wound is giuen, oftentimes the punishment is received.

*Corilas* ended in this sorte; and *Adamas* smiling, said, My child, the best counsell that I can giue you herein, is, to shun the familiarity of this deceiuer, and to keepe your selfe from her practices, and to giue contentement to your parents, that with great impaciency desire to see you married, and when any good proffer is offered, receiue it, and stay not on these youthful tricks of Loue: for there is nothing that can better warrant you from the plots and surprizes of this deceiuer, nor which will make you more esteemed among your neighbours, then to marry, not so much by Loue, as by reason; it beeing one of the most important actions that you can euer doe, and wherein all the happinesse or misfortune of a man may depend. At this word they parted, for it beganne to waxe late, and every one tooke the way to his lodgning.

The end of the fifth Booke.

THE



## THE SIXTH BOOKE OF Astrea and Celadon.

**A**STREA, on the other side, *Leonide* not hauing found *Adamas* at *Fetters*, went backe the same way shee came, not staying, but the time shee was to dine: and because shee resolued, that night to abide among the shepheardeſſes, which shee had ſeen the day before, for the deſire ſhee had to haue more particular knowledge of them, ſhee came backe to that place where ſhee met them, when looking about her, ſhee ſeemed to ſee ſome; but not being able to know them, for they were ſo farre off, with a great compaſſe ſhe came as neare to them as ſhee might, and then looking on their faces, ſhe found they were the ſame whom ſhee ſought for. She might bee glad of this meeting, for by fortune they were come out of their Hamlet, with a purpose to paſſe the reſt of the day together; and the better to ſpend the time, they had a meaſing there ſhould be no more then they three, that they might more freely ſpeakē of their greaſt ſecrets; ſo that *Leonide* could not haue come in a better time to ſatisfie her curioſity; especially, ſince they were but newly come. Lying then to liſten, ſhe heard *Aſtrea* (taking *Diane* by the hand) ſay, Now is the time, wife ſhepheardelle, that you ſhould pay vs that which you promiſed; ſince vpon your word, *Philips* and I haue not made dainty, to tell you all that you deſired to know of vs. Faire *Aſtrea* (anſwered *Diane*) without doubt, my word ſhall bind mee to diſcouer vnto you my life, but much more the amity that is betweene vs; knowē well, that to conceale any thing in the ſoule from the perſon we loue, is to bee guilty of a very great fault: that if I haue beeene ſo slack to ſatisfie that which you deſire of mee, it was, for that leaſure would not permit mee: for, though I bee moſt certaine, that I know not how to relate to you my youth, without bluſhing, yet it will be eaſie for

for mee to ouercome this shame, when I shall thinke it is to please you. Why should you blush (said *Phillis*) since there is no other fault but to loue? If it be not (replied *Diane*) yet, at least, it is a resemblance of a fault; and they are so like, that oftentimes they are taken one for another. They (replied *Phillis*) which deceiue themselues so, haue a very ill sight. It is true, answered *Diane*, but it is our misfortune, that there are more of that sort then of the good. You will displease vs (interrupted *Astrea*) if you haue that opinion of vs. The loue which I beare to you both (answered *Diane*) may assure you, that I know not how to giue bad iudgement. For it is impossible to loue that which we esteeme not. Moreouer, that which puts me to payne, is not the opinion which my friends may haue of mee, but all the world besides; for that with my friends I liue alwayes so, as my action may content them: and by that meanes, opinion cannot be very strong in them, but with others it is impossible; so that with them reports may greatly prejudice one: and for this cause, since you appoinz me to tell you a part of my life, I coniure you by our loue, never to speake of it; and both of them hauing sworne, she tooke againe her discourse in this sort.

### The History of Diane.

IT would be very strange, if the discourse which you desire to know of me, might not be offensiuē to you, since (faire & wise shepheardeſſes) it hath made me endure so much displeasure, that I thinke not I shall at this time vſe more words in telling it, then it hath cost me teares in ſuffering it. And ſince it pleaſeth you, that at laſt I ſhall renew that grievous remembrance, ſuffer me to abridge it, that I may (in ſome ſort) leſſen the happiness, wherein I am by the memory of paſſed troubles. I affiue my ſelue, that though you neuer ſawc *Celion* and *Belinde*, yet you haue heard they were my father and mother; and (it may be) haue knowne the croſſes which they had for the loue of the one to the other, which lets mee from telling them, though they were preſages of thofe I met with. But you muſt know, that after the cares of loue were ended in marriage, that they might not reſrayne ydle, ſuices of law and ſundry troubles beganne to grow, and ſo plentifull, that wearied with charge of proceſſe, to make an accord, many, among the reſt, a neigbour of theirs named *Phormion*, trauyled ſo, that their friends were of aduice at laſt, that to end all ſuits, they ſhould giue ſome promiſes of future alliance beſtweene them: and becauſe neither the one nor the other, as yet, had any children, as hauing

not beene long married, they ſwore by *Themales* on the Altar of *Belenus*, that if they boch had but one ſonne, and one daughter, they ſhould marry together; and ratified this alliance with ſo many oathes, that hee which brake them, ſhould be the moſt periured creature in the world. Some time after, my father had a ſonne, which was lost, when the *Gothes* and *Oſtrigots* ranfacked this prouince. Somewhat after that was I borne: but ſo unluckily for my ſelue, that my father neuer ſawc me, being borne after his death.

This was the cauſe that *Phormion* ſeeing my father dead, and my brother lost (for theſe Barbarians had carryed him away, and it may be, kill'd him, or left him to die for want;) and that my vnkle *Dianamis* was gone out with diſpleaſure of this loſſe, reſolved (if he might haue a ſonne) to purſue the eſſect of theſe promiſes. It fell out, that ſome while after, his wife lay downe, but it was of a daughter; and because his wife was old, and he feared he ſhould haue no more by her, hee made it be giuen out, that it was a ſonne, and vſed ſo great waruerneſſe, that neuer any body heeded it, a tricke eaſie enough, becauſe there was no perſon that would ſuppoſe that he would vſe ſuſh a deceipt; and vntill a certayne age, it is hard (by the face) to know any thing: and the better to deceiue the moſt crafty, he cauſed her *Filidas*: And when ſhe came to age, he cauſed her to vſe the exerſice fit for young ſhepheards, whereto ſhe was not very vniſt.

The deſſigne of *Phormion* was, ſeeing me without father and without vnkle, to make himſelfe maſter of my good by this fayned marriage: and when *Filidas* and I ſhould be greater, to marry me to one of his nephews, which he loued beſt. And indeed he was not deceiued in his former deſſigne. For *Belinde* was too religious towards the gods, to ſayle in that whereto ſhe knew her husband was bound. It is true, that ſeeing me taken out of her owne hands (for preſently after this diſſemblaſed marriage) I was deliuered into them of *Phormion*: ſhe tooke ſo great griefe, that not being able to ſtay longer in this country, ſhe went to the lake *Leman*, to be miſtris of the Vſtals and Druydes of *Eniens*, as the old *Cleonſin* infor- med her from the Oracle.

Now behold me in the hands of *Phormion*, who ſhortly after brought me home to him his nephew, to whom he meant to giue me, who was naimed *Amide*. This was the beginning of my paines, because his vnkle let him know, that by reaſon of our young age, the marriage of *Filidas* and me was not ſo auerſed, but if the one could not like of the other, hee could not well breake it: yet if it ſhould happen, hee wiſhed rather hee ſhould marry me then another, that he ſhould make vſe of this aduertiſement,

ment with so much discretion, that no man might take notice of it, endeuouring, in the meane time, to winne me to his loue (in such sort) that I gaue my selfe to him, if euer I came to be free. This yong shepheard had so good a conceit of this designe, that as long as this fancie lasted, he could not tel how good occasion I had to reioyce my selfe for him. About this time *Daphnis*, an honest and wise shephearde, came from the coast of *Furan*, where she had abode many yeeres; and because we were vs so good friends, that I beganne to be more vexed then of wont: for I must confess, that the humor of *Filidas* was so vnsupportable to me, that I could not almost indure it; so that the feare which she had, that I migh come to more knowledge, made her so icalous of me, that I might not scarce speake to any body. Things standing on these termes, *Phormion* on a sudden falleth sick, and the same day was choked with a Catar, that he could not speake, nor give any order to his affayres nor mine. *Filidas*, at the first was astonished; at last, seeing her selfe absolute mistris of her selfe and of me, resoluēd to keepe this authority, considering that the liberty which the name of a man brings, is much more pleasing then the seruitude to which our Sexe is more subiect. Besides that, shee was not ignorant, that when she shuld discouer her selfe to be a maide, she should give no small cause of talke to all the country. These reasons made her continuall the name which she had during her fathers life: and fearing now more then euer, that some one might discouer what she was, she held me so strait, that I was settome without her. But (faire shepheardesses) since it pleaseth you to know my young passages, you must, wherby you heare them, excuse them; and withall, haue this belief of me, that I haue had so many and so great troubles for louing, that I am no more sensible on that side, having bee so hardened, that loue hath, neyther so strong, nor so sharpe armes, that he can pierce me. Alas! it is the shepheard *Filander* of whom I will speake: *Filander*, that first could give me some seeing of loue, and who being no more, hath carried away all that that might be capable in me.

Truely (interrupted *Astrea*) eyther the loue of *Filander* hath beeene verily little, or you haue vsed great discretion; for that indeed I never heard speech of it. Which is a rare thing; for that the euill tongue will pardon nothing, no, not that which is not. That men haue not spoken of it (answered *Diane*). I am more bound to our good intent, then to our discretion; and for the affection of the shepheard, you may iudge what it is by the discourse which I shall make. But the heauens, which knew our puro

and

and cleane intents, would fauour vs from that good house. The first time that I sawe him, was on the day we celebrate to *Apollo* and *Diane*, when he came to the game with a sister whom he resembled so much, that they held on them the eyes of the greatest part of the assembly. And because she was neere of kinne to my deare *Daphnis*, as soone as I sawe her, I embrased her, and I welcomed her with a face so open, that from that time she thought her selfe bound to loue me: her name was *Calypre*, and was married on the coast of *Furan*, to a shepheard called *Gerestan*, whom she had never seene vntill the day whereon she was married, which was the cause of the little loue she bare him. The entertainment which I vsed to the sister, gaue occasion to the brother to tarry by me so long as the sacrifice lasted; and by fortune, I know not whether I should call it good or euill for him: I set out my selfe that day as well as I could, thinking (by reason of my name) that this feast concerned me more particularly then others.

He that comming from far, had no other knowledge of the shepheards nor shepheardesses, then that which his sister gaue him, forsooke vs not all that day, so that in some sort, thinking my selfe bound to entertaine him, I did what I could to please him, and my labour was not vnproufitable: for from that time this poore shepheard gaue birth to an affection, which neuer ended but with his death. And euen yet I am assured, that if in the graue they haue any remembrance of the living, hee loues me; and in the very ashes conserues the pure affection hee swore to me. *Daphnis* tooke note both of the day and the deed, being that night in bed (because that *Filidas* not being well, could not come to the games) she told me it; but I reiectēd this conceit so long, that she said, I see well (*Diane*) that this day wil cost me many prayers, and *Filander* much paine: but howsoeuer it happen, you shall not be quite exempted. She vsed to warre on me with such assaults, because she perceiued I feard them; this was the cause that I stayed not to giue her answer. So it was, that this aduertisement was cause, that the next day, me thought, I found some apparel of that which she had told me. After dinner wee vsed to gather togeher vnder some trees, and to daunce to the voyce, where we late downe in a round, and spent the time with the discourse which we liked best of, that wee might disquiet our selues in that assembly, as little as possibly we could. It fell out, that *Filander* being vknowne but to *Daphnis* and me, came and sate betweene her and mee: and attending to knowe whereto all the troupe would resolute, not to be dumbe, I beganne to enquire of that which I thought he could best answer, which *Andor* taking heed of, entered into

into so great ialousie, that forsaking the company, without shewing the cause, hee went singing this Towne-song, hauing before cast his eyes on me, to make it knowne that it was of me he meant to speake.

A TOWNE.SONG  
Of Amidor.

**T**HAT man shall have her in the end,  
That serues her last in place of friend.

Of heart that hundred time is moued,  
More shifting then the nimble winde:  
Who thinkes himselfe to be beloved,  
May not be held for wise of minde.

For he shall have her in the end,  
That serues her last in place of friend.

The weather-cocke to all winds moues,  
That stands on top of Tower tall.  
So she to every proffering lone,  
Turnes both her heart, her head and all.

For he shall have her in the end,  
That serues her last in place of friend.

The Hunter doth not much esteem  
That which he takes, though fat it were.  
Th'inconstant ouerpasseth him,  
Disliking such as hold her deare.

But he shall have her in the end,  
That serues her last in place of friend.

As one nail drives another forke,  
The last, that comes into her grace,  
Shall of the firſt for all his worth,  
Right ſuddenly vſurpe the place.

Therefore ſhall he banke her in the end,  
That ſerues her last in place of friend.

I had had ſufficient command ouer my ſelfe, to stay me from giuing knowledge of the displeaſure which this ſong brought me, had it not bene that every one looked on me, and without Daphnis, I could not tell what would haue become of me. But ſhe full of diſcretion, not staying for the end of this ſong, interrupted it in this ſort, addressing her ſelfe to mee.

A MADRIGALL  
Of Daphnis, on the loue which ſhe bare to Diane.

**S**Ince at your birth, beauteous Diane,  
Lone made you Lord/ſtone of all bates,  
Why ſhould they ſay that I profane  
Such beaute, when my lone imparts  
Worſhip to you by deſtiny?

If Lone, that is moſt abſolute,  
Of likeneſſe growes as it is ſayd:  
Then ours ſhould be of ſtrongeſt ſuſt,  
Since you and I one ſexē are made.

And that I might better hide my bluſhing, and make them thinke I tooke no heed to the words of Amidor, as ſoone as Daphnis had made an end, I anſwered her thus:

A MADRIGALL  
Of the ſame ſubſtance.

**VV**Herefore ſhould it be thought ſo strange,  
That being as you are a maide,  
My Lone on you ſhould be ſo ſayde?

If Lone to be loued change,  
The change in me were not ſo hard:  
A ſheþeardeſſe to ſheþeardeſſe,  
As ſheþeardeſſe unto a ſheþeard.

Therefore

After

After we had euery one, as we late on a rowe, sung some verses, and Filander, who had a good voyce, when it came to his turne, sayd this with a good grace:

STANZA'S  
Of Philander, on the birth of his affection.

**T**HAT his desires are great, and his attempts in vaine,  
His Lones full of great fires, and fuller much of paine,  
That lones, and cannot finde requitall of desire,  
Or if he be belov'd, he takes but small delight,  
Vnlesso he might haue hope, or if he hope (ob spight!)  
It is but to the end to set him more on fire.

**T**hus on my cradles head, by fatall ordinance,  
Hard Destiny it selfe did nine sad times pronounce,  
What should infallibly accompany my dayes:  
Upon the right hand, heaven thick clouded thunder had.  
And since I knew too well, that these presages sad,  
Cast eye on my designes, and follow them alwayes:

**T**hen be not you amaz'd, if after this decree  
My Loue commencement take, when I your beauty see,  
That if I must be beat out of designe fore-sold,  
It to my solace is, that men shall guilty finde  
The Loue of my hard Fate, and praise my fainty minde;  
Saying, A heart that's base, durst never be so bold.

**S**o, when the thoughtfull care of an unfertile Lono  
Consumes it selfe in beames of that worlds starre above,  
It scemes in following it to say, Sunne of my skie,  
Burne me with thine owner aies, make that I die by thee;  
At least, in dying so, this pleasure rests with me,  
That other fire could not burne me, but thine eye.

**W**hen Phoenix bird alone out of composition rare,  
By Nature taught thereto, doth first her selfe prepare,  
From reliques of her tombe, her cradle yet to haue,  
Shee saith to that great fire, the garden of her soule,  
I shall in glory rise, by dying in thy cole,  
And take my life againe from ashes of my grane.

He sayd some others, but I haue forgotten them, so that mee thought it was I, to whom these words were directed: and I know not if that which Daphnis had told me, made me think so, or his eyes, which yet spake more plainly then his mouth. But if this verse gaue me knowledge, his discretion witnessed it much more afterwards: for it is one of the effects of true affection, to serue with discretion, and not to giue knowledge of his disease, but by effects, ouer which they can haue no power. This young shepheard finding the humour of Amidor, and for that Loue had made him curious, and inquiring if it were but of Filidas, hee thought that the best point of Arte, to shut vp the eyes of them both, was to compasse a strait league with them, not giuing any shew of that he bare me. Loue made him so cunning and wise, that holding on his designe, hee deceipted not onely Amidor, but my eyes also; because that vsually hee would leaue vs to goe to him, and he would neuer come but in his company. It is true, that the crafty Daphnis found it presently; because (said shee) that Amidor is not so louely, that he can draw so honest a shepheard as Filander, to vs so carefull a search; so that it must needes be for a more worthy subiect.

She was the cause that I began to haue a care of my selfe: and I must confess, that then his discretion pleased me; and if I could haue suffered my selfe to be beloued, it should be of him: but the houre was not then come, that I should bee strucke on that side; yet did I not forbear to please my selfe with his actions, and to approue his designe in some sort. When hee was to take his leaue of vs, hee accompanied vs a good way; and at our parting, I neuer heard such assurance of amity as he gaue to Amidor, nor so many offers of seruices, as to Filidas: and the foole Daphnis, vnhappy, whispered in mine eare, Conceaue you that it is to you that he speakes; and if you doe not answer him, you doe great wrong. And when Amidor beganne to thanke him, she said, Oh what a foole he is to beleeue, that these offerings are ordained for his Altar! but he could so well disceern, that hee made Amidor wholly his, and got such ground on his good will, that when he returned, and was to deliuer that which Filander had on his part desired him to say to Filidas, that this maid had a desire to see him; and some dayes after, hee added so many ouer-lashing commendations, not saying any thing to me of it (because, that when I spake of him, it was with such a coldnesse, that it seemed to bee out of negle<sup>c</sup>t) they sent for him, desiring him to come and see them: God knowes whether hee neede bee sollicited more then once, for it was the thing he desired, thinking it was impossible that his designe should haue a better beginning. And by fortune,

fortune, the day that he was to come, *Daphnis* and I went out to walke vnder some trees, which are on the other side of that pasture that is next to this; & scarce knowing to whom to go, while our flocks were feeding, we went, vncertaine whither our feete without election guided vs, when wee heard a voyce farre enough off, and wee thought it some strangers. The desire to know it, made vs turne directly to the place where the voice conducted vs, and by reason *Daphnis* went first, she spied *Filander* before me, and made a signe to me to tread softly: and when I came neer her, she whispered in mine eare, naming *Filander*, who sate leaning against a tree, entertaining his thoughts, wearied, as it seemed, with the length of his way, and by chance, iust as we came, he beganne in this sort:

## A SONNET.

*In pride of heart I did misprize  
Lone, with his crafts and sorceries,  
When changing armes to these of yours,  
The crafty greater ayde procures :  
And yet before he did me wrong,  
He usde this language with his tongue.*

A God against my Lawes growne pround,  
For baning got the victory  
Over a serpene, disallowde  
The glory that is due to me.  
But what? I made him Daphne lone,  
On him my greater force to prone.

The fire that burns that glorious,  
Came but from Nymphs eyes beauteous,  
Whom he wished her feeling low'd:  
But I will yours more fiery proud,  
Comes not from Nymph, but Dian selfe.

not be heard, and at last ouerooke me; and being scarce able to take her breath, she went crying out a thousand broken reproches. And when she could speake, Vnsainedly, sayes she, if the heauens do not punish you, I shall beleue they are as vnjust as you: and, what cruelty is this of yours, not to heare him that complaynes? To what end (sayd I) should I haue stayed longer? To heare (sayd she) the euill you haue done him. I? (answered I) You iest, in saying, that I doe hurt the man that I thinke not of. That is (replyed she) whereof you labour most: for if you thought often of him, it were impossible but you should haue pitty. I blushed at that word, and the change of colour gaue *Daphnis* to vnderstand, that these words offended me. This was the cause that smilng she sayd: I am pleasant (*Diane*:) that I said, was but to passe the time away: and beleue not that I thinke it: and concerning that he sung when he named your name, it is for certaine, that it was for another that bare your name, or to refresh himselfe, he sung these verses, which he had receiued of some other. We went discoursing in this sort; and so long, that being weary of walking, we came backe another way, to the same place where *Filander* was: For my part it was by errour: it may well be, that *Daphnis* did it of purpose; and finding him so neere vs, I could not choose but looke on him: at the first he was sitting, and leaned against a tree: but now wee found him layd all along on the ground, one arme vnder his head, and it seemed he was awake, for he had a Letter all be-wet with teares, which ran downe his face; but indeed he slept, being likely, that while he read the paper, the trauell of the way, and his deepe thoughts, by little and little, made him slumber. But wee were more certayne, when *Daphnis* more bold then I, stowped downe, reached mee the Letter (wet with teares) which found passage thorow the paper badly folded: This sight touched me with pitty, but much more the Letter, which was thus:

### Filanders Letter to Diane.

They who have the honour to see you runne a dangerous fortune, if they loue  
you, they are fawcy: if they loue you not, they are without judgement: your  
perfections are such, that with reason they may neither be beloved, nor not be be-  
loved: and I being enforced to lie downe in one of these two errors, haue chosen  
that which is most after my humour, and from which it is impossible for mee to  
withdraw my selfe. Thinke it not hard (faire Diane) since none can see you with-  
out louing you; that having seene you, I loue you. If this boldnesse deserve punish-  
ment, remember you, that I loue rather to loue you in dying, then to loue without  
7. 2. louing

louing you. But why say I, I loue rather? It is no more in my choice. For I must (while I live) as well be your true servant, as you know not how to be such as you are, without being the most fayre Shepheardeesse that liues.

I had scarcely read ouer this Letter, but that I found my selfe all on a trembling, and *Daphnis* so softly layd it in the place where she found it, that he awaked not: and comming towards me, and I being hard by, Will you suffer me to speake (sayd she?) Our loue (answered I) giues you all power. In truth (sayd she) I bewaile *Filander*, for it is very true hee loues you: and I perswade my selfe, in your soule you doubt not of it. *Daphnis* (said I) he that committed the fault, must do the penance. If it be so (replied she) *Filander* must not: for I will never confess it to be a fault, to loue you, but thinke rather it is an offence, not to do it, since the fairest things had not bene made but to be beloued and cherished. I referre my selfe to your iudgement (sayd I) if my face may be numbred amongst the things that are fayre. But I coniure you onely by our loue, never to let him know, that I take any notice of his intent. And if you loue him, aduise him, not to speake to me: for esteeming of you and *Callire*, as I doe, I am sorry that I must banish him from our company: And you know wel I shall be constrained so to doe, if he haue the hardinesse to speake to me of it. Then, how will you haue him liue (sayd she?) As he liued (said I) before he sawe me. But (said she) that he cannot do heereafter, for that then he was not attatched with this fire which now burnes him. Let him seeke out the meanes himselfe, without offendinge me, by remooving this fire. The fire (sayd she) that can be quenched, is not great, and yours is extreme. The fire (said I) how great soever it be, will not burne him that comes not neare it. Though (sayd she) he that is burnt, flieth from the fire, yet will not the burning leaue him, and by flying, he brings more smart. For conclusion (sayd I) if it be so, I choose rather to be the fire then the burninge.

With such discourses we returned to our flockes, and towards night we drove them into our Hamlet, where we found *Filander*, to whom *Filidas* made so good cheere, and *Amidor* also, that *Daphnis* beleueid hee had bewitched them, it not being their humour to deale so with others. He stayed some dayes with vs, during which time hee made no offer of speech, living with so great discretion, that, but for that which *Daphnis* and I had seene, we should never haue suspected his meaning. At last, hee was constrayned to depart, and not knowing to whom to breake it, hee went to his sister, because he loued her, and trusted her as himselfe. This Shepheardeesse

Shepheardeesse (as I told you) had beeene constrained by authority to marry, and found no other contentment, but that which the loue which shee bare her brother might giue her. As loone as shee sawe him, shee was curious after the first salutations, to know what the cause of his iourney was: and he hauing answered her, that he came from *Filidas*: shee demaunded what newes of *Daphnis* and me. Whereto hauing giuen satisfaction, and hearing him speake with so great commendations of me; she told him in his eare: I feare (brother) you loue him more then me. I loue her (answered he) as her merit binds me. If it be so (replied she) I haue diuined well: for there is not a Shepheardeesse in the world that deserues better; & I must confess vnto you, that were I a man, would shee, or would shee not, I would be her servant. I beleue, sister (answered he) you speake in good earnest.

I sweare vnto you (sayd she) by that which I hold most deare. I thinke (replied he) if it were so, you should not be without busynesse; for by that that I can iudge, shee is of an humour that is not easie to bend: besides that, *Filidas* is ready to die of icalousie, and *Amidor* so watches her, that shee is never without one of them two. O brother, cryed she, you are taken: since you haue noted these particularities, hide it no longer from me: and without fiction, if it be a fault to loue, it is very pardonable. And without leaving him, shee so pressed, that after a thousand protestations and so many supplications, never to be knowne of it, he confessed it to her, and with words so affectionate, that shee had beeene very incredulous, if shee had doubted it. And when shee asked of him, how I received the declaration: O God (sayd he) if you knew what her humour is, you would say, that neuer man enterprised a more difficult attempt: All that I could do till now, was to deceiue *Filidas* and *Amidor*, that made me beleue there is nothing in the world so deare to them as I; & I am come to this, that they sent for me, purposely to see me, and then told her all the discourse, which had passed betweene them. But, said he, holding on his speech, though I went with a purpose to discouer to *Diane*, how much I was hers, yet durst I not, (respect had such force ouer me,) which made me despaine ever to performe it, vilesse some long practice, gaue me the boldnesse; but this cannot be, but that *Filidas* and *Amidor* will take notice of it: So that (sister) to tell you the estate wherein I am, it is very neare to despaire.

*Callire*, that loued her brother more then any other thing, took his griefe so to heart, that, after shee had thought of it a while, she said, Willyou, brother, that in this occasion I giue you some prooife of my good will? Sister,

Sister (answered hee) though I be in no doubt, yet neyther in this, nor any other accident will I refuse you euer. For the appearances of that we desire, will not suffer vs to please our selfe, though from else-where we haue sufficient assurance. Well, brother, since your will is so, I will do that for you, which shall not be small; what hazard soever I thrust my selfe into. And then she went on: You know the likenesse of our faces, of our stature and speech; and but for our habit, they that are ordinarily with vs, would take vs the one for the other. If you thinke the onely meane to come to your purpose, is to conuerse with *Diane* without suspition, how can wee finde one more easie, or more secret, then to change habits, you and I? For, being taken for a mayde, *Filidas* will neuer conceiue euill opinion, how neare soever you come to *Diane*: and I returning to *Gereftan* in your habit, will tell him, that *Daphnis* and *Diane* keep you there by husband, to goe see them: but I know not what were best, since hee is (as you know) so hard to be intreated. Indeed, sister (answered *Filidas*) I neuer doubted of your good nature; but at this time I must confess, there was neuer a better sister: and since it pleaseth you to take this paine, I beseech you, if I enjoy her, to accuse my loue which constrained me, and to beleue that it is the only meane to conserue the life of that brother whom you loue. And then he embrased her with so great an acknowledgement of the obligation which hee hath had, that shee became more desirous to pleasure him then before.

At last she sayd, let vs leaue these words to those that loue lesse, and let vs onely looke to set our hand to the worke. For leaue (sayd he) wee shall easily get it, dissembling that all the good cheere which was made mee by *Filidas*, was to no other purpose, then that *Amidor* had to woo the niece of your husband. And because this charge will trouble him, I assure my selfe, it will be easie for you to goe, if we give him to know, that you and *Daphnis* together in y<sup>e</sup> well treat of this mariage. But what order shall wee take for our haire, yours being long, and mine ouer-short, which will be a great inconuenience? Trouble not your selfe for that (said she:) if you suffer yours to grow a little, it will be enoughe to serue vnder a coife, as I vse; and for mine, I will cut them like yours. But, said hee, Sister, will you not be loth to chip your head? Brother (said she) think not, I hold any thing dearer then your contentment; besides that, I shall auoyd many importunitie while you weare my clothes, and not lying neare *Gereftan*; so that if I must haue my head shorne, I will not make difficulty to doe it. With this word he embrased her, saying, that God would one day

day deliuer him of that torment. And not to lose time, *Filander* on the first occasion that he thought fit, spake with *Gereftan*, representing to him that alliance so easily to be compassed, and so profitable, that hee will suffer himselfe easily to be led. But, because *Filander* would giue time to let his haire grow, he made shew to goe to giue order to his affayres, and that hee would returne very shortly. And *Filidas* no sooner knew of *Filander* s returne, but she went to see him, accompanied onely with *Amidor*, and would not leaue him, without bringing him to vs, where he stayed seuen or eight dayes, not hauing the hardinesse to shew hitselfe to mee more then at the first.

During this time, to shew how hard a thing it is to force nature long, though *Filidas* counterfeited the man as well as shee could, yet was shee constrained to feele the passions of a woman; for the courage and merits of *Filander* wrought the same effect in her, that he desired they should in me. But *Loue*, which takes delight to turne the actions of the most aduised, contrary to their purpose, made him giue the blow on the side he least looked for: So behold the poore *Filidas*, so farre besides her selfe, that she could not liue without *Filander*, and wooed him with such apparent shewes, that he was astonished at it; and, but for the desire he had to be neare me, he would neuer haue endured that fashion of life. In the end, when he thought his hayre was long enough to put vnder a coife, hee returned to *Gereftan*, and told him he had made a good entrance to their businesse: but that *Daphnis* thought fit, before she spake, that *Amidor* might see his neece in some place, that they might know if she pleased him: and that the better way was, that *Callire* should bring her, that so there might be a beginning of amity, that could not choose but be auaylable. *Gereftan*, which desired nothing with more passion, then to be discharged of his Niece, thought this proposition very good, & gaue absolute commandement to his wife; who to egge him on the better, made shew of not liking it well at the first, propounding some difficulty in the iourney, and seeming to be sorry to depart from him, saying, that shee knew well, that such affaers wold not fal out as we would, nor so readily as was expected; and that in the mean time, their affaeres wold speed the worse at home. But *Gereftan*, that would not haue her haue any other will then his, was so earnest, that three dayes after, he caused her to goe with her brother and his Niece. The first day she went to lodge at *Filander* s house, where in the morning they changed habit, which fell out so well for the one and the other, that they which conuersed with them, knew it not: and I must tell you, I was deceipted as well as others, there being no difference betweene them,

them, that I could obserue. But I may easily be deceived, since *Filidas* was so, though shee looked but with the eyes of Loue, which are said to bee more piercing then those of Linxe's: For, presently after their comming, they left vs the fained *Callire*, I would say *Filander*, and led the true into a chamber to rest in. As they were in the way, her brother instructed her what to answer; and especially, informed her of the Loue-tricks shee should vse, resembling (said hee) those that are in loue; whereby, both the one and the other were offended: and, though *Callire* were fully resolued to beare all his impoerunities, for the contentment of her brother; yet so it was, that shee, thinking *Filidas* to bee a man, that it was no small horror to her, that shee was constrained to speake to him. As for vs, when we were withdrawn alone, *Daphnis* & I did all the kindnesses that are vsuall among women, I meane, among those where there is Loue and priuacy, which this shepheard tooke and gaue with that transport, that, as hee since swore, hee was quite beside himselfe. If I had not beeene a very child, it may be, his actions might haue made me know him, & yet *Daphnis* made no question, he knew so well to counterfeit. And because it was late, after supper wee withdrew apart, whilst *Callire* and *Filidas* walked vp and downe the chamber: for my part, I knew not their discourse, but ours grew onely from assurances of Loue, which *Filander* vsed to me, out of so intire affection, that it was easie to iudge, that if so often, and in another habit, he sayd nothing to me, wee must not blame his want of will, but of boldnesse onely. And I likewise made the same shew to him: for taking him for a woman, I thought my selfe bound for his good will, for his merit, and for the kindred betweene her and *Daphnis*. From that time *Amidor*, that formerly had borne mee good will, beganne to change his loue, and to loue the fained *Callire*, for that *Filander*, who feared lest his abode might displease that young man, did what hee could to give him contentment. The flitting humour of *Amidor*, could not permit him to receiue these fauours, without becomming amorous: which I thought not strange, for that the beauty, the iudgement, and the curiositie of the shepheard, which in nothing belied the perfections of a mayd, had giuen him ouer-great cause.

See what a foole Loue is, and how he passeth his time, *Filidas*! that is a mayd, he caused to fall in loue with a mayd, and *Amidor* a man; and that in such passion, that for one particular, that onely subiect was sufficient to entertaine vs. God knowes if *Filander* knew how to play the mayd, and if *Callire* counterfeited well her brother, and whether they wanted wisedome to draw on either his new Louer. The coldnesse that *Callire* vsed

to

to mee, was cause that *Filidas* had no iot of suspition; besides, that his loue was a sufficient hinderance. And I must confess, that seeing her so strongly to draw towards *Filidas*, *Daphnis* & I were of opinion, that *Filander* had changed his mind; whereupon I receiued extreme contentment, for the loue I bare his sister. Seuen or eight dayes passed in this sort, no one thinking the time too long, because every one had a particular deaigne. But *Callire*, who feared, her husband might be grieved at this stay, sollicited her brother, to make his purpose knowne to mee, saying, there was no likelihood, but that the familiarity betweene him and mee, might haue permitted mee to haue refused his seruice: but hee assaying on all sides, had neuer the hardinesse to discouer himselfe, and to abuse *Gerestan*. He desired her to goe to her husband in the habit which she had, assuring her, hee would finde out nothing; and to let him know, that by the aduice of *Daphnis*, shee had left *Callire* at *Filidas* house, that at more leisure, she might treat of the marriage of *Amidor* and his Niece. At the first his sister was astonisched, for her husband was very froward. At last, desirous to giue all contentment to her brother, shee resolued; and to make this excuse seeme more probable, they spake with *Daphnis* about the marriage of *Amidor*, which she long time misliked, for many considerations which she layd before them: but knowing they tooke this course to get leauue from *Gerestan*, which otherwise they could neuer haue had, she, that delighted in their company, acquainted me with it; and we were of opinion, that it was needfull to make shew, that this alliance might bee easily compassed: and on this resolution, she wrote to *Gerestan*, counselling him to let his wife stay somewhat with vs, that our friendship might be a meane, that this alliance might finde the lesse difficulty, and that she beleued all things should be well ended.

With this resolution, *Callire* so attyred, goes to finde out her husband, who being beguiled by the habit, tooke her for her brother, and received the excuses for the stay of his wife, beeing well pleased shee should stay there for that cause. Judge, faire shepheardesses, if I might not be deceived, when her husband could not know her. So it was, that by this, the good will he bare me, so increased, that there was no other meane to conceale it, whatsoeuer he could do, the conuersation hauing that vertue with it, that it makes that which was loued, to be more beloued, and more haeted what is found euill. And acknowledging his owne weakenesse, hee aduised himselfe to perswade me, that though he were a woman, yet hee failed not to be in loue with me, with such a passion, and more then if hee had beeene a man; and spoke it so feelingly, that *Daphnis* that loued mee dearely,

A a

dearely, sayd, Vntill that time, shee never knew him: But that it was true, that she likewise was in loue, which one might not thinke strange, since *Filidas*, who was a man, in such sort loued *Filander*: & the dissembled *Callire* swore, that one of the most forcible occasions which constrained her brother to goe away, was the suite hee made to him, whereof they could alledge mee so many reasons, that iealousie suffered my selfe to be perswaded that it was so, determining with my selfe, that there was nothing in it that imported me. Hauing then receiued this fiction, she made no difficulty to speak freely to me of her passio, but yet like a woman: & because she swore vnto me, that the same feeling, and the same passions that men haue for loue, were in her, and that it was a great solace to her, to expresse them often being alone, and hauing no vnpleasing behauour, she would kneele before me, and represent vnto mee her true affections; and euen *Daphnis*, who liked well of it, would sometimes auow it.

Twelue or fifteene dayes passed thus, with such pleasure to *Filander*, that as he since swore to me, he never spent more happy dayes, though his desires gaue him extreme impaciencies, and that was the cause of the dally increase of his affection; and pleasing himselfe in his thoughts, hee would oftentimes withdraw himselfe alone, to entertaine them: and because he would not remoue from vs in the day, many times in the night, when he thought euery body was asleepe, he went out of his chamber, and entred into a garden, where vnder some trees he passed a great part of time in these his considerations; and for that many times he went out in this sort, *Daphnis* obserued it, who lay in the fainte chaire: and as commoly we sooner suspect euill then good, she had some conceit of her, & *Amidor*, for the kindness which the yong shepheard did her; and for more certainty she watched so, that seeming to sleepe, she perceiued the fayned *Callire* to steale out of her bed, and followed her so close, that she was almost as soone in the vpper yard, as the yong shepheard, casting ouer her but one garment for haste; and following her, step by step, by the light of the Moone, she sawe her goe out of the house thorow a doore not well locked, and enter into a garden, which was vnder my chamber window; and passing into the midst of it, saw her sit downe vnder some trees, and lifting his eyes vp to heauen, heard him say aloude:

So my Diane doth surpass  
In beauty, other beauties farre:  
As doth the Adone by night, deface  
The brightness of each other Starre.

Though

Though *Filander* spake these words high enough, yet *Daphnis* heard but some of them, by reason she was farre off; but taking it somewhat remote, she drew toward him without being seene, as softly as she could, though he were so intentiu to his imagination, that had she beene before him, he would not haue perceiued it, as he since swore to me. Hardly had she got neere him, but she might heare him fetch a deepe sigh, loud enough, and after with a lowe voyce say: And why will not my fortune haue me as fit to serue her, as she is worthy to be serued? and why may not she as well receiue the affections of them that loue her, as shee giue them extreme passions? Ah *Callire*! how pernicious to my repose hath your disguising bee, and my boldnesse punished with a right iust infiiction?

*Daphnis* heard *Filander* very attentiuely, and though he spake plaine, yet could she not comprehend what he meant, abused by the opinion that he was *Callire*: this was the cause, that bending an eare more curiously, she heard him lifting his voyce somewhat higher, say; But ouer-bold *Filander*, who shall euer excuse thy fault? or, what great chalifement shall equall thine error? Thou louest this shepheardesse, and seest not, that how much her beauty commands, so much her vertue forbids thee: how often haue I warned thee, and yet thou wouldest not beleue me? Accuse none other of thine euill, but thine owne folly. At this word his tongue stayed, but his eyes and sighes, in stead of it, beganne to giue testimony what her passion was, whereof he had discouered but a little. And to diuert him from his thoughts, or rather, to continue them more sweetly, he rose vp to walke (as he vsed) and so suddenly, that he perceiued *Daphnis*, though to hide her selfe, she fled away. But he that had seene her, to know who it was, pursued her to the entry of a very thicke wood, where he ouertooke her; and thinking she had discouered that which he had so concealed, halfe in choler, sayd: What curiositie (*Daphnis*) is this, to come and spie me out in the night heere? It is, answered *Daphnis* smiling, to learne of you (by craft) that which I should not know otherwise (and herein she thought she spake to *Callire*, not hauing yet discouered that it was *Filander*.) Well (held on *Filander*) thinking to be discouered) what great newes haue you learned? All (sayd *Daphnis*) that I desired to know. Will you then (sayd *Filander*) satisfie your selfe with your curiositie? As well (answered she) as you; and you are like to finde hurt of your deceit. For this keeping about *Diane*, and this great affection which you make shew of to her, will bring you (in the end) but trouble and displeasure. O God! (cryed *Filander*) Is it possible I should be discouered? Ah discreet

creet *Daphnis*) since you know so well the cause of my abode heere, you haue in your hands my life and my death; but if you will berthinke you of what I am, and what offices of amity you haue receiued from me, when occasion is presented, I will rather beleue, that you wish my good and contentment, more then my despayre and ruine.

*Daphnis* as yet thought she spake to *Calypso*, and had opinion, that this feare was because of *Gerestan*, who would take it euill, if hee vnderstood, that she did this office to her brother; and to assure him, sayd: You you had informed me, I should haue yeclded all the counsell, and all the assistance which you could desire of mee. But tell mee this dessigne from poynt to poynt, that your freeness may bind me more to your seruice, than the mistrust you haue had of me, gaue me offence. I will, O *Daphnis* (sayd he) prouided, that you promise me, not to tell it to *Diane*, vntill I give consent. This is a discourse (answered the shepheardeesse,) which we shall make to no good purpose to her, her humor heerein being more strange then you are aware of. That is my griefe (sayd *Philander*) hauing from the beginning knowne, that I enterprise a dessigne almost impossible. For, when my sister and I resolued to change habit, shee taking mine, and I hers, I well fore-sawe, that all that would be to mine aduantage, was, that I might conuerce more freely with her, for some few dayes, (so disguised) that she might not know me for *Filander*. How! (interrupted *Daphnis* all surprised) how, for *Filander*? and are not you *Calypso*? The shepheard, that thought she had knowne it before, was halfe mad to be discouered so foolishly; but seeing the fault was past, and that he could not call backe the words he had spoken, thought it to some purpose to preuent her, and sayd: You may see (*Daphnis*) if you haue cause to be sorry for me; and to say that I trust you not, since so freely I discouer vnto you the secret of my life. For, that which I will tell you, is of that moment, that as soone as any other knowes it, there is no more hope of health in me: but I will rely, and so referre my selfe to your hands, that I cannot liue but by you. Know then (shepheardeesse) that you see before you *Filander* in the habit of his sister; and that loue in me, and compassion in her, haue beene the cause of our disguising: and after went discouering vnto her his extreme affection, the fauours he had of *Amidor* and *Fidias*, the inuention of *Calypso* to change habit, & the resolution to go to her husband, attired like a man: Briefly, all that had passed in this affayre, with such demonstration of loue, that though, at the beginning, *Daphnis* wondred at his hardinesse, and at his sisters; yet so it was, that she lost

lost that wonder, when she knew the greatnesse of his affection, iudging that they might draw him into more great follies. And albeit that if they had called her to their counsell, when they vnderooke the enterprize, she would never haue aduised them to it: yet seeing the effect had sorted to some good, she resolued to assist him in all that was possible, sparing neyther labour, nor care, nor art, which she iudged fit to employ; and hauing made promise, with all assurances of friendship, she gaue the best aduise she could, which was (by little and little) to engage me into his loue. For (sayd she) Loue among women, is one of those wrongs, the words whereof offend more then the blowe. It is a worke that none is ashamed to doe, prouided the name be hidden: So that I hold them the best aduised, which cause themselves to be beloued of their shepheards, before they speake a word to them of loue. So that I owe is a creature that hath nothing rude in it, but the name, being otherwise so pleasing, that there is none offended at it. And therefore, that *Diane* may entrayne it, it must be without naming it, especially without seeing it, and such wisedome must be vsed, that she must loue you, as soone as she may know that you loue her out of loue. For being once embarked, she cannot retire her selfe into the bauen, though she see likelyhood of torment round about her.

It seemes hitherto you haue beene guyded by great wisedome: but you must proceed. The shew which you haue vsed, to be in loue with her, although you be a woman, is to good purpose; it being certayne, that all loue which is suffered, in the end, will prooue answerable. But you must goe forward. We doe easily many things, which we thought very hard, if Custome had not made them easie. Therefore it is, that they which are not acquainted with a meate, find it at the first, to be of an harsh taste, which by little and little (afterward) becomes pleasing to the vsage. You must frame your selfe to vse amorous discourses to *Diane*, to make it more easie, that by custome, that which she hath not bin vsed vnto, may be ordinary: and the better to attayne it, you must devise some iuention to make her more to delight in your wooing; and that you may do, though you be a woman, in the same termes that the shepheards vse. For as the eare which is accustomed to musike, is capable to fit his voyce both by raysing and abasing it to tunes that be harmonious, though otherwise they know nothing in that arte: In like manner, the shepheardeesse, which often heare the discourse of her louer, yelds the powers of her soule, albeit she know not how to loue, letting her selfe to be carried in an insensible manner to the feelings of loue. I meane, shee loueth the company of

that person, in feeling a farre off some pitty of his euill; and in conclusion, loues (in effect) without thinking so much. Looke to it (Filander) you make profit of these instructions else-where, and think, that if I loued you not, and did not pitty you, I would not discouer this secret out of the schoole: but take that which I say, as an earnest of that I desire to doe for you.

With such words, seeing the day approached, they returned into their lodging, not without iesting at the loue of *Amidor*, who tooke him for a mayd, reporting some part of his speech to laugh at it. And about morning falling asleepe in this resolution, they lay longer in bed, to recompence the losse of the night; which gaue commodity to the young *Amidor* to surprize them. And had it not beene, that at that time I came into their chamber, I beleue, he had found out their deceit; for, addressing himselfe to the bed of the fayned *Callire*, though she played her part well, speaking with as great modesty as was possible, setting on it a severe countenance, to put him by the hardinesse to hazzard himselfe; yet it may be, his affection would haue found licence, and his vnwise hands might haue discouered her bosome. But immediately vpon my comming in, *Daphnis* desired me to stay him, which I did, to the great contentment of *Filander*, who sayning to thanke me for it, kissed my hand with so great affection, that if I had beene any thing suspitious, I should haue perceiued, that indeed it had come of loue. After I had giuen them the good day, I tooke *Amidor* away with mee, that they might haue leisure to clothe themselues.

And because they had a purpose to performe that which they had propounded, presently after dinner, when wee were withdrawne (as of custome) vnder soime trees, to enjoy the fresh ayre, though *Amidor* were there, *Daphnis* thought the occasion fit, being well pleased that it was in his presence, to put him from all suspition: and that if at any time, by mischance, hee heard them speake like a man, hee should not thinke it strange; when, making a signe to *Filander*, that hee would further this dessigne, he sayd to him: And what is it, *Callire*, can make you dumbe in the presence of *Diane*? Because (answered he) I go making many wishes to my selfe for the desire I haue to the seruice of my mistris; and among others, one which I neuer thought to desire. What is that, interrupted *Amidor*? That is, continued *Filander*, that I wish to be a man, to doe more seruice to *Diane*. How, added *Daphnis*, are you amorous of her? More, answered *Filander*, then all the rest of the world is aware of. I rather desire, said *Amidor*, you should be a woman, as well for my good, as for that of *Filidas*.

*Filidas*. The consideration neither of the one nor the other, replied *Filander*, shall not make mee change my desire. And what, reioyned *Daphnis*, are you of opinion that *Diane* loues you againe? I am to hope, said *Filander*, by the lawes of Nature, if it be not, that as in her beauty shée outgoes her forces, in her humour she will not disdaine her ordinances. You may thinke of me, as it pleaseth you, said I: I truely sweare vnto you, that there is no man in the world, that I loue more then you. So (replied hee to me) there is no person that hath vowed so much seruice to you: but this happinesse, will last with me, but vntill you finde my small merit, or some other better subiect present it selfe.

Doe you thinke me, replied I, so flitting as you make mee to bee? It is not, answered hee, for that I suppose in you the imperfections of inconstancy, but I know well, I am the cause of the defaults that be in me. The defaults, said I, be rather on my side: and at that word I embrased him, & kissed him, with as sincere an affection, as if he had bene my sister. Whereat *Daphnis* smiled in her selfe, seeing me so much abused. But *Amidor* interrupting vs, iealous (as I beleue) of them both: I thinke (saith he) it is in good earnest, and that *Callire* mocks not. How (said he) I knock? Let the heauens punish mee more rigorously, then they euer chastised periuiled wretch, if there were euer any loue more violent, nor more passionate, then that which I beare to *Diane*. And you were a man, added *Daphnis*, you would learne well to vse mens wordes, to declare your passion. Though, said she, I haue lesse spirit; yet so it is, that my extreme affection will never suffer me to be dumbe in such an occasion. Let vs see (sayre) said *Amidor*, if it be no trouble to you, how you will behaue your selfe in such an enterprize. If my mistrisse, said *Filander*, permit mee, I will doe it, with promise notwithstanding, that shee condiscend to thre supplications which I shall make to her. The first, that shée answere that I demand: the other, that shée thinke it not discribbed, which vnder another person then *Callire*, I shall represent vnto her, but take them for true, though feble passions. And lastly, that shée neuer suffer any other then mee to serue her in this quality. I, that saw they all tooke pleasure, and likewise in truth loued *Filander* vnder his sisters habit, answered, that for the second and last demand, they were granted as shée desired: that for the first, I was so vnaccustomed to make such answers, that I assured my selfe shée would take small pleasure in them: yet, that I might deny him nothing, I assayed to acquit my selfe the best I could. At this word, setting himselfe on one of his knees, because we were set round, taking one of my hands, he beganne in this sort: I should neuer haue thought faire Mistrisse,

mistrisfe, considering so great perfections in you, that it should be permitted to a mortall to loue you, if I had not proued in my selfe, that it is impossible to see you, and not to loue you: but knowing well, that heauen is too iust, to command you a thing impossible, I haue held for certaine, that it pleased you should bee beloued, since it suffered you to bee seene. On this beleefe I haue fortified with reason, the hardinesse I had to behold you, and in my heart blesse that weakenesse, which as soone subiecte me to you, as my eyc was turned on you. Now if the lawes ordaine, that to euery one is to be giuen that which is his, thinke it not euill, faire Shepheardeffe, that I giue you my heart, since it is so acquired by you, that if you refuse it, I will disauow it for mine. At this word he held his peace, to heare what I would answer, but in such a fashion, that had hee not beene in the habit he wore, hardly might one doubt he spake in earnest. And not to contradict that I promised him, I made him this answer: Shepheardeffe, were the prayses which you giue me true, I might haply beleue that which you tell mee of your affection: but knowing well, that they be but flatteries, I cannot beleue, but that the rest are dissimulation. This too much wounds your iudgement (sayd he to me) to doubt of the greatnessse of your merit, but with such excuses you are accustomed to refuse the things which you like not of. I may truely sweare by *Tentes*, and you know well, I will not be periured, that you never refused any thing that was giuen you from a better, nor more intire good will. I know well (answered I) that the Shepheards of this countrey are accustomed to vse more words, where there is lesse truthe; and that they keepe among them as a thing approued, that the gods doe not harken to, nor punish the forswearing of the amorous: if it be the peculiar fault of your Shepheards, I referre my selfe to your knowledge: but I, that am a stranger, should haue no part of their blemish, no more then I commit their fault, and yet from your owne more cruel words, must I draw some satisfaction for my selfe: for though the gods doe not punish the oathes of Louers (if I be not, as it seemeth you make doubt of) the gods will not forbear to send mee the chastisement of periury; and if they doe forbear, you shalbe constrained to confess, that not being punished, I am then no dissembler; and if I be a lyer and am not punished, you must confess that I am a Louer. And therefore, on which side soever your fayre spirit turneth it selfe, it knowes not how to deny, that there is no beauty on earth where *Diane* is fayre; and that never beauty was beloued, as yours is, of that Shepheard that lies at your knees, and in this case implores the succours of all the Graces, to draw one from you, which hee thinkes he merits, if a perfect Louer euer found

found merit. If I be faire, replied I, I referre it to the eyes which behold me with found iudgement: but you cannot deny that you are periured, and a dissembler; and I must tell you, *Callire*, that the confidence with which you speake to mee like a man, makes mee resolute neuer to beleue words, since being a woman, you know so well to disguise. And why, *Diane* (said he then smiling) interrupt you so often your seruants discourse? Do you wonder, that being *Callire*, I speake to you with such affection? Thinke that there is no weakenesse of condition, that shall euer make me diminish, but it must rather be an occasion of preseruing it, both more violent, & more eternall, since there is nothing which so much diminisheth the heat of desire, as the inioyng of that which is desired: and this not being to be had betweene vs, you shal alwaies, even to my coffin, be beloued, and I alwaies a Louer. And yet if *Tiresias*, after he had beene a woman, became a man, why may not I hope, that the gods may do me as great a fauour, if it pleased you? Beleue me, faire *Diane*, since the gods doe nothing in vaine, there is no likelihood, that hauing placed in mee so perfect affection, they will suffer me to labour in vaine: and if nature haue made me a woman, my extreme loue will make me such, as shall not bee vnprofitable. *Daphnis*, who saw that this discourse went sharply on, and that it might be dangerous, that this Louer should suffer himselfe to be carried so farre, as to speake the thing that might discouer him to *Amidor*, interrupted him, saying, Without doubt, *Callire*, your loue shall not vnprofitably be bestowed, so long as you serue this fayre Shepheardeffe, no more then the candle which spends not it selfe in vaine, so long as it giues light to them that are in the house: for all the rest of the world, being but to serue this fayre, you shall haue well bestowed your time, when you haue spent them in her seruice. But let vs change our discourse, said *Amidor*: for see, here comes *Filidas*, who will take no pleasure to heare it, though you be a woman. And presently *Filidas* came, who made vs all rise to salute him. But *Amidor*, that passionately loued the fained *Callire*, when his cousin arrived, made that vse of the time, that stealing away with *Filander* from the company, and taking her vnder the arme, began to speake thus: Is it possible, faire Shepheardeffe, that the words you vse to *Diane*, be true? or haue you onely spoken them, to shew the beauty of your spirit? Beleue me, *Amidor* (answered he) I am no dissembler, and I never said any thing more truely, then the assurance which I haue giuen her of my affection; and if in any thing I haue failed in the truth, it was because I speake lesse then I feele: but heerein am I to bee excused, since there bee not wordes good enough to conceaue. Whereto hee answered with a great sigh, Since it is so faire *Callire*, I can hardly beleue, but you

will much better conceiue the affection is borne you, since you feele the same blowes wherewith you wound others, more then them that are altogether ignorant; and that shall be the cause, that I will not goe to seek out other words, to shew you what I suffer for you, nor other reasons to excuse my boldnesse, then those you haue vſed in your speech to *Diane*; onely I will adde this consideration, to the end you may know the greatness of my affection; that if the blow, which cannot bee auoyded, must be iudged according to the arme that gaue it, the beauty of *Diane*, whose wound you feele, being much leſſe then yours, must haue wrought leſſe hurt in you then yours in me. And yet if you loue with so great violence, consider how *Amidor* ought to be vſed of *Callire*, and what his affection may be; for he knowes not how to declare it better, then by the comparison with yours. Shepheard (answered hee) if the knowledge which you haue of the loue I beare to *Diane*, haue giuen you the boldnesse to speake to mee in this fashion, I must beare the punishment, which my want of consideration deserues, in speaking so openly before you: but so likewise are you to regard, that being a woman, I cannot by that discourse prejudice her honesty; but you doe mine, in talking so to mee, who haue an husband, that will not beare with patience this wrong, if hee vnderſtood it. But besides, since you speake of *Diane*, to whom (in truth) I am intirely giuen, I must tell you, that if you will that I ſhould measure your affection by mine, according to the causes which wee haue to loue, I do not think you loue much, ſince that which you name beauty in me, may not in any ſort retaine that name, being by hers. Faire ſhepheardesſe (ſaid *Amidor*) I neuer thought one could offend you in louing you: but ſince it is ſo, I confeſſe that I deserue chaffiſement, & am ready to receiue what you ſhall award. It is true, you ought alſo to adde to the ſame punishment al that I ſhal deserue in louing you the reſt of my life, for it is im- poſſible I ſhould liue without louing you. And do not think, the diſpleaſure of *Gereſtan* ſhal euer diuert me: he that feares neyther hazzard nor death, will neuer dread a man. But for that which touches you, I confeſſe I haue failed in comparing you with *Diane*, being (without doubt) ill proportioned on her ſide. It is true, that it is not as of a thing equall, but as of the leſſe with the greater: and being of opinion, that that which you feele, may giue you more knowledge of my paine, I haue committed this error, wherein, if you pardon me, I protest neuer to fall into it againe. *Filander*, which loued me in good earnest, and was of opinion, that *Amidor* did ſo likewife, could hardly brooke to haere him ſpeak of mee with ſuch miſprize, if he had not had a purpose to diſcouer what it was, but defi- ging

ring to cleare himſelfe, and thinking hee had ſo much power ouer himſelfe, that without making ſhew of it, hee ſayd, What, is it poſſible, *Amidor*, that your mouth ſhould vtter thofe words, which your heart giues the lyē ſo ſtrongly to? Thinke you that I know not well, that you are a diſembler, and that long ſince, your affection hath beeene for *Diane*? My affection (replied he as ſurprized?) let neuer any loue me, if I loue other ſhepheardesſe then you.

I ſay not, but ſometimes I haue beeene one of her friends: but her vnequall humour, ſometimes all on fire, ſometimes cold like yce, hath ſo remoued me, that at this time ſhe is indiſſerent vnto me. How (ſayd *Filander*) dare you ſay ſo, ſince I know, that indeed ſhe hath loued you, and doth yet loue you? I deny not (ſayd *Amidor*) but ſhe hath loued me: and going on ſomewhat ſmiling, I will not ſwear ſhe loues me not yet: but I can ſuffer it well, ſo ſhe be not beloued of me; and I leaue all the care to her. This which *Amidor* ſpake, was much after his humour; for it was his vſuall vanity, to deſire that men might think he had great good fortunes: and for this cauſe it was his manner, to make himſelfe (of purpoſe) ſo familiar with them he conuerſed with, that when he would draw backe, he could (with his ſmile and cold laughter) make men beleue what he liſted of them. At this bout *Filander* found out his craft, and had it not beeene that he feared to diſcouer himſelfe, he found himſelfe ſo touched with my wrong, that I think he had reprooued him for his lie, yet could hee not forbear to anſwer him ſowrely enough. Truly, *Amidor*, you are the moſt vneworthy ſhepheard that liues in ſo good company, you haue the courage, to talke in this ſort of *Diane*, to whom you haue profeffed ſo much goodwill, and to whom you are ſo much obliged: What may we hope, we that come ſhort of her in merit, ſince neyther her perfections, nor her friendſhip, nor your alliance can curbe your tongue? For my part, I ſu- poſe you to be the moſt dangerous perſon liuing: and who desires quietneſſe, muſt be carefull to ſhunne you as a diſease moſt contagious. At this word he left him, and came to ſeekē vs. His viſage ſo inflamed with choler, that *Daphnis* knew wel he was diſpleased with *Amidor*, who ſtood ſo amazēd at this parting, that he knew not what to doe. Afterward, in the euening *Daphnis* enquired of *Filander*, of their diſcouerſe; and because ſhee loued mee, and iudged that ſhee could not choose but encrease the loue which I bare the ſayned *Callire*; in the morning ſhe told it me, with that ſharpenes againſt *Amidor*, & ſo comodiously for *Filander*, that I muſt confeſſe, that ſince I could not eaſily hold my ſelfe from louing him, when I acknowledgēd (to my thinking) that his good wil had bound me to him. But

But *Daphnis*, who knew well, that if I loued him then, it was because I thought him to be *Callire*, and daily counselled him to discouer himselfe to me, saying, that at the firt I would reie& him, and be angry, but in the end, things shold be so orderd, and for her part, she would labor in that sort, that shee hoped it might be brought about. But shee had not so strong perswasions, that they could giue him courage, which made *Daphne* resolute to do it her selfe, without his knowledge, fore-seeing well that *Gerestan* would haue his wife home, and then all this craft would be to no purpose.

In this resolution, one day, when she found me alone, after soiue ordinary discourse, But what shall become in the end (sayd she) of this folly of *Callire*? I beleue verily you will make her lose her right minde : for she loues you so passionately, that I thinke she cannot liue. If *Filidas* goe one day forth to lye abroad, and you will one night come out of your chamber, you shall see her in that case that I haue often found her in : for almost euery night that is sayre, she spends them in the garden, and pleasheth her selfe so with her owne imaginacions, that I can scarce draw her (but with force) to her rest. I would gladly (sayd I) giue her some comfort: but what would shu haue of me? Do not I render her loue for loue? Do I not expresse it sufficiently in all mine actions? Want I any kinde of courtesie or duty towards her? It is true: but (replied she) if you heard her discourses, I thinke not but you would haue compassion, and I beseech you, that, without her knowledge, you would come to heare her one night. I promised her very freely, and told her, it should be shortly: for *Filidas* told me the night before, she would goe see *Gerestan*, and fall in league with him.

Some dyes after, *Filidas*, according to his purpose, carrying *Amidor* with him, departed to see *Gerestan*, resoluing not to returne of seuen or eight dayes, that he might giue greater token of his loue; and this remoue fell out fity for vs; for if he had beeue at home, hardly shold we haue concealeed the trouble wherein we were. Now the day of his departing, *Filander* so lowing his custome, sayled not to go downe into the garden, halfe vndrest, when he thought euery body asleepe. On the contrary, *Daphnis* that went first to bed, as soone as shee sawe her goe out, made hast to tell me; and hastily casting a cloake about me, I followed her speedily enough, vntill we were in the garden. But when she perceiued where he was, she madesigne to me to come softly after. And when we were come neare, so that wee might haue, we late downe vpon the ground, and presently after I heard him say, But wherefore is all this pa-

tience?

tience? to what end are all these delayes? Must thou not die without succour? or where mayst thou lay thy wound open to the Surgeon that can heale it? And then resting a little while, hee beganne agayne with a great sigh, Say not thou, O troublesome feare, that she will banish vs from her presence, and that shee will ordayne vs to a desperate death. Well, if we die, shall it not be a great solace to vs to abridge so miserable a life as ours is, and by death satisfie the offence we haue done? And as for banishment, if it come not from her, how may we auoyde it by *Gerestan*, whose impaciencie will not suffer vs to stay longer heere? If yet we obtayne a longer stay of this importunate man, and that death do not befall vs from the anger of the fayre *Diane*, alas! can we auoyd the violence of our affections? What must I then doe? that I tell her of it? Ah! I shall offend her for euer, if it were possible for me. Shall I conceale it? and why conceale it, when my death shall giuo her a speedy knowledge? Why should I then offend her? Ah! Wrong and Loue will never go together. Let vs rather die. But if I consent to my death, doe I not make her lose the most fauorit servant that euer she had? I will tell it her then, and at that time I will open my bosome, that the yron may more easily punish my errore, if she will. Behold (will I say) where the heart of the vnsfortunate *Filander* is, who vnder the habit of *Callire*, in stead of gayning your fauour, hath met with your displeasure; reuenge your selfe and punish it, and be assured; that if the reuenge satisfie you, the punishment shall be welcome to him.

Faire shepheardesses, when I heard *Filander* speake in this sort, I knew not what became of mee, I was taken with such an astorishment: I know wel I would haue gone away, that I might see no more of this deceit, so full of despight that I trembled agayne. But *Daphnis*, for the full accomplishment of her treason, held me by force: and because (as I told you) we were very neare the shepheard, at the first noyse wee made, hee turned his head, and thinking it was but *Daphnis*; he came to her: but when hee perceiued mee, and that he thought I had heard him, O God (said he) what punishment shall wipe out my fault? Ah *Daphnis*! I neuer looked for this treason from you. And, at this word hee ranne vp and downe the garden like a madde man, although shee called him twice or thrice by the name of *Callire*; but fearing to be heard of others, and the rather, that despayre might not make *Filander* doe some euill to his owne person, she left me alone, and ranne to follow him, saying to mee in choler at her going: You shall see (*Diane*) that if you deale hardly with *Filander*, it may be you will ruine your selfe so, that you may feele the greatest

greatest displeasure. If I were amazed at this accident (fayre shepheardes) you may well iudge when I knew not which way to returne. At last, after I had some deale recouered my spirits, I searched so on euerie side, that I got into my chamber, where hauing layd mee in my bed all trembling, I could not close mine eyes all that night.

As for *Daphnis*, shee made such search for *Filander*, that at last shee found him rather dead then aliue: and after shee had chidden him, for not knowing how to make vse of so fauourable an occasion, and yet assured him that I was not so amazed at this accident as he, shee brought him a little to himselfe, and in some sort assured him, but not so, that the next morning he had the boldnesse to goe out of his chamber. I on the other side, infinitely offended with them both, was constrayned to keepe my bed, that I might not giue notice of my displeasure to them that were about vs; and particularly, to the neece of *Gerestan*: but by good fortune, she was not more spritefull then reason would; so that we easilly hid from her this euill carriage, which was (almost) impossible for vs, especially for *Filander*, about whom she ordinarily kept. *Daphnis* found her selfe not a little impeached by this occasion; for at the first I could not receiue her excuses. At last, she so turned me on all sides, and knew so well to disquise this affection, that I promised her to forget the displeasure which she had done me, swearing notwithstanding, as for *Filander*, that I would never see him more. And I beleue he had gone away without seeing me, as not able to endure my anger, had it not beene for the danger whereinto he feared *Callire* might fall; for she had to doe with an husband that was froward enough.

This was the consideration that held him backe: but not rising from his bed, fayning to be sicke, fve or sixe dayes passed before I would see him, what reason soever *Daphnis* could alledge in his behalfe: and had it not beene that I was aduertised, that *Filander* would returne, and *Callire* also, I had not seene him of a long time. But the feare I had *Filander* might not marke it, and that which was so secret might not be published throuerout the countrey, made me to resolute to see him, on condition that he should make no shew of that which was passed, hauing not sufficient power ouer my selfe, to stay me from giuing some knowledge of my displeasure. He promised it, and performed it: for hee durst hardly turne his eyes towards me; and when hee did, it was a certayne submission, which gaue me no small assurance of his extreme loue. And by fortune, presently after I was entred, *Filander*, *Amidor*, and the dissembled *Filander* came into the chamber, the windowes whereof being shut, gaue vs good commo-

commodity to hide our faces. *Filander* aduertised his sister of all that had happened: and that was the cause that the stay of *Filander* was not so long as he purposed; for seeing that her sister was sicke, she constrayned them to returne.

But this discourse would be too tedious, if I should not abridge all our small quarrels. So it was, that *Callire* knowing how things had passed, sometimes turning them into sport, sometimes seeking out some likelihoods of reason, knew so well to serue her turne by fayre speech, especially being assisted by *Daphnis*, that at last I consented, that *Filander* should stay vntill his sisters hayres were growne, knowing well that it might ruine her, and my selfe also, if I should be ouer-hasty of their returne. And it fell out as she well foresaw, that during the time that her head grew, the ordinary conuersing with the shepheard, which at the last was not vnplesasing to me, and the tryall of the greatnesse of his loue, begaine to flatter mee (in such sort) that of my selfe I excused his deceit; considering withall, the respect and wisedome wherewith it was carried: So that before he was to goe away, he obtayned this fauour which he so much desired, to wit, that I would forget his crafty deceit; and so long as hee went not beyond the termes of his duty, I loued his good will, and would cherish it for his merit as I ought. The acknowledgement which he gaue me of his contentmēt, hauing this assurance from me, made me also as assured of his affection, as I was before certayne of his displeasure: for he was such an one, that he could hardly dissemble. While we were in these termes, *Filander*, whose loue went on still increasing, could no longer hide the greatnesse of it, so that she resolued to set at once on the dissembled *Filander*.

With this purpose, finding her at leisure, one day as they walked together vnder a tuft of trees, which tooke vp one of the quarters of the garden, he spake vnto her in this sort, after he had beene long denied: Well, *Filander*, shall it be true, that what loue soever I can make shew of, I cannot haue the happinesse to be beloued of you? *Callire* answered him, I know not what more loue you can demaund of me, nor how I can returne you more, vniuersall your selfe giue me the meane. Ah (sayd she) if your will be such as mine, I may well doe it. For that triall which you haue had of me till now, why will you doubt me? Know you not (sayd *Filander*) that extreme desire is alwayes attended by doubt? Sweare vnto me, you wil not be wanting in poynt of Loue, and I will shew you a thing (it may be) you will be astonisched at. *Callire* was somewhat surprized, not knowing what she would say; yet, to know the conclusion, she answered:

sweare: I sweare to you I doe. At this word, for thanks, and almost besides himselfe for ioy; *Filidas* taking her by the head, kissed her with that vehemency, that *Callire* waxed red, and in choler, thrusting her off, asked, what fashion this was? I know (answered *Filidas*) this kisse amazed you, and my actions, till now (it may be) haue made you suspect some strange thing in me: but if you will haue the patience to hearken to mee, I assure my self, you wil rather pity than haue an euil opinion: and repeating from the beginning, till that bout, she gaue him to vnderstand the lawe suite betweene *Phormion* and *Celion*, the accord which was made to appease them, and lastly, the policy his father vied to bring him vp as a man (though she were a woman,) shortly, our marriage, and all that which I haue told you, and then held on in this sort: Now that which I desire of you in satisfaction of your promise, is, that finding the extreme affection which I beare you, you will take me for your wife, and I will marry *Diane* to my cousin *Amidor*, whom my father hath purposelly brought vp in his house for that cause. And then moreouer, added such words to perswade her, that *Callire* astonished more then I can tell you, and hauing some leasure to come to her selfe, answered, that vnfainedly she had told him very strange things, and such as she could hardly beleue, if she did not assure them in another fashion then by words. She then vbuttoning her selfe, opened her bosome; Honesty (sayd shee) forbiddeth mee to shew more: but me thinkes this might satisfie you.

Then *Callire*, that she might winne the leasure to take counsell of vs, made shew to be well pleased, but that she had parents from whom she hoped to haue all her aduancement, and without whose aduice she was not to make a resolution of that importance; and aboue all, besought her to keepe this affaire secret: for, divulging it, would giue men occasion of speech, and she should assure her selfe, that when there remayned nothing but her consent, she would giue prooef of her good will. With such talke they ended their walke, and returned to their lodging, whre all that day *Callire* durst not come neare vs, for feare lest *Filidas* might thinke she had told it vs. But at night, she recounted to her brother all the discourse, and then they both went to finde out *Daphnis*, whom they made acquainted with it. Judge, if the astonishment were great: but whatsoeuer it were, the contentment of *Philander* surpassed it farre, he thinking the heauens had offered him a fayre way to the conclusion of his desires. In the morning *Daphnis* desired me to go see the fayned *Callire*, and the true one abode neare *Filidas*, to the end he might not doubt it. God knowes what became of me, when I knew all this discourse. I sweare vnto you, I was

was so astonished, that I knew not whether it were a dreame. But this was the sport, that *Daphnis* complayned infinitely of mee, for hauing so long concealed it from her, and what oathes I made her, that I knew nothing till that time. She would not beleue me to be such a childe; and when I told her, I thought all men like *Filidas*, she fell a laughing at my ignorance. In the end we resolued, for feare lest *Belinde* would dispose of me at her pleasure, or that *Filidas* might make some attempt for *Amidor*, that we must doe nothing at randon, and without fore-thinking. For as then, by the sollicitation of *Daphnis* and *Callire*, I promised *Philander* to marry him. This was the cause, that taking agayne their owne habits, after he had assured *Filidas* that he went to talke with his parents, he returned with his sister to *Gereskan*, who neuer tooke notice of this disguising. From that time it was permitted to *Philander* to write to me: for sending ordinarily newes to *Filidas*, I had alwayes his letters, and that so cunningly, that neyther she, nor *Amidor* euer perceiued them.

Now fayre shepheardesses, till this time, this passage neuer brought me sorrow; but alas! it is that which followed, that cast me into such a bottomlesse pit, that euen to my coffin I must neuer hope to taste any sweet thing. It fell out to my misfortune, that a stranger passing thorow that Countrey, spyeid me sleeping at the fountayne of *Sicamores*, where the coolenesse of the shadow, and sweet murmuring of the water about the middest of the day had made me sleepe. He whom the beauty of the place had brought thither, to spend the heat of the day, no sooner cast his eyes on me, but he noted some thing that pleased him. O gods! what man, or rather, what monster was this? he had a visage shining again for blacknesse, his hayre curled, and like the wooll of our sheepe, after they haue beene a moneth or two shorne, his beard in little tufts about his chinne, his nose flat betweene his eyes, but high and large at the end, his mouth great, his browes frowning and hanging ouer his nose; but nothing was so strange as his eyes, for in all his face there appeared nothing white, but that which he shewed when he rowled them in his head. This fayre louer was destined me by the heauens, to put me quite out of loue with louing: For, being rauished to behold me, he could not contayne (transported, as I thinke, with this new desire) but approaches to kisse me. But because he was in armor, and on horse-backe, the noyse that he made, awoke me, and in so good time, that as he was about to stoope to satisfie his will, I opened mine eyes, and seeing this monster so neare me, at the first I cryed out, and then laying my hand on his face, I strucke him with all my might: he that was halfe leaning, not looking for this defence, was so surprised,

swered: I sweare to you I doe. At this word, for thanks, and almost besides himselfe for ioy; *Filidas* taking her by the head, kissed her with that vehemency, that *Callire* waxed red, and in choler, thrusting her off, asked, what fashion this was? I know (answered *Filidas*) this kisse amazed you, and my actions, till now (it may be) haue made you suspect some strange thing in me: but if you will haue the patience to hearken to mee, I assure my self, you wil rather pity than haue an euil opinion: and repeating from the beginning, till that bourt, she gaue him to vnderstand the lawe suite betweene *Phormion* and *Celion*, the accord which was made to appease them, and lastly, the policy his father vised to bring him vp as a man (though she were a woman,) shortly, our marriage, and all that which I haue told you, and then held on in this sort: Now that which I desire of you in satisfaction of your promise, is, that finding the extreme affection which I beare you, you will take me for your wife, and I will marry *Diane* to my cousin *Amidor*, whom my father hath purposly brought vp in his house for that cause. And then moreover, added such words to perswade her, that *Callire* astonished more then I can tell you, and hauing some leasure to come to her selfe, answered, that vnfainedly she had told him verie strange things, and such as she could hardly beleue, if she did not assure them in another fashion then by words. She then vbuttoning her selfe, opened her bosome; Honesty (sayd shee) forbiddeth mee to shew more: but me thinkes this might satisfie you.

Then *Callire*, that she might winne the leasure to take counsell of vs, made shew to be well pleased, but that she had parents from whom she hoped to haue all her aduancement, and without whose aduise she was not to make a resolution of that importance; and aboue all, besought her to keepe this affaire secret: for, divulging it, would giue men occasion of speech, and she should assure her selfe, that when there remayned nothing but her consent, she would giue prooef of her good will. With such talke they ended their walke, and returned to their lodging, where all that day *Callire* durst not come neare vs, for feare lest *Filidas* might thinke she had told it vs. But at night, she recounted to her brother all the discourse, and then they both went to finde out *Daphnis*, whom they made acquainted with it. Judge, if the astonishment were great: but whatsoeuer it were, the contentment of *Philander* surpassed it farre, he thinking the heauens had offered him a fayre way to the conclusion of his desires. In the morning *Daphnis* desired me to go see the fayned *Callire*, and the true one abode neare *Filidas*, to the end he might not doubt it. God knowes what became of me, when I knew all this discourse. I sweare vnto you, I was

was so astonished, that I knew not whether it were a dreame. But this was the sport, that *Daphnis* complayned infinitely of mee, for hauing so long concealed it from her, and what oathes I made her, that I knew nothing till that time. She would not beleue me to be such a childe; and when I told her, I thought all men like *Filidas*, she fell a laughing at my ignorance. In the end we resolued, for feare lest *Belinde* would dispose of me at her pleasure, or that *Filidas* might make some attempt for *Amidor*, that we must doe nothing at randon, and without fore-thinking. For as then, by the sollicitation of *Daphnis* and *Callire*, I promised *Philander* to marry him. This was the cause, that taking agayne their owne habits, after he had assured *Filidas* that he went to talke with his parents, he returned with his sister to *Gereskan*, who neuer tooke notice of this disguising. From that time it was permitted to *Philander* to write to me: for sending ordinarily newes to *Filidas*, I had alwayes his letters, and that so cunningly, that neyther she, nor *Amidor* euer perceiued them.

Now fayre shepheardeſſes, till this time, this passage neuer brought me sorrow; but alas! it is that which followed, that cast me into ſuch a bottomleſſe pit, that euen to my coſſin I muſt neuer hope to taste any ſweet thing. It fell out to my misfortune, that a ſtranger paſſing thorow that Countrey, ſpyed me ſleeping at the fountain of *Sicamores*, where the coolenesſe of the shadow, and ſweet murmuring of the water about the middeſt of the day had made me ſleepe. He whom the beautey of the place had brought thither, to ſpend the heat of the day, no ſooner caſt his eyes on me, but he noted ſome thing that pleaſed him. O gods! what man, or rather, what monſter was this? he had a viſage ſhining again for blackneſſe, his hayre curled, and like the wooll of our ſheepe, after they haue beeene a moneth or two ſhorne, his beard in little tufts about his chinne, his noſe flat betweene his eyes, but high and large at the end, his mouth great, his browes frowning and hanging ouer his noſe; but nothing was ſo ſtrange as his eyes, for in all his face there appeared nothing white, but that which he ſhewed when he rowled them in his head. This fayre louer was deſtined me by the heauens, to put me quite out of loue with louing: For, being rauished to behold me, he could not contayne (transported, as I thinke, with this new deſire) but approaches to kiffe me. But because he was in armor, and on horſe-backe, the noyſe that he made, awoke me, and in ſo good time, that as he was about to ſtoope to ſatisfie his will, I opened mine eyes, and ſeeing this monſter ſo neare me, at the firſt I cryed out, and then laying my hand on his face, I ſtrucke him with all my iugement: he that was haſfe leaning, not looking for this deſence, was ſo ſurpriſeſſed,

surprized, that the blow made him stagger, and for feare (as I thinke) he should tumble on me, he chose rather to fall on the other side, so that I had leisure to rise: I thinke if he had touched me, I should haue dyed of very feare. For imagine, that whatsoeuer is most horrible, yet it comes short of the terriblenesse of his fearefull visage. I was gone a pretty way off by that time he could rise vp: and seeing that he could not ouer-take me, by reason he was heauily armed, and that Feare tyed wings to my feet, he mounted presently on his horse, and with a full gallop followed me, when (almost out of breath) the poore *Filidas*, which hard by enter-tayned *Philander*, who was come to see vs, and was faine asleepe, as they talked, hearing my voyce, ranne to me, seeing this cruell fellow pursue me with his naked lword in his hand, for the choler of his fall wiped away all loue, she generously opposed against his fury, manifesting to me, by that last act, that she had loued me as much as her sexe would permit, and layd hold on the bridle of the horse; whereat this barbarous fellow was so offended, that without regard of humanity, hee strucke him with his sword on his arme, with such a force, that he cut it from the body; and shee then almost dead with smart, fell downe vnder the horses feet, who beganne to bound so roughly, that his master had much to do to stay him. And because *Filidas* (in dying) gaue a great cry, naming *Philander* aloude, he being neere, heard her, and seeing her in so pittifull a case, was extremely offended: but much more, when hee sawe this barbarous companion, being alighted from his horse, ranne after me with his sword in his hand; and I, as I tell you, what with feare, and what with the course I had made, so much out of breath, that I could scarce set one legge before another: what became of this poore shepheard? I doe not thinke, that euer Lion robbed of her whelpes, when shee sawe them carried away, ranne more mainely after them, then the courageous *Philander* after this cruell wretch. And because hee was laden with armour that hindered his running, he ouer-tooke him quickly, and cryed: Forbear, knight, forbear any more to wrong her that deserueth rather to be adored: and because he would not stay, were it for that being in a fury, hee heard not his voyce, or being a stranger, vnderstood not his language, *Philander* putting a stone into his Sling, cast it with such a force, that hitting him on the head, but for the armour which he wore, without doubt, hee had killed him at that blowe, which was such, that the stranger stooped agayne: but presently raysing him selfe, and forgetting the anger which he had against me, hee addressed himselfe in a rage towards *Philander*, who was so neere, that hee could not auoyde the vn-

happy

happy blowe he gaue him in his body, hauing nothing in his hand, but his sheep-hooke for his defence. Notwithstanding, seeing the sword of his enemy so high, his naturall generosity gaue him that strength and courage, that instead of going backe, hee aduanced himselfe forward, and setting his sheep-hooke against his brest, ranne the yron end of it betweene his eyes, so farre, that he could not draw it out, which was the cause, that thus leauing it fastened, he tooke hold on his throat, and with his hands and teeth finished the slaughter.

But alas, this was a victory dearely bought; for as this barbarous wretch fell downe dead on the one side, *Philander* (for want of strength) was faine to let himselfe fall on the other; but so lighting ouer-thwart, the sword which lay crosse the body, hit in the poynt against a stone, and the weight of his body made it come out of the wound. I that from time to time turned my head, to see if this cruell monster had yet ouertaken me, sawe well where *Philander* ranne, and then an extreme feare tooke me. But alas, when I sawe him wounded so dangerously, forgetting all feare, I stayed my selfe; but when he fell downe, the feare of death could not hold me from running to him, and almost as dead as he, I cast my selfe on the ground, and called him all be-blubbered by his name. He had lost much bloud, and still lost more from both ends of the wound. And see what force Loue hath: I that could not looke vpon bloud without swowning, had then the courage to thrust my handkercher into the wound, to stoppe the course of bloud; and tearing a piece of my veile, I put it into the other part. This little helpe stood him in some stead; for, hauing layd his head in my lappe, he opened his eyes, and came agayne to his speech: And perceiving me all couered with teares, he enforced himselfe to say: If euer I hoped for an end more fauourable then this, I pray the heauens (fayre shepheardeesse) that it take no pitty on me.

I sawe well, that my small merit could not bring me to the happiness desired, and I feared, that at the last, despayre would constraine me to some furious manner of resolution against mine owne person. The gods that know better what is fit for vs then we can desire, haue well prouided, that hauing of long time liued but for you, I should likewise die for you. And judge what my contentment is, since I not onely die for you, but withall, in prefering to you the thing which of all the world you hold most deare, which is your chastity. Now mistresse, since there remayneth nothing more to my contentment, but onely one poynt, by the affection which you haue found in *Philander*, I heartily pray you to grant

grant it mee, to the end that this happy soule may goe to expect you in the *Elisian* fieldes, with this satisfaction from you. He spake this in broken words, and with much payne. And I that sawe him in this case, to giue him all the contentment he could desire, answered him: 'Friend, the gods haue not raysed in you so good and honest affection to extinguish it so presently, and to leaue vs nothing but sorrow: I hope they will giue you yet so much life, that I shall make you know, that I giue not place to you in loue, no more then you doe to any other in merit. And for prooef of that which I doe say, deuaund you that onely thing which you would gladly haue of me, for there is nothing that I can or will deny you.'

At these last words, he tooke me by the hand, and laying it to his mouth; I kisse (sayth he) this hand by way of thankes, for the grace and fauour you haue done me; and then lifting vp his eyes to heauen: O God (sayd he) I desire of you but so much life, as may serue for the accomplishment of the promise which *Diane* comes to make me: and then addressing his speech to me, with such paine, that he could hardly vtter a word, he sayd thus vnto me, Now (fayre Mistresse) heare then what it is I require of you: Since I feele not the anguish of death, but for you, I coniure you, by my affection, and by your promise, that I may carry this contentment out of the world, that I may say, I am your husband; and beleue me, if I doe obtayne it, my soule shall most contentedly goe into what place souuer it must passe, hauing so great a testimony of your goodwill. I sweare to you (sayre shepheardesse) that these words strucke me so to the quicke, that I knew not how I was able to sustayne my selfe: and, I thinke (for my part) it was onely the desire I had to please him, that gaue me the courage. This was the cause that he had no sooner ended his deuaund; but I griping his hand, sayd, *Philander*, I graunt you that you deuaund of me: and I sweare to you, before all the gods, and particulerly before the deities which are in this place, that *Diane* giues her selfe to you, and that she taketh you both in heart and soule for her husband: and in speaking these words, I kissed him. And I (sayd he) take you, my fayre mistris, and giue my selfe to you for euer, right happy and content to beare the most glorious name of *Diane*. Alas, this word of *Diane* was the last word he vttered; for hauing his arme about my necke, and drawing me to him, to kisse me, he dyed, breathing his last vpon my lippes. How I looked, when I beheld him dead, you may easly iudge (fayre shepheardesse) since I so truly loued him. I fell grouellng vpon him, without pulse, and without sence, and fell into a swowning, so that I came

Lib. 6.  
to my selfe without my owne knowledge. O God! how liueth my heart since I felt this losse, and found that to be too true, which so oftentimes he had foretold me, that I should loue him more after his death, then during life; for I haue so liuely preserued his remembrance in my soule, that (me thinketh) I haue him alwayes before mine eyes, and without ceasing he sayth to me, vntesse I will be vngratefull, I must loue him. So I doe (O good soule) and with the most entire affection that I can: and if where thou art, there be any knowledge of that which is done heere below, receiue (O deare friend) this good will, and these teares which I doe offer, in testimony that *Diane* loueth cuen to her coffin, her dearest *Philander*.

The end of the sixt Booke.

Cc 3

THE



## THE SEVENTH BOOKE of *Astrea* and *Celadon*.

**A***strea*, to interrupt the sad thoughts of *Diane*, But faire shepheardesse, said hee, who was that miserable wretch that was cause of so great misfortune? Alas, said *Diane*, why would you I should tell you? He was an enemy that came not into the world, but to be the cause of my euerlasting teares. But yet, answered *Astrea*, was it never knowne what he was? They said, replyed she sometime after, that he came out of certaine barbarous countries beyond the Straits, I know not whether I can name the right, which they call the pillars of *Hercules*: and the cause that brought him so farre for my mischefe, was, that he became amorous of a Lady in those countries, who commanded him to seeke throughout *Europe*, to know whether there were any other as faire as she; and if he met with any Louer that would maintaine the beauty of his Mistresse, hee was bound to fight with him, and to send her his head, with the picture and name of the Lady. Alas! I would it had pleased the heauens that I had not bene so ready to slie when he pursued me to kill me, that by my death I might haue preuented that of poore *Filander*. At these wordes shee set her selfe on weeping with such abundance of teares, that *Phillis*, to diuert her, changed the discourse, and rising vp first, We haue (said she) sat long enough, me thinks it were good to walke awhile.

At this word they all three rose, and went toward that part of their Hamlet, for it was well neere dinner time. But *Leonide*, who was, as I told you, harkening, lost not one word of these shepheardeffes; and the more she heard of their newes, the more she desired to heare. But when shee saw them goe away without speaking a word of *Celadon*, shee was much troubled; yet in hope she might (laying that day with them) discouer

courer somewhat, as before she purposed. When she saw them gone a little off, she rose out of the bush, and making a short turne, shee set to follow them, for she would not haue them thinke, shee had ouer-heard them. By chance, *Phillis* turning backward, as they were going, espyed her a far off, and shewed her to her companions, who stayed; but seeing shee came towards them, to doe her the dutie which her condition merited, they returned backe and saluted her. *Leonide*, full of courtesie, after she had returned them their salutation, addressing her selfe to *Diane*, sayd, Wise *Diane*, I will this day be your ghest, prouided, that *Astrea* and *Phillis* bee of the company: for I came this morning from my vncle *Adamas*, with a purpose to passe all this day with you, to know if that which I haue heard of your vertue, *Diane*; of your beauty, *Astrea*; of your merit, *Phillis*; answere the report that is divulged of you. *Diane* seeing her companions referred themselves to her, answered, Great Nymph, it were better for vs, haply, that you had knowlidge of vs onely from report, since that is very fauourable on our side; yet since it pleaseth you to doe vs this honour, we receiue it, as we are bound to receiue with reuerence, the graces which the heauens are pleased to doe vs. At these last wordes they tooke her to them, and led her to *Diane*'s Hamlet, where she was receiued with so good countenance, and with such ciuility, that shee wondred how it was possible, that persons so accomplished, should bee brought vp among the woods and pastures. After dinner, they spent the time in deuices and demands which *Leonide* made; and among others, she enquired what was become of a shepherd named *Celadon*, who was the sonne of *Alcippe*. *Diane* answered, that some while agoe, he was drowned in *Lignon*. And his brother *Licidas*, is he married (said she?) Not yet (said *Diane*) & I think he hath no great haste, for the displeasure for his brother is yet too fresh in his memory. And by what misfortune (said she) did he miscarry? He would haue succoured (said *Diane*) this shepheardesse, who was faine in before him; and then she shewed her *Astrea*. The Nymph, who without making any such shew, tooke heede to *Astreas* actions, seeing that on that remembrance, she changed her countenance; and to hide this blushing, she held her hand before her eyes, knew that shee loued him in good earnest; and to discouer more, held on, And was the body never found? No (sayd *Diane*) onely his hat was found, which was stayed at one of the trees, which the stremme of water had made bare at the roote. *Phillis*, who knew, that if this discourse held further, it would draw teares from the eyes of her companion, who had much adoe to restraine them; that she might interrupt it, But great Nymph, said she, what good fortune for vs was

was that, that brought you to this place? At our first meeting (said *Leonide*) I haue told you it. It was onely to haue the good of knowing you, and to enter league with you, desirous to haue the pleasure of your company. Since that is it (replied *Phillis*) if you finde it good, it will be fit to goe, as vsually wee doe, to our accustomed exercisles, and so you shall take more notice of our fashiō of life; especially, if you will giue vs leaue to vse in your presence, the liberties of our villages. That is it, said *Leonide*, I would haue requested of you, for I know, that coſtraint is neuer pleasing, & I come not hither to displease you. In this ſort, *Leonide* taking *Diane* by the one hand, and *Aſtrea* with the other, they went forth, and with many diſcourſings, came to a wood which runnes along to the banke of *Lignon*, and there hauing more moysture, grew thicker, and made the place more like a forreſt. They were ſcarce ſet, when they heard one ſing neare them, and *Diane* was the firſt that knew the voyce: and turning toward *Leonide*, Great Nymph (ſayd ſhe) doe you take pleasure to heare the diſcourse of a young ſhepherd, who hath nothing of the village, but the name and the habit? for hauing beeene alwaies brought vp in the great Townes, and among ciuill perſons, he hath leſſe touch of our woods, then of any other thing. And who is he (answered *Leonide*)? It is (replied *Diane*) the ſhepherd *Siluander*, who hath made abode among vs but 25. or 30. moneths. And of what Family (ſaid the Nymph) is he? It is an hard matter (added *Diane*) to tell you, for himſelfe knowes not who is his father and mother, only he hath ſome light coniecture, that they were of the *Forreſts*: and for this cauſe, when hee could, hee returned hither, with resolution to goe no more away; and indeed, our *Lignon* would haue great losſe if hee ſhould; for I doe not thinke there was a more accomplished ſhepherd of long time. You praise him too much (answered the Nymph) to make me desirous to ſee him: let vs goe to entertainc him. If he perceiue vs here (ſaid *Diane*) and he thinke you desire it, he will not faile to come ſoone enoughto vs. And it fell out as ſhe ſayd, for the ſhepherd by fortune wal-king abroad, ſeeing them, turned his pace towards them immediately, and ſaluted them. But because he knew not *Leonide*, he made as though he would hold on his way; when *Diane* ſaid to him, Is it ſo, *Siluander*, that you haue learned this ciuility in the great Townes, to thrust your ſelfe into ſo good company, and then to ſay nothing? The ſhepherd anſwered ſmiling, Since I haue offendēd by interrupting you, I may the leſſe hold on in the fault, and ſo, as I thinke, may my error be leſſer. That is not it (answered *Diane*) that makes you part hence ſo ſoone, but rather, for that you finde nothing here worth your ſtay; yet if you turne your eyes on this

this Nymph, I assure my ſelfe, that if you haue eies, you will not thinke you can finde better elſe-where. That which drawes any thing, replied *Siluander*, muſt haue ſome ſympathy with it: but you may not thinke it ſtrange, that being no ſuch betweene ſo great worth and my imperfeſtions, that I haue not felt this attraction which you reproach me for. Your mo-desty (interrupted *Leonide*) hath made you put this unlikenesse betweene vs; but thinke you it is in the body, or in the ſoule? For the body, your countenance, and the reſt which we ſee of you deny it; if it be in the ſoule, it ſeemes (if you haue it reasonable) it diſfers nothing from ours. *Siluan-der* knew well he was not now to talke to ſhepherdesses, but with a per-ſon of an higher ſtraine, which made him reſolute to anſwer with stronger reaſons, then he was uſed to haue among the ſhepherdesses, and therefore he ſayd thus: The price, faire Nymph, of all things in the world, is not valedewd according to that we ſee of them, but according to the proper uſe of them: for otherwife, a man who is the moſt eſteemed, ſhould be the leaſt; ſince there is no creature which ſurpaſſeth not him in ſome things peculiар: one in ſtrength; another in ſwiftneſſe; another in ſight; an-other in hearing; & ſuch like priuiledges of the body. But whē we conſider that the gods haue made al these creatures to ſerue man, and man to ſerue God; we muſt confeſſe that the gods haue thought beſt of him. And by this reaſon I would tell you, that to know the price of any thing, we muſt haue an eye to the ſervice the gods haue appointed it: for there is no like-lihood, but that they know beſt the true value of euery thing. Now in do-ing thus with you and mee, who would not ſay but the gods are muſt miſtaken in vs, if being equall in merit, they ſerue themſelues of you, as a Nymph, and of me, as a ſhepherd? *Leonide*, in her miſt commended the gentle ſpirit of this ſhepherd, which ſo well defended ſo bad a cauſe: and to give him occaſion to ſpeak on, ſhe ſaid, Though this may bee allow-ed in reſpect of mee, yet wherefore is it that theſe ſhepherdesses cannot ſtay you, ſince according to your ſpeech, they are to haue this confor-mity with you? Wife Nymph, anſwered *Siluander*, the leſſer yeelds alwaies to the greater part; where you are, theſe ſhepherdesses muſt doe as you doe. And why (added *Diane*) diſdainefull ſhepherd, eſteeme you ſo ſlen-derly of vs? You ſhould rather thinke (answered *Siluander*) that it is for the good opinion I haue of you, that I thus ſpeak: for if I thought hardly of you, I would not ſay that you were a part of this great Nymph, ſince that thereby I make you no whit her inferiour, but that ſhe deſerues to be beloved and reſpected for her beauty, for her meriſts, and for her con-diſion; and you, for your beauteies and meriſts. You mock your ſelfe, *Sil-ander*,

*Siluander* (answering *Diane*) I would haue you thinke that I haue sufficient to winne the affection of an honest shepheard. She spake thus, for that hee was so farre from all Loue, that among them, hee was alwaies called the vnsevisible, and the delighted to make him talke. Whereto hee answered, Your conceit may be as pleaseth you, yet I must tell you, that for effecting this, you want one of the principall parts. And what is that, said *Diane*? The will (replied he) for your will is so contrary to this effect, that, said *Phillis* interrupting him, *Siluander* would never loue more. The shepheard hearing her speake, drew aside to *Astrea*, saying, that they ouer-charged him, and that hee was wronged, when so many set against him. The wrong (said *Diane*) is turned onely to me: for this shepheardesse seeing me in the hands of so strong an enemy, and conceauing a sinister iudgement of my courage and force, would haue helped me: It is not in this (said he) faire shepheardesse, that she hath offended you; for she had had small iudgement, if she thought not your victory certaine: but it was, for that seeing me already vanquished, she would robbe you of the honor, in attempting to giue me a blow at the end of the combate; but I know not what her meaning was: for if you meddle no further, I assure you, she shall not so easily get this glory as she thinkes. *Phillis*, who of her nature was pleasant, and who on this day resolued to passe away the time for *Leonide*, answered him with a certaine lifting vp of her head: It is good (*Siluander*) that you haue an opinion, that to vanquish you, is a thing to be desired, and honourable for me, I say, for mee, who will place this victory among the least that euer I wannte. You should not so much vnder-valew it, said the shepheard, since this serues not but to be the first that hath conquered me. As much (replied *Phillis*) as there is honour to bee the first in that which is of worth, so much shamefull is it in the contrary. Ah shepheardesse (interrupted *Diane*) speake not so of *Siluander*: for if all the shepheards which are lesse then he, should bee vnder-valewed, I know not him that we are to esteeme. See *Diane* (answered *Phillis*) the first blowes by which you come ouer him! without doubt, he is yours. It is the custome of these haggard & wilde spirits, to suffer themselues to be taken at the first attract; and for that they haue not beeene acquainted with such fauours, they receiue them with such a taste, that they haue not power to resist them. *Phillis* spake these words to mock him: yet it fell out, that the gracious defence of *Diane*, made the shepheard thinke, that hee was bound to serue her by the lawes of courtesie. And after that, that opinion, and the perfections of *Diane*, had that power ouer him, that hee conceaued this bud of Loue, that time and conuerstation might encrease.

as we will tell you afterwards. This disputation held some while among the shepheardesses, to the good contentment of *Leonide*, who wondred at their gentle spirit. *Phillis*, at last, turning her selfe to the shepheard, said, But whereto serue so many wordes? If it bee true that you are such, let vs come to the prooef of it, and shew me what shepheardesse makes any speciall account of you. She (answered the shepheard) whom you see me make especiall account of. You meane (added *Phillis*) that you seeke not after any: but that proceeds from want of courage. Much rather (replied *Siluander*) from want of will. And then going onward, And you which vnder-valew me so much, tell vs what shepheard it is whom you loue so especially? All them who haue spirit and courage (answered *Phillis*) For whosoeuer sees that which is louely, without louing it, wanteth spirit or courage. That reason (sayd *Siluander*) bindes you then to loue me, or accuse your selfe of great want. But let vs not speake so generally: name one in particular, whom you loue. Then *Phillis*, with a countenance graue and seuerne, I would with a good will there were boldnes enough to vndertake it. That is then (added *Siluander*) for want of courage. Rather (said *Phillis*) want of will. Wherefore then (cryed out *Siluander*) would you it should be thought more out of want of will in you, than in me? Would it be well (sayd the shepheardesse) that the actions which do besit you, should be permitted me? Would you thinke well of it, if I should runne, play on the Lute, or leape, as you do?

But our disputation is too long about so bad a subiect: let *Diane* set downe the conclusion, and see if I be not confident in the iustnesse of my cause, since I take a partiall iudge. I shall be alwayes (answered *Diane*) according to the reason of my knowledge. Well (sayd *Phillis*) when words cannot make good that which they would vphold, is he not bound to come to his prooefes? Yes without doubt (answered *Diane*) Condemne then this shepheard (sayd *Phillis*) to giue prooef of the merit which hee sayes is in him, and that on this occasion to vndertake to serue and loue a shepheardesse of that sort, that he will enforce her to confess that hee deserues to be beloued, that if he cannot, that hee freely acknowledge his little valour.

*Leonide* and the shepheardesses found this proposition so reasonable, that by a common voyce it was enacted; Not (sayd *Diane* smiling) that hee be constrainyd to loue her. For in Loue, Constraint can do nothing, and his birth must grow from a free will. But I ordayne, that hee serue and honour her as you say. My iudge, (answered *Siluander*) though you haue condemned mee without hearing me; yet will I not appeale from your

your sentence: but onely I require, that she whom I must serue, may merit and know how to acknowledge my seruice. *Siluander, Siluander,* (sayd *Phillis*) because your cunning fayles, you seeke out starting-holes: But I will put you besides all these meanes, by her whom I will name: for it is *Diane*, in whom there is wanting neyther spirit to know your merit, nor desert to giue you will to serue her. For my part (answered *Siluander*) I acknowledge more then you can speake; prouided that it be no profaning of her beauties, to serue them for wages. *Diane* would haue spoken, and excused her selfe of this charge; but at the reuert of *Leonide* and *Astrea*, she consented, yet with this condition, that this assay should last but three moneths.

This busynesse being thus stayed, *Siluander* casting himselfe on his knees, kissed the hand of his new mistresse, as if he were to make the oath of his fidelity: and then raysing himselfe, Now (sayd he) that I haue receiued your ordinance, will you not suffer mee (fayre Mistresse) to profound vnto you a wrong that hath beene done me? *Diane* answered, hee had all liberty. He tooke it agayne thus: If in speaking ouer-much of my merits against one that vilified me, I haue iustly beeene condemned to bring my proofoe, why may not this glorious *Phillis*, who is more vaine then I, and who hath beene the cause of this discourse, be sentenced to bring forth a like witnessse? *Astrea* not staying for *Dianes* answere, sayd, that shee tooke this request to be so iust and honest, that shee made no question but it should be agreed vnto. And *Diane* hauing demanded the aduice of the Nymph, and seeing she was of the same opinion, sentenced the shepheardesse as he requested. I expect not (sayd *Phillis*) a more fauourable sentence, hauing such parties. But well, what must I do? You must seeke to get (sayd *Siluander*) the fauour of some shepheard. That is not reasonable (sayd *Diane*) for Reason is neuer contrary to Duty: but I ordayne, that she serue a shepheardesse; and that as well as you, she be bound to make her loue her: and that party of you two that shall be lesse amiable, at the pleasure of them whom you serue, be compelled to giue place to the other. I will then (sayd *Phillis*) serue *Astrea*. Sister (answred she) it seemes you doubt of your merit, since you goe about a worke done already. But it must be the fayre *Diane*, not onely for the two reasons which you haue alledged to *Siluander*, which are her merits and her spirit: but besides that, for that she may more equally iudge of the seruice both of the one and other, so that you must addresse your selfe to her alone.

This ordinance seemed equall to them all, that they should obserue  
(after

(after they had drawne oath from *Diane*, that without regard of any thing, but the truth, the three moneths being ended, she should deliuer her iudgement.) It was a pleasure to see this new fashion of loue: for *Phillis* played the seruant very well, and *Siluander* in dissembling, became so in good earnest, as wee will tell you afterwards. *Diane* on the other side knew so well how to play the mistresse, that there was no body but would haue thought her to be so without fayning. As they were in this discourse, and that *Leonide* in her selfe had iudged this life to be most happy of all others, they sawe come from the pastures side two shepheardeſſes, and three shepheards, which by their habits shewed to be strangers: and when they were come somewhat neerer *Leonide*, who was curious to know the shepheards and shepheardeſſes of *Lignon* by their names, demanded who they were: whereto *Phillis* answered, that they were strangers, and that some moneths are past since they came into their company; and for her, she knew no more of them. Then *Siluander* added, that shee lost much, in not taking a more particular knowledge of them: for among the rest there was one named *Hylas*, of as pleasing an humor, as one would wish, for that he loues, as himselfe sayes, all that he sees; but he hath this good with it, that what doth him the hurt, giues him the remedy: for that if his inconstancy make him loue, his inconstancy likewise will make him soone forget it, and he will tell you such extravagant reasons, to prooue his humour to be the best, that it is impossible to heare him without laughter. Truly (sayd *Leonide*) his company must be very delightfull, and we are to put him to his discourse, as soone as he comes to vs. That will be (answered *Siluander*) without any great labour, for he will talke euerlastingly. But as he is of this humour, there is another with him that is of a quite contrary, because he doth nothing but bewaile a dead shepheardeſſe whom he loued. This is a very stayed man, and seemeth to haue iudgement; but withall, he is so sad, that there comes nothing from his mouth that sauoureth not of the melancholy of his soule. And what is it (replied *Leonide*) that stayes them in this Countrey? To tell you true, sayd he, I haue not yet beeene so inquisitiue: but if you will, I will aske them the question; for mee thinkes they come to vs. At this word they were very neare, so that they might heare *Hylas* come chaning these Verses:

## The History

The Towne song of Hylas vpon his Inconstancy.

The fayre that's able me to stay,  
The bell of Honour beares away.

I lone to change, tis libertie,  
My humour beares me out in it:  
But what? if I inconstant be,  
That they misprize me, is it fit?  
So far is it, who me can stay,  
The bell of Honour beares away.

To make a barbarous soule to loue,  
Is signe of beauty wondrous fayre :  
To settle mine vsde to mone,  
Would be a work that's much more rare:  
So that who euer c. in me stay,  
The bell of Honour beares away.

To stay the weight none hath remou'd,  
What weakling cannot easly do?  
But to stay that is always mou'd,  
A harder labour longs thereto :  
Therefore it is, who can me stay,  
The bell of Honour beares away.

And wherefore do you thinke it strange,  
Thau for the better I should change?  
He worthy is to want his eye,  
That will not change so happily:  
But she that's able me to stay,  
The bell of Honour beares away.

They may well say, that that fame fayre,  
That sets a stay vnto my heart,  
Must needs surpass all beauty rare,  
Making me constant, vsde to stare.  
Euen so that fayre that can me stay,  
The bell of Honour beares away.

## Of Astrea.

Then come, deare Mistresses, I pray,  
That will of Beauty winne the price:  
And my too nimble spirits stay,  
By fauours and allurings nice:  
For she that's able me to stay,  
The bell of Honour beares away.

Leonide smiling vpon Siluander, sayd to him, that this shepheard was not one of those deceiuers which dissembled their imperfections, since he went singing them so. That is (sayd Siluander) because he beleuecs it is no fault, and so glories in it. By this they drew so neere, that to salute them, the Nymph and the shepheard were forced to breake off their speech. And for that Siluander kept well in his memory the Nymphs demand, of the state of these shepheards, as soone as the first words of ciuility were ended, But Tyrcis (sayd Siluander) for that was the shepheards name, if it be not vnreasonable, tell vs the cause that made you come into this countrey of Forests, and what stayes you heere? Then Tyrcis setting his knee to the earth, and lifting vp his eyes and hands, O infinite Goodnes (said he) that by thy Prouidence gouernes the world, be thou euer prayled, for that which it hath pleased thee to doe to me. And then raysing vp himselfe, to the amazement of the Nymph, and all the company, he answered to Siluander : Gentle shepheard, you aske me what brought me, and what holdes me in this Countrey? Know, that it is no other then you, and it is you alone, whom I haue so long sought for. Me! (answered Siluander) how could that be, by reason I had no knowledge of you? That is, in part, a cause, (said he) why I seek you. If it be so (replied Siluander) it is a long while since you were with vs; who will say that you euer spake to me? Because (answered Tyrcis) I know you not; and to satisfie the demand you haue made me, for that the discouer is long, if it please you, I will tell it, after you haue againe taken your places vnder those trees which you had before our comming. Siluander then turning to Diane, Milstrifflie (sayd he) is it your pleasure to sit downe agayne? It is, Leonide (answered Diane) of whom you should haue asked that question. I know well, answered the shepheard, that Ciuility commands me so, but Loue ordains it otherwise. Leonide taking Diane and Astrea by the hand, sat downe in the middle, saying; That Siluander had reason, because Loue, that hath any other consideration but of it selfe, is no true loue: and after them the other shepheardeſſes and shepheard sate in a round. And then

then Tyrcis turning toward the shepheardeesse that was with him; See the happy day (said he) *Laonice*, which we haue so much desired, & that since our first entry into this Country, we haue expected with such impatency! It concerneth none more then you, that wee get out of this payne as the Oracle hath ordayned. Then the shepheardeesse, without making him other answer, directing her selfe to *Silvander*, spake thus:

*The History of Fyrcis and Laonice.*

**O**fall friendship, there is none (so farre as I can heare of) which is more affectionate, then that which is bred in youth, because custome, which this young age takes hold of, by little and little, groweth to be changed into Nature, which if it be hard to put off, they know, that endeouer to contrary it. I say this, to serue my selfe of so ne kind of excuse then (gentle shepheard) when you see mee constrained to tell you, that I loue *Tyrcis*; for this affection was almost sucked in with the milke; and so my soule raysing it selfe with this nourishment, receiuers in her selfe (as her owne) the accidents of that passion; and it seemed, euery thing from my birth gaue agreement to it: for wee continued neighbours, the friendshipe betwene our fathers, our ages, which were very euen, and the gentlenesse of the young yeeres of *Tyrcis*, gaue me but ouer-great commodity; yet misfortune would, that much about that time *Cleon* was borne in our Hamlet, which (it may be) had more graces then I, but out of question, with much more better fortune. For euen when this Maide beganne to open her eyes, it seemed that *Tyrcis* received the flame into his heart, seeing that in the very Cradle he tooke pleasure to behold her.

At that time I might be about sixe yeeres, and he ten yeeres old, and see how the heauens disposed of vs without our consent! From the houre I first sawe him, I loued him; and from the time he sawe *Cleon*, he loued her: and though our liues were such as our yeeres might beare, yet were they not so small, but there might very well be found the difference betwene vs. Afterward, as we grew, so did our loue likewise, and that to such an extraordinary height, as (it may be) there was not any that might surpass it.

In this youth (you may we lthinke) I went without any great heed taking to his actiōs; but growing to more age, I noted in him such a want of good will, that I resolued to turne another way; a resolution which many delights made me conceaue, but which no true Louer could execute, as I prooued long time after. Yet my courage being offendēd, had suffi-  
cien.

cient power to make me dissemble: and if I could not indeed withdraw my selfe intirely; yet, at least, make shew to take some kinde of leaue. That which tooke from me all meanes to doe it, was, that I could not see that *Tyrcis* affected any other shepheardeesse; for all that he did to *Cleon*, could not moue suspition that it was anything but childishnesse, for that as then she could not be aboue nine yeeres old: & when she began to grow, and that she could feele the tracts of Loue, she so remoued from him, that it seemed, that this withdrawing would haue warranted her against all such blowes. But Loue, more crafty then shee, knew so well to come neare, and set before her soule, the merits, the affection, and the seruices of *Tyrcis*, that at last, shee found her selfe in the very middest, and so turned on all parts, that if she auoyded wounding on the one side, the stroke that she receiuēd on the other, was the greater and more deepe: So that shee could not flie to a better remedy then dissimulation; not to auoyde the blowes, but onely to keepe it from the knowledge of her enemy, or any other. She might well vse this dissembling, while it beganne to be but a little scratch; but when the sore became great, then must shee yelde and confess her selfe to be vanquished. Thus you see *Tyrcis* beloued of *Cleon*, and behold him playing with the honest sweetnesse of an amity, though at the beginning he scarce knew what his dileaſe was, as these verles witness, which he made at that time:

A SONNET.

**O** God, what ill is this thus tortures me?  
Since time that first I did faire Cleon see,  
I fel within my heart new rising paine,  
Although her eye tooke it from me againe.

Since by an hot desire I haue beene galde,  
If such a motion may desire be calde,  
Whose iudgement is bewitched in such wise,  
That it my will ioynes to his practises.

And from that spring my harme beginning takes,  
For this desire so great encrasing makes,  
That I thereby lose both my sleepe and foode,  
In place whereof growes an unquiet mōode:

That helps desire to build my servitude:  
Thus is the ill I feole not understood.

After *Tircis* had knowledge of the good will of happy *Cleon*, he received it with so great contentment, that his heart beeing vnable to hide it, he was forced to impart it to his eyes; which God knowes, how suddainly changed from that they were, gaue but too manifest knowledge of their ioy. The discretion of *Cleon* was such, that shee gaue no aduantage to *Tircis* for his duty: so that ialousie of her honor perswaded her to make shew of louing me, that they which noted her actions, might stop at those which were more evident; and goe no further to seeke out those which shee would conceale. Shee made choyce of mee rather then any other, for that shee had long before perceiued that I loued him: and knowing well, it is hard to be beloved, and not to loue againe, shee thought that every body would beleue, that this friendship, not hauing bene long betweene vs, might be thought to grow from the good will which I bare him.

He that had no designe, but that which *Cleon* allowed, prosperly endeuoured to effect that which shee had commandied him. O God, when I remember the sweete words which he vsed to me, I cannot (though they were lyes) containe my selfe from enteraining them; and thanke Loue for those happy moments, wherewith he delighted me at those times; and wish, since I cannot be more happy, that I might at least, bee alwaies so deceived. And indeed, *Tircis* found it no great paine to perswade mee, that he loued me: for besides, that every one easly beleues the thing they desire, me thought it might haue bin so, because I did not iudge my selfe to be so vnlovely, but that so long a conuersing as ours was, might haue gayned somewhat of him; especially with the care I had to please him. Whereby this glorious *Cleon* oftentimes passed the time with him: but if Loue had bin iust, he shuld haue made the deceit fal on her self, by suffring *Tircis* to come & loue me vnsafely: yet it fel not out so, but contrarily, this dissimulation was so vnsupportable, that he could not continue it: and did not Loue shut vp the eyes of them that loue, I could not chuse but haue perceiued it, as wel as the greater part of them that saw vs together; to whom, as to my professed enemies, I would give no credit: and because *Cleon* & I were very familiar, this cuming shephearde feareid, that time, & the sight I had, might put me out of the errour wherein I was. But gentle shepheard, it had bin necessary that I had bin as forecasting as shee: yet the better to hide her selfe, shee inuented a sleight, which was not euill. Her purpose,

purpose, as I haue told you, was to shadow the loue which *Tircis* bare her, by that which hee made shew of to me: and it succeeded as shee set downe, for they beganne to talke somewhat loude, and to my disaduantage, and though it were but they that looked no further then to apparence, yet this nûber being greater then the other, the bruit ran presently, and the suspicio that they had before of *Cleon*, died at that instant; so that I may say, that shee loued at my cost. But shee that feared, as I told you, lest I should come to discouer the practice, would cloke it vnder another; and counselled *Tircis* to let me know, that every body beganne to finde out our loue, and to censure it shrowdly enough, and that it was necessary to cause it to cease by wisedome, and that it was fit he should seeme to loue *Cleon*, that by this diuerting, they which talked the worst, might reforme themselues. And you may tell her, said shee, that you haue chosen me rather then any other, for the commodity you haue to be neere her, and to speake to her. I, that was all honest, and without craft, found this counsell good, so that (with my permission) from that day, when we three were together, he made not dainty to entertaine *Cleon* as he was accustomed. And indeed, it was very pleasing to them, and to any other that knew this dissimulation: for, seeing the suite that hee made to *Cleon*, I thought he iested, and could hardly hold my selfe from laughter. On the other side, *Cleon* noting my fashions, and knowing the deceit wherein I thought her to be, was extremely pained to dissemble it; especially, when this crafty companion made certaine winks with her eye, which oftentimes were so farre from the purpose, that I might accuse the loue shee bare to the shepheard, and the contentment that this deceit brought him. And see if I were in my right minde, that of pity I fel the displeasure which shee should haue, when she knew the truth! But since I found, that I complaine in her person, yet may I excuse my selfe; for who hath not beeene beguiled, since that Loue, as loone as he gets intire possession of a soule, spoyles it presently of all distrust in the person beloved? And this dissembling shepheard played his part so well, that if I had beeene in *Cleon* place (it may bee) I should haue doubted his shewes had beeene true.

Being sometimes in the middle betweene vs two, if hee laboured to make ouer-great demonstration of his loue to *Cleon*, hee would instantly turne to me, and aske me in mine eare, if he had not done well. But his master-fraud stukke not at so small a thing: heare you, I beseech you, whereto it passed. In priuate he spake more often to *Cleon*, then to mee; he would kisse her hand; he would bee an houre or two on his knees before

fore her, and would not conceale it from me, for the cause I haue told you but generally he would never budge from me; sued to me with such dissimulation, that the greatest part held on the opinion they formerly had of our loues; which he did of purpose, desirous, that I onely should see his courting of her, because hee knew well I would not beleue it: but hee would not in any case, that they, who might iudge rightly, should come to the least knowledge. And when I told him, we could not put out of mens heads the opinion of our loue, and that none would beleue it, when it was told me that he loued *Cleon*: How (answered he) will you haue them beleue a thing that is not? So it is, that our plots, in despite of the worst conceits, shall be beleueed in generall. But he, that was well aduised, seeing an occasion presented to passe yet further, sayd to mee, That aboue all, we must deceiu *Cleon*; and if she were once deceiued, we had then almost accomplished our purpose; that for this cause, of necessity, I must speake to her for him, and I should doe it confidently.

She (saith he) that already hath this opinion, will with all her heart, receive those messages which you bring her, and so we shall live in assur-  
ance. Oh! what a miserable fortune doe we oftentimes runne into? for my part, I thought that if at any time *Cleon* beleueed that I loued this shepheard, I should make her lose that opinion, when I prayed her to loue him, and confidently speake for him. But *Cleon* knowing what speech I had with the shepheard: and seeing in what restraint she liued, judged she might by my meanes haue messages, and especially letters. This was the cause that she tooke in good part the proposition which I made her; and from that time she treated with him as with the man she loued: and I serued to no other vse, than to carry letters from the one to the other. O Loue! to what an occupation didst thou then put me? Yet may I not complayne, for that I haue heard say, that I am not the first that haue done such offices to others, thinking to worke for themselves.

About that time, because the Frankes, Romans, Gothes and Burgos-  
ians rayled a cruell warre, we were constrainyd to go into the Towne, which beares the name of that shepheard that was Judge to the three god-  
dasses; for our place of abode was not farre from thence, vpon the banks  
of the great riuier of *Seyne*. And for that by reason of the great accessse of  
people, which from ali parts came to withdraw them there, and the want  
of those commodities which they were vsed vnto in the *Champaine*, the  
contagious sickenesse begonne to take so violent a course throughout the  
Towne, that euery the great man could not defend themselves. It fell out  
that the mother of *Cleon* was attayned with it. And although that this  
disease

disease were so fearefull, that there was neither parentage, nor obligation of loue, that could retayne the sound about them that were infected; yet the good nature of *Cleon* had such power ouer her, that she would not depart from her mother, whatsoeuer she sayd vnto her: but on the contrary, when some of her familiars would haue withdrawne her, representing the danger whereinto she thrust her selfe; and that it was offensive to the gods, to tempt them in this sort: If you loue me, would she say, vse not this speech to me, for, doe I not owe my life to her that gaue me it? and can the gods be offended that I serue him, that taught me to worship them? On this resolution she would never abandon her mother: and staying with her, serued her as freely, as if it had beene no infectious disease. *Tyrcis* was all the day long at their doore, burning with desire to enter into their lodging; but the for bidding of *Cleon* stiyed him, who would not suffer him, for feare lest they that were ready to thinke the worst, might iudge his presence prouidicall to her chastity. He that would not displease her, not daring to enter, caused to be carried to them all things necessary, with so great care, that they were never in want of any thing. Yet (as the heauens would) this happy *Cleon* would not escape the infectiō of her mothers disease, whatsoeuer preseruatiues *Tyrcis* could bring. When this shepheard knew it, it was no more possible to keepe him backe from entring into their lodging, thinking it was now no time to dissemble, nor to feare the biting of the bad-speaker. He then set in order all his affayres, disposed of his goods, and declared his last will: therahaving left a charge to some of his friends, to send him succour; he shuns himselfe in with the mother and the daughter, resoluing to runne the same fortune that *Cleon* did. It would serue to no purpose, but to lengthen the discourse, to tell you, what were the good offices, what the seruices that he did to the mother, for the consideration of the daughter; for he could not imagine more then those which his affection made him performe.

But when he sawe her dead, and that there remained no more then his Mistris, whose disease growing worse and worse, I do not thinkē that this shepheard rested one moment. He lay her continually in his armes, or else dressed her sores. Shee on the other side, who had alwayes loued him so dearely, acknowledged so great loue in this last actiō, that her owne was much increased, so that one of her grieves was, the danger wherein she saw him for her cause. He on the contrary side, took such satisfacion, that Fortune (though his enemy) yet had offered him this meane, to giue testimony of his goodwill, that he could not

gave her thankes enow. It fell out, that the disease of this shephearde (being in case needfull to be launced) there was no Surgeon that would (for feare of danger) hazzard himselfe to touch her. *Tyrcis*, whose affection found nothing hard, being instructed what he was to doe, tooke the launcer, and lifting vp her arme, launced it, and dressed it without feare. Shortly (gentle shepheard) all the most dangerous things and most noysome, were sweet vnto him, and very easie. So it was, that the disease hourely encreasing, brought this Nymph (beloued *Cleon*) to that estate, that there remayned no more strength, but to speake these words: I am sorry that the gods will no longer draw out the thred of my life, not that I haue a desire to liue longer time; for this desire can neuer make me wish it, hauing had triall of the discommodities which follow mortals: but onely, that (in some sort) I would not die so much obliged to you, but that I might haue time to giue you testimony, that I am not attainted with Ingratitude, nor misprisning. It is true, that when I consider what are the obligations which I owe you, I thinke the heauens are right iust, to take me out of the world, since that if I should liue as many ages as I haue done dayes, I know not how to satisfie the least of that infinite number which your affection hath brought forth. Receiue then for all that which I owe you, not an equall good, but indeed, all that I can, which is an oath which I make you, that euē death shall neuer wipe out the memory of your loue, nor the desire I haue to make all the acknowledgements that a true louing person may yeld to him, to whom she is bound. These words were uttered with much payne, but the loue she bare the shepheard gaue her the strength to deliuer them. Whereto *Tyrcis* answered (Faire Mistris) I can hardly thinke I haue bound you, nor that euer I shall, because that which I haue hitherto done, hath not satisfied my selfe: and whereas you say, you are obliged to me, I see well, you know not the greatness of the loue of *Tyrcis*, otherwise you would not thinke, that so small a thing was able to pay the tribute of so great duty. Beleeue mee (fayre *Cleon*) the fauour you haue done me, so kindly to receiue the seruices which you say I haue done you, charge me with so great a burden, that a thousand liues, and a thousand such occasions know not how to discharge me.

The heauens which haue caused me to be borne but for you, will accuse me of misprisall, if I liue not for you: and if I haue any dessigne to employ one single moment of this life, other then to your seruice. He would haue held on longer, but the shephearde (overladen with her sickenesse) interrupted him, Cease, friend, and let me speake, to the end, that

that the small remaider of my life may be employed, in assuring you, that you may not be better beloued, than you are of me, who finding my selfe ready to depart, giue you an eternall farewell, and intreate you for three things, always to loue *Cleon*; to cause mee to be buried neere my mothers bones; and to take order, that when you are to pay the duety of mortality, your body be layed neere mine, that I may rest with this contentment, that not hauing the power to be vnted to you in life, yet I may be so at least in death. He answered, The gods should be vniust, if hauing giuen beginning to so good an amity as ours, they should sunder it so soone. I hope they will yet preserue you, or at least, they will take me away before you, if they haue any compassion of the afflicted: but if they will not, I onely desire of them so much life, as may satisfie the commandements which you make me, and then permit me to follow you, that if they cut not off my thred, and my hand be free, assure your selfe (fayre Mistris) you shall not be long without me. Friend (answered she) I enioyne you beyond this, to liue as long as the gods please; for in the length of your life, they shall shew themselues pitifull vnto vs, since that by this meanes I shall make relation in the *Elysian* fields of our perfect amity, you may publish it to the living: and so the dead and living men shall honour our memory. But friend, I perceiue, my disease enforces me to leaue you; farewell, the most louely, and the best beloued among men. At these last words she dyed, leaning her head on the bosome of her shepheard.

To tell you the displeasure hee tooke, and the complaynts hee made, were but to strike the sword deeper into the wound; besides that, his gashes are yet so open, that every man seeing them, may well judge what the blowes were. O death, cryed *Tyrcis*, that hast robbed me of the better part of my selfe! either restore me that thou hast taken, or take away the rest. And then, to giue roome to teares and sighes, which this remembrance pluckt from his heart, he held his peace for a while: when *Siluander* told him, he was to resolute himselfe, since there was no remedy: and that for things happened, and may no more be, complaints were but witnessess of weakenesse. So much the rather (sayd *Tyrcis*) find I occasion of complaynt: for if there were any remedy, it were not the part of a man aduis'd, or one of courage, to complayne; but he may be well allowed to bewaile that, which can find no other asswagement. Then *Laonice* taking agayne her speech, continued in this sort: At last this happy shephearde (sic being dead, and *Tyrcis* hauing rendred the last offices of loue, hee tooke order she should be buried by her mother, but the ignorance of them to whom he gaue the charge, was such, that they placed her else-where: for

as for him, he was so afflicted, as he stirred not from off his bed, there being nothing to preserue his life, but the commandements she had giuen him. Some dayes after, enquiring of those who came to visit him, in what place the body so beloued was layed, hee knew it was not by her mother; whereat he conceiued such a displeasure, that contracting for a great summe with those that vsed to bury, they promised to take her vp, and to lay her with her mother. And indeed they went about it, and hauing opened the ground, they tooke her vp betweene three or foure of them; but hauing carryed her a little way, the infection was so great, that they were compelled to leau her in the mid-way, resolued rather to die, then to carry her furder.

Whereof *Tyrcis* being aduertised, after he had made them yet greater offers, and seeing they would not respect it; And why (sayd he aloud) canst thou hope, that the loue of gayne may do more in them, than thine in thee? Ah *Tyrcis*! this is too great an offence to thy Loue. Hee spake thus, and as one transported, he runnes to the place where the body was, and thought it had beeene three dayes buried, and that the stinke was extreme, yet tooke he it betweene his armes, and carryed it to her mochers graue, which was by that time couered. And after so good a deed, and so great a testimony of his affection, withdrawing himselfe out of the Towne, he stayed forty nights separated from all men. Now all these things were vnkowne to me, for one of my Aunts being sicke of the like disease (almost) at that time, we conuersed not with any: and the same day that he came backe, I returned likewise. Hauing vnderstood onely of the death of *Cleon*, I went to him to know the particularities; but comming to his chambur doore, I layd mine eye to the key-hole, because I came neere, I heard him sigh: and I was not deceipted, for I saw him on his bed, his eyes lifted to heauen-ward, his hands ioyned together, and his face couered with teares. If I were altonished (gentle shepheard) iudge you; for I did not thinke he had loued her, and came (in part) to delight my selfe with him. At last, after I had beheld him some while, with a sigh which seemed to part his stomake in pieces, I heard him bring foorth these words:

Stanzas on the death of *Cleon*.

VVV *Hy do we hide our teares? this is no time to faine,*  
*A Loue, which her sad death, by my dole maketh plaine:*  
*Who ceaseth to haue hope, ought likewise cease to feare,*  
*The hope that fed my life, lies closed in her bosome.*

She

*She lived once in me, and I always in her,*  
*Our sprites with thousand knots, so strait combined were:*  
*Each knit to other so, that in their faichfull loue,*  
*We two were but as one, and each as two did move.*

*But in the poynt that Loue upon a firme laid ground*  
*Assur'd me pleasures, I the quite contrary found:*  
*For that my happynesse had toucht the poynt that was*  
*Allotted me to reach, and not to ouer-passe.*

*It was in Paris towne, that those delightfull thoughts,*  
*Which Loue infusde in me, her death did bring to nought:*  
*What time a man might see the Gaules right sore distract,*  
*Against th' invading force of strangers doe their best.*

*And must there be a tombe of lesse celebrite*  
*Then Paris, holding that I nurc'd so charily?*  
*Or that my ill should fall in times lesse sorrowing,*  
*Then when all Europe stood at poynt of perishing?*

*But I am wide (O God) my Cleon is not dead,*  
*Her heart to tyme in me, furre from her selfe is fled:*  
*Her body onely dyes, and so by contrary,*  
*My spirit dyes in her, and hers dash line in me.*

O gods! what became of me when I heard him speake thus? my amazement was such, that vnawares leaning against the doore, I entred but halfe in, whereat he turned his head; and seeing me, he made none other signe, but holding out his hand to me, prayed me to sit on the bed by him: and then wiping his eyes, for so he should alwayes need an handkercher, hee spake to mee in this sort: Well, *Laonice*, the poore *Cleon* is dead, and we are left to bewayle her raunishment. And because the paine I was in, gaue me no power to answer, he went onward: I know well (shepheardeſſe) that seeing me in this plight for *Cleon*, you are amazed, that the fayned loue I bare her should giue me so true feeling. But alas! leue that error, I beseech you, so me thinkes I should commit a greater fault against Loue, if without cause I should hold on that dissembling, whereto my affection (till now) commaunded me: Know then *Laonice*, that I haue loued *Cleon*, and that all other suites were but to cloake that;

F

and

and if you did euer beare me friendship, for Gods sake, *Laonice*, condole with me this disaster, that at once haue layd all my hopes in her coffin. And if you be in any sort offended, pardon *Tyrcis* the error which hee hath committed against you, that he might not be wanting in that which was due to *Cleon*. At these words, transported with choler, I went away (so farre besides my selfe) that I could hardly finde out my lodging, from whence I stirred not of a long time. But after wee haue crossed Loue a thousand times, yet must we submit our selues: and therfore, behold me as much to *Tyrcis* as euer I was. I excuse in my selfe, the treasons which he had done me, and pardon him the wrongs and saynings wherewith hee offended me, naming them, in pardoning them, not dissemblings nor treasons, but violences of loue. And I was the easlyer drawne vnto this pardon, for that Loue, who professeth himselfe a party in this fault, went flattering me with a certainte hope to succeed in *Cleons* place. While I was in this thought, behold, one of my sisters came to tell me, that *Tyrcis* was lost, so that he was no more to be scene, and no body knew where he was.

This recharge of griefe surprized me so forcib'y, that all that I could do, was to tel her, that this sadness being ouer-passed, he would returne as he wenc. But from that time I resolued to follow him, and that I might not be hindered by any, I got out so secretly, about the beginning of the night, that before day I found my selfe farre off. If I were astonisched at the first, seeing my selfe alone in the darke, the heauens know it, to who in my complaints were directed; but Loue, which secretly accompanied me, gaue me courage enough to accomplish my purpose. So I pursued my voyage, following (without more adoe) the way whiche my feete met with, for I knew not whither *Tyrcis* went, nor my selfe neither. So that I was a winderer more than fourre moneths, hearing no newes of him. At last, passing the mount *Dor*, I met with this shepheardeesse (said she poynting to *Malonths*,) and with her, that shepheard called *Thersander*, sitting vnder the shadow of a Rocke, wayting vntill the mid-dayes heate were abated. And for that my custome was to demand newes of *Tyrcis* of all I met, I addressed my selfe to the place where I sawe them, and knew that my shepheard (by the myrks they had giuen me) was in those deserts; and that he went alwayes bewayling *Cleon*. Then I told them what I tell you, and coniured them to tell me the most certayne newes they could. Whereto *Malonths* (moued with pity) answered me with that sweetnes, that I judged her stricken with the same disease that I was; and my opinion was not false: for I knew since the long history

of her grieves, by which I found that Loue strikes as well in the Court as in our woods: and for that our fortunes had some sympathy betwixt them, she desired me to tarry and end our iourny together, since we both made one kind of search. I that was alone receiued (with open armes) this commodity; and from that time we parted not asunder. But what serues this discourse to my purpose, since I will onely relate to you what concernes *Tyrcis* and me? Gentle shepheard, this shall be enough, to say to you, that after we had stayed more then three moneths in that country, at last, we knew he was come hither: where we no sooner arriued, but that I met him, and so unseasonably for him, that he stood as amazed. At the first he receiued me with a countenance good enough: but at last, knowing the occasion of my voyage, he declared to me all at length, the extreme affection he bare vnto *Cleon*; and that it was not in his power to loue me. Loue (if there be any justice in thee) I demaund of thee, and not of this ingratefull, some acknowledgement of so much trauell passed.

So ended *Laonice*, and leuining she had no more to say, wiping her eyes, she turned them pittifull to *Siluander*, as asking fauour, in the iusteice of her cause. Then *Tyrcis* spake in this sort: Wise shepheard, though the history of my misfortunes be such as this shepheardeesse hath told you, yet is the story of my grieves much more pittifull, wherewith yet I will entartayne you no longer, for feare of troubling you and the company, onely I will adde to that which she hath sayd, that not being able to endure her ordinary complaints (by common consent) we went to the Oracle, to know what he would ordayne of vs, and we had such an answer by the mouth of *Arontyne*:

## O R A C L E.

On Lignous bankes which glideth peaceably,  
Louer, shou shalt a curious shepheard see,  
That first enquires the ill that tortreth thee:  
Belieue him. Heaven appoynts him Judge to be.

And though we haue beene long heere, yet are you the first that aske of the state of our fortunes; therefore it is that we cast our selues into your armes; and we desire you to set downe what you will haue vs do. And for that nothing may be done, but according to the will of God, the old woman, who gaue vs the Oracle, told vs, that hauing met with you, wee were to cast lots, who should maintayne the cause both of the one

and other: and for this effect, all they whom we met, should put a gage betwene your hands in a hat. The first that drawes, shall bee hee that speaks for *Laonice*; and the last of all, for me. At these words he desired them all to be willing to it; whereto euery one consented. By fortune, that of *Hylas* was the first; and that of *Phillis* the last: Whereat *Hylas* smiling, Heretofore (said hee) when I was seruant to *Laonice*, I should hardly haue had the minde to perswade *Tircis* to loue her; but now, that I am for *Mardonie*, I willingly obey to that the god commands. Shepheard (answered *Leonide*) you are to vnderstand by the way, what the prouidence of this diuinity is, since to moue each one to change of affection, it hath giuen the charge to inconstant *Hylas*, as to him, that by vse well knowes the meanes: and to continue a faithful loue, it hath giuen the periwaison to a shepheardeesse constant in all her actions: and to iudge of them both, it hath chosen a person that cannot be partiall; for *Silander* is neither constant, nor inconstant, since he never loued any. Then *Silander* taking the word, Since therefore you will, O *Tircis*, and you *Laonice*, that I be iudge of your difference, sware both of you betwene my hands, that you will inuolably obserue it; otherwise, it will bee but more to displease the gods, and for vs to take paine to no purpose. Which they did, and then *Hylas* began thus:

*The Oration of Hylas for Laonice.*

IF I were to maintaine the cause of *Laonice*, beforde a person vnnaturall, I would feare (it may be) lest the want of my capacity, might lessen in some sort, the iustice which is in it: but since it is before you, gentle shepheard, that haue the heart of a man; I meane, which know what the duties are of an honest man, I not onely mistrust a fauourable iudgement, but hold for certaine, that if you were in the roome of *Tircis*, you would be ashamed to be noted for such an error. I will hold my selfe then from seeking out more reasons for this cause, which is so cleere of it selfe, that all other light would serue but for a shadow: and I will onely say, that the name which he beares of man, ties him to the contrary of that he doth, and that the lawes and ordinances of heauen, and of nature, command him to dispute no longer about this cause. Doe not the duties of courtesie ordaine to render good turnes received? Doe not the heauens command, that for euery seruice soone reward shold bee giuen? And doth not Nature constraine to loue a fayre woman that loues him, and to abhorre, rather then to cherishe a dead body? But this quite contrary;

for the fauors receiued of *Laonice*, he renders discourteie; and in stead of seruices, which himselfe confesses she hath done him, seruing him so long vnder the couerture of *Cleons* loue, he payes her with ingratitude; and for the affectiō which she hath borne him from her cradle, he makes no shew but of misprisall. Are you so honest a man, *Tircis*, and doe you so seeme to know the gods? and yet me thinkes, this shepheardeesse is such an one, that were it not that her influence easeth her into misfortune, it were more proper for her to make others feele, then for her selfe to feele the wrongs whereof she complaines. If thou beest a man, knowest thou not that it is proper to a man to loue the liuing and not the dead? And if thou acknowledge the gods, knowest thou not that they can punish them that contradict their ordinances? and that,

*Loue never pardons him that never loues?*

If thou confessest, that from the cradle she hath serued thee, and loued thee, O God, shall it be possible, that so long an affection, and so pleasing seruices, should, at last, be payd with contempt?

But be it that this affection, and these seruices, being voluntary in *Laonice*, and not sought for of *Tircis*, may weigh little with an ingratefull soule; yet will I not beleue that you will award (O iust *Silander*!) but that the deceiuer is to giue satisfaction to the party deceiued: and as *Tircis* (by his dissimulation) hath so long time deluded this fayre shepheardeesse, shall he not be bound to repayre this injury to her, with as much true affection, as he hath made her take lies and falsehoodes? that if euery one ought to loue his like, will not you (our iudge) ordayne, that *Tircis* loue a person liuing, and not one dead, and place his loue there where he may liue, and not among the cold ashes in a coffin? But *Tircis*, tell me, what may be thy dessigne? after thou hast met with a floud of teares, the sad reliques of the poore *Cleon*, thinkest thou that thou canst rayse her vp agayne with thy sighes and teares? Alas! they pay *Caron* but once, and they never but once enter into his boate: You may well call her backe from thence, but he is deafe to such cryes, and never sendeth out person that comes aboord him. It is iniecty (Tircis) to goe about tormenting the rest of those whom the gods call away. Loue is ordayned for the liuing, and the Coffin for those that are dead. Desire not to confound their ordinances (in such sort) that to a dead *Cleon* thou giue a liuing affection; and to a quicke *Laonice*, a graue. And herein doe not arme thy selfe with the name of Constancy, for it hath no right to it. Dost thou thinke it fit, that a man should go naked, because he hath worne out his first garments? Beleue me, it is as much worthy of laughter, to heare thee say, that be-cause:

cause *Cleon* is dead, thou wilt neuer loue more. Re-enter, re-enter into thy selfe, confess thine error, cast thee at the feet of this Fayre, acknowledge thy fault, and so thou shalt auoyde thy constraint, whereto our iust Judge (by his sentence) will subiect thee. *Hylas* ended in this sort, to the great contentment of all but *Tircis*, whose teares gaue notice of his griefe: Then *Phillis* (after she had commandement from *Siluander*) lifting vp her eyes to heauen, answered thus to *Hylas*:

*The answer of Phillis for Tircis.*

O Faire *Cleon*, which vnderstandest from heauen, the iniury which they purpose to doe thee, inspir: me with thy Diuinity, for such I will esteeme thee, if the Vertues may ever make a mortall become diuine; and worke so, that my ignorance may not weaken the reasons that *Tircis* hath, that he should neuer loue but thy perfections. And you(wise shepheard) that knowes better what I should speake in her defence than I can conceiue, supply the wants which are in me, by the abundance of reasons which are in my cause; and to beginne, I will say, *Hylas*, that all the reasons which thou hast alledged to prooue, that beeing beloved, one ought to loue, though they be false, yet they are agreed vpon for good: but wherefore wilt thou conclude by it, that *Tircis* must leaue the loue of *Cleon*, to beginne a new with *Laonice*? Thou deamaundest things impossible, and contraries; impossible, because no man is bound to do more than he can: and how wouldst thou haue my shepheard loue, if hee haue no will? Thou laughest, *Hylas*, when thou hearest me say, that hee hath none. It is true (interrupted *Hylas*) what hath he done with it? He that loueth (answered *Phillis*) hath giuen his very soule to the person beloved, and the will is but one power. But (replied *Hylas*) this *Cleon* to whom you would he should be sent, being dead, hath nothing remaining of a person, and so *Tircis* is to take that againe which was his. Ah! *Hylas*, *Hylas* (answered *Phillis*) you speake as if Loue were a Nouice: for the donations which are made by his authority, are alwaies irrevocable. And what (reioyned *Hylas*) shall become of this will since the death of *Cleon*? This little losse (said she) hath followed that great extreme losse which he had in losing her: for that if pleasure be the obiect of the will, since now he can haue no more pleasure, what hath he to doe with will? and it hath followed *Cleon* so, that if *Cleon* be no more, no more is his will, for he never had it but for her: but if *Cleon* be yet in any place, as the Druides teach vs, this will is in her hands, so content to be in that place, that

if

if shee her selfe would dñe it away, it would not returne to *Tircis*, as knowing well, it should bee vnprofitable, but would goe into her coffin, to rest with the beloued bones. And this being so, why accuse you the faithfull *Tircis* of ingratitude, if it be not in his power to loue elsewhere? And see, how you command, not onely a thing impossible, but contrary to it selfe: for if every one bee bound to loue that that loues him, why will you not that he loue *Cleon*, who neuer fayled in loue to him? And as for the recompences which you demand for the seruices, and for the letters which *Laonice* carried from one to the other, let her remember the contentment which she receiuied; & how many happy daies shepassed, before this deceit, which otherwise she shoulde haue spent miserably: let her ballance her seruices with that payment, & I assure my selfe, shee shall bee found their debtor. Thou saist, *Hylas*, that *Tircis* hath beguiled her. This is no beguiling, but a iust punishment of Loue, that hath made her blowes fall on her owne selte, since her purpose was not to serue, but to delude the wife *Cleon*; that if she haue cause to complain of any thing, it is, that of two deceyuers, she hath beene the lesse crafty. See, *Siluander*, how briefly I haue thought fit to answer the false reasons of this shepheard, and there remaines nothing but to make *Laonice* confess, that she hath done wrong to pursue this iniustice; which I will easily doe, if it please her to answer me. Faire shepheardesse, said *Phillis*, tell me, doe you loue *Tircis* well? Shepheardesse, replied she, no man that knowes me, doubted euer of it.

If it were of constraint (replied *Phillis*) that he were to goe farre off, and that some other came in the meane time to woo you, would you change this loue? No (sayd she) for I should alwayes hope hee would come backe. And, reioyned *Phillis*, If you knew he would neuer returne, would you cease loving him? No certainly (answered she.) O faire *Laonice*! (continued *Phillis*) thinke it not then strange, that *Tircis*, who knowes, that his *Cleon* for her merits is lifte vp into heauen, who knoweth, that from aboue shee sees all his actions, and ioyes in his fidelity, will not change the loue he bare her, nor suffer that the distance of place should separate their affections, since all the discommodities of life haue no more to do? Thinke not (as *Hylas* hath sayd) that neuer any came backe ouer the flood of *Acheron*. Many, who haue beene beloved of the gods, haue gone and returned: and whom shall we rather thinke than faire *Cleon*, whose birth hath beene beheld by the Destinies with so sweet and fauourable an eye, that she neuer loued any thing, whereof she gayned not the loue? O *Laonice*, if it were permitted your eyes to see the Diuinitie, you might behold this *Cleon*, who (without doubt) is at this houre,

in

in this place to defend her cause, and is at mine eare to prompt the words that I must speake. Then you would iudge that *Hylas* hath done wrong, to say, that *Tyrcis* loues but cold cinders. Me thinks I see her in the midſt of vs clothed with immortality, in stead of a frayle body, and ſubieſt to all accidents; which reproches *Hylas* for the blaſphemies which he hath uſed againſt her. And what wilt thou anſwer, *Hylas*, if the happy *Cleon* ſay to thee; Thou (inconstant) wouleſt trayne vp my *Tyrcis* in thy vnfauſtfulness: if he haue heeretofore loued me, thinkelt thou it was my body? if thou ſayſt, Yes: I anſwer, He ought to be condemned (ſince no louer is euer to withdraw himſelfe from a loue begunne) to loue the aſhes which I haue left him in my coſſin, ſo long as they endure. If hee confeſſe he loued my ſpirit, that is my priuipall part; then why (inconstant) will hee change that will at this time, when it is more perfect than euer it was? Heeretofore (ſo will the miſery of the liuing haue it) I might be iealous, I might be impotunate, I muſt ſerue, I was marked by more then him, but now freed from all imperfections, I am no more capable to beare his diſpleaſures.

And thou *Hylas*, thou wouleſt with thy ſacrilegious inuentions turke from me, him in whom onely I liue in earth, and by a cruelty more barbarous than hath beene heard of, affay to lay on me another death. Wise *Siluander*, the words which I deliuere, ſound ſo ſenſiblē in mine eares, that I doe not thinke but you heare them, and ſeele them at your heart. This is the cauſe, that to leauue this diuinity ſpeaking in your ſoule, I will hold my peace, after I haue onely told you, that loue is ſo iuſt, that you are to feare the punishment in your ſelues, if the pity of *Laonice*, rather than the reaſon of *Cleon*, moue and carry you. At this word, *Phillis* riſing with a curteous reuerence, made ſigne ſhe would ſay no more for *Tyrcis*. When *Laonice* would haue made an anſwer, *Siluander* forbade it, ſaying; It was not now time to defend her ſelue, but to heare onely the ſentence which the gods pronounced by his mouth: and after he had ſome while conſidered with himſelfe the reaſons of them both, hee pronounced ſuch a ſen- tence:

*The iudgement of Siluander.*

The principall poynſt of the cauſes debated before vs, is, to know if Loue may die by the death of the thing beloved? Whereupon wee ſay, that a loue that may perish, is no true loue; for it ought to follow the ſubieſt that gaue it birth: Therefore it is, that they which loue the body onely, muſt encloſe all their loues of the body in the ſame tombe where

where it is ſhut vp; but they that beyond this, loue the ſpirit, ought with their loues to flie after this beloued ſoule to the highest heauens, no diſtances being able to ſeparate them. Therefore, all theſe things well conſidered, we ordayne, That *Tyrcis* alwayes loue his *Cleon*, and that of the two loues which may be in vs, the one ſhall follow the body of *Cleon* to the tombe, and the other the ſpirit into heauen. In like ſort, it is ordered, That ſuites of *Laonice* be forbidden, that ſhee no longer diſquiet the re- poſe of *Cleon*; for ſuch is the will of the gods that ſpeakes in me.

Hauing ſayd thus, without regarding the complaunts and reproches which he forelaue in *Laonice* and *Hylas*, hee made a great reuerence to *Leonide*, and the reſt of the company, and ſo went away without other companion than *Phillis*, who would ſtay no longer to heare the ſorrows of this ſhepheardeſſe. And because it was late, *Leonide* withdrew into the Hamlet of *Diane*, for that night; and the ſhepheards and ſhepheardeſſes, as they were accuſtomed (except *Laonice*) who inſiſtely offendred with *Siluander* and *Phillis*, ſware not to goe out of that Countrey, before ſhe had done them ſome notable diſpleaſure; it ſeemed that Fortune brought her as ſhee could haue wiſhed. For, hauing left that company, and being placed in the thickest of the wood, to mourne at liberty, at the laſt, her good ſpirit ſet before her eyes the inſupportable con- tempt of *Tyrcis*, how muſt vneworthy he was to be beloued of her, and made her ſo ashamed of her fault, that a thouſand times ſhe ſware to hate him, and for his cauſe, *Siluander* and *Phillis*.

It fell out while theſe things thus paſſed in her memory, that *Licidas*, which ſome dayes before beganne to be euill ſatiſfied with *Phillis*, by reaſon of ſome coldneſſe, which he thought he found in her, perceiued *Siluander* to come talking with her. It was true, that the ſhepheardeſſe uſed more coldneſſe towards him, or rather, want of heat, then ſhe had done before ſhe frequented the company of *Diane*, for that this new friend- ſhip, and the pleaſure that *Aſtreā*, *Diane*, and ſhe tooke together, ſo poſſeſſed her, that ſhe no more heeded thoſe ſmall wanton trickes, where- with the affection of *Licidas* was nouriſhed, and hee which knew well, that a loue cannot build vp it ſelue, but with the ruine of the former, was of opinion, that that which made her more luke-warme towards him, and leſſe carefull to entartayne him, was ſome new amity, which turned her aside. And not being able to know who was the ſubieſt, hee went all alone gnawing vpon his thoughts, and withdrew into the moſt couert places, that he might complayne to himſelfe with moſt liberty, and by miſ-hap,

mis-hap, when he was minded to returne, he fawe (as I told you) *Siluander* and *Phillis* come along: a sight that brought him no small suspition. For knowing the worth of the shepheard and of the shepheardesse, he easily supposed that *Siluander*, having never yet loued any, was now giuen to her, and that she following the humor of those of her Sex, had willingly enough receiued the donation. All these considerations gaue him much suspition, but much rather, when passing by him, without seeing him, he heard, or he thought he heard the words of loue; and that may well be, by reason of the sentence which *Siluander* came from giuing.

But to put him out of all patience, it fell out, that suffering them to passe by, he went from the place he was in; and that he might not follow them, he tooke the way they had come: and fortune would, that he went to sit downe, neere the place where *Laonice* was, not seeing her. Where, after he had some while rayled out of his displeasure, transported with ouer-much griefe, hee cryed out loude: O Loue! is it possible thou shouldest suffer so great an injustice without punishing it? Is it possible, that in thy kingdome, wrongs and seruices are equally recompenced? And then holding his peace for a while, at last, his eyes lifted vp to heauen, and his armes acrosse, letting himselfe goe backward, he beganne agayne thus: For conclusion, it pleaseth thee, Loue, that I must giue witnessse, that there is no constancy in any woman; and that *Phillis*, for being of that Sex (though furnished with all other perfections) is subiect to the same lawes of naturall inconstancy: I say, that *Phillis*, whose loue heretofore hath beeene more assured to me than mine owne will. But why, O my shepheardesse! am not I the same: *Licidas*, whose affection thou hast made shew to nourish so much? That which you haue at other times iudged commendable in me, is it so much changed, that you take more delight in an vnowne *Siluander*, a vagabond, a man, whom the whole earth contemnes, and will not professe him for hers? *Laonice*, who heard this shepheard, and *Phillis* and *Siluander* named, desirous to know more, beganne to giue her eare in good earnest, and so fitly for her, that she learned before she went from thence, all that she could desire of the most secret thoughts of *Phillis*; and thereon taking occasion to anger her or *Siluander*, resolued to set this shepheard yet furder into this opinion, assuring her selfe, that if she loued *Licidas*, she would make him iealous; and if it were *Siluander*, shee would publish the loue, so that every one might know it.

And as soone as this shepheard was gone, (for his euill would not suffer him to stay long in a place) she also went from thence; and setting forward

ward after him, came very neere him, talking with *Corilas*, whom he had met in the way, and seeming to deaignd of them newes of the desolate shepheard, they answered, they knew none such. It is a shepheard (sayd she to them) that goes lamenting a dead shepheardesse, and who (as they tell me) is almost, euer since dinner, in the company of the shepheardesse *Phillis*, and of her seruant. And, who is that (answred presently *Licidas*?) I know not (continued the shepheardesse:) if I knew to tell his name right, I thinke hee is called *Silander*, or *Siluander*, a shepheard of a reasonable hansomnesse of visage, somewhat long, and of an humour pleasing enough, when he list. Who told you (answred *Licidas*) that hee was her seruant? The actions of them both (answred she:) for I haue passed by such straits; and I rememberyet vpon what feet they go. But tel me if you know any newes of him I seek; for night drawes on, and I know not where to finde him. *Licidas* could not answer her, he was so surprized: but *Corilas* told her, that she must follow that path, and as soone as shee was out of this wood, she should see a great pasture, where doubtlesse she might learne some newes; for it was there that every night they met together, before they drew homeward; and that for feare lest she might winder, he would beare her company, if she pleased. She that was willing to dissemble yet more (sayning not to know the way) receiued with great courtesie the offer he made her, and giuing the good night to *Licidas*, tooke the way which was shewed her, leauing him so quite besides himselfe, that he stood a great while vnmoueable in one place; at last, returning as out of a long swound, he went repeating the words of the shepheardesse, whereto it was impossible but he should giue credit, not able to suspect her of falsehood. It would be too long to repeate heere the sorrow he made, and the wrongs he did to his faithfull *Phillis*. So it was, that all the night he did nothing but goe compasse in the most retired part of the wood; where toward morning (weareid with sorrow and long trauaile) he was constrained to lie downe vnder some trees, where all wet with teares, at the last, his extreme griefe enforced him to sleepe.

( \* . \* )

The end of the seuenth Booke.



## THE EIGHTH BOOKE OF Astrea and Celadon.

Soone as the day appeared, *Diane*, *Astrea*, and *Phillis*; came together, to be at the rising of *Leonide*, who not able to esteeme sufficiently of their worth and courtesie, was ready drest; by that time the light shone ful into her chamber, that she might not lose one moment of the time, that she was to stay with them; so that these shepheardelettes were astonied, to see her so diligent. When they had opened the doore, and taken each other by the hand, they came out of the Hamlet, to beginne the exercise of the former day. They had hardly passed beyond the vetermost houses of the Towne, but they might perceiue *Siluander*, who vnder the dissembled wooing of *Diane*, began to feele a new growing and true loue; for troubled with this new care, he had not closed his eyes all the night long, his thoughts were so busie in representing to him the discourse, and all the actions which he had scene of *Diane* the day before; that not being able to stay for the morning in his bed, he got him downe, and had till now wayted about the village, to see when his new mistresse would come forth; and as soone as hee spyeid her, hee came toward her, singing these verses:

### STANZA'S On an high rayled Desire.

**H**Opes like Ixions in boldnesse,  
Disdaining heavens dire menaces,  
Will you aspire above your fixe?  
With Icarus t'affaire the skie,  
Is but to tumble from on hie:  
Forbeare, not yet to enterprize.

Even

Even so sometimes Prometheus  
With breft pecke by birds ranenous,  
His torments did immortall make,  
By stealing downe Celestiall fire,  
He said, to this good I aspire,  
To doe what none dares undertake.

My heart on rock of constaney,  
Devoured by my paciency,  
Will say, The spights of loftiest size  
Hast they not dar'd to stcale that coale?  
So may this glory take my soule,  
To doe what none dares enterprise.

Echo, that for Nircissus lone,  
Bewrayes her griefe, the rocks to moane,  
Comfortis her selfe in her dismay,  
And tells them in her ang'ly moode,  
If I of this be not belov'd,  
There is no other else that may.

*Phillis*, that was of a pleasant disposition, and would well discharge her selfe of the experiment whereto she had beeне enioyned, turning to *Diane*, Mistrisſe, said ſhe, will you hereafter giue any credit to the words of this ſhepherd? Yesterday he loued you not at all: now hee is dead, at leaſt, for loue. Since he would ſay ſo much, he ought to begin in a better houre to ſerue you, or paſue ſomewhile before he proffer ſuch words. *Siluander* was ſo neere, that he might heare *Phillis*, that made him cry ou a farre off, O miſtrisſe, shut your eares againſt the euill words of mine enemy. And then being come at them, Ah, naugh, y *Phillis*, ſaid he, is it ſo, that by the ruine of my contentment, you ſeeke to build your owne? You doe well (answered) *Phillis* to talke of your contentment; haue not you with others, this perfection of the moſt part of ſhepherds, who out of a vanity, ſay, they are infinitely content, and fanoured of their miſtrisſe, though contrarily they bee hardly vſed? talke you of contentment? You, *Siluander*, haue you the boldneſſe to vſe theſe words, in the preſence even of *Diane*? what will you ſay in other places, when you haue the lawcineſſe to talke ſo before her? ſhe had gone on, but that the ſhepherdes, after he had ſaluted the Nymph, and the ſhepheardelettes, interrupted her thus:

Gg 3

thus: You would haue my mistresse mislike that I should speake of the contentment which I haue in her seruice: and why will you not haue me say so, if it be true? Is it true (answered *Phillis*) see what vanity this is! will you say yet that she loues you, and that she cannot liue without you? I may not say (replied the shepheard) that it is so: but I may well say, I wish it were so: but you seeme to thinke it so strange, that I say I haue contentment in the seruice which I tender my mistris, that I am cōpelled to aske you if you haue not? At least (said she) if I haue, I doe not brag of it. It is ingratitude (replied the shepheard) to receiue good from any, without thanks: and how is it possible we can loue that person to whom we are vnthankfull? By that (interrupted *Leonide*) I judge that *Phillis* loues not *Diane*. There are few that giue not the same iudgement (answered *Siluander*) and I beleue she thinks so her selfe. If you haue reasons good enough, you may perswade me, replied *Phillis*. If there want no-thing but reason to proue it (said *Siluander*) I haue no more to doe: for whether I proue a thing or deny it, it cannot make it other then it is; so that since I want but reasons to proue your small loue, what haue I to doe to conuince you? That that is to be done, that you loue not *Diane*, belongs to you to proue. *Phillis* here staid a little troubled to answer: and *Astrea* said to her, It seemes, sister, you approue that which the shepheard saith. I doe not approue it (answered she:) but I am much troubled to disproue it. If it be so (added *Diane*) you loue me not at all: for since *Siluander* hath found the reasons which you demand, and against which you cannot resist, you must confesse, that that which he saith, is true.

At this word the shepheard came to *Diane*, and said, Faire, and iust mistresse, is it possible that this enemy shepheardesse hath yet the hardinesse, not to suffer me to say, that the seruice which I yeeld to you, brings me contentment, when this cannot be for the answer which you make so much to mine aduantage? In saying (answered *Astrea*) that *Phillis* loues her not, she doth not say therefore, you do loue her, or that she loues you. If I could heare these words, answered he, I loue you, or you loue me, out of my mistresses mouth, it should not be a contentment, but a transport, that rauisheth me from my selfe, for ouer-great satisfaction: and yet if hee that holds his peace, seeme to consent to that he heares, why may not I say, my faire mistresse confesses that I loue her, since, without contradiction she heares what I say? If Loue (replied *Phillis*) consist in words, you would haue more then all other men together; for I doe not thinke they will euer faile you, as bad a cause as you haue.

*Leonide* tooke wonderfull pleasure at the discourse of these shepheardesses

desse; and, had it not beeene for the payne wherein she was for the disease of *Celadon*, she would haue tarried many dayes with them: for albeit she knew he was out of his feuer, yet she could not but feare his relapse. That was the cause she desired them to take with her the way of *Laignes* to the riuier, for that she might the longer enioy their company. They agreed willingly; for besides courtesie so commaunded them, they were exceedingly pleased with her company. So then, taking *Diane* on the one side, and *Astrea* on the other, shee went toward the Buttresse. But *Siluander* was deceived, who (by chance) was gone furder from *Diane* than was *Phillis*, so that she tooke that place that he desired. Whereat *Phillis*, being very glorious, went mocking the shepheard, saying; that his Mistris might easilly iudge, that hee was too slouthfull to serue her. Shee may grant so much (answered he) to your importunity, but not to your affection. For, if you loued her, you would not haue left mee the place you had. That should rather be a signe of the contrary (sayd *Phillis*) if I suffer another to come neerer than my selfe: for if the party that loues, desires almost to be transformed into the thing beloued, hee approacheth nearest, and so attaynes the perfection of his desires. The louer (answered *Siluander*) that hath more regard to his owne contentment than of the person beloued, deserves not that title at all. So that you which regard more the pleasure which you take, in being neare your Mistris, than you do her commodity, may not say you loue her, but your selfe onely: For, if I were in the place you are, I would helpe her to goe, and you do but let her. If my Mistris (replied *Phillis*) should handle me as you doe, I do not know if I should loue her. I know then assuredly (replied the shepheard) that if I were in your Mistrisse place, I could not loue you. How now (sayd he?) haue you the hardinesse to threaten her thus? Ah *Phillis*! one of the principall lawes of Loue, is, that that party which can imagine, that he may (at some times) not loue, is no more a louer. Mistris, I demand justice of you, and beseech you in the behalfe of Loue, that you would punish this offence of treason, and that thrusting her out of the place, too honorable for her that loues not, you would set me in it; me that would not liue, but to loue you.

Mistris (interrupted *Phillis*) I see well, that this eniuious person of my good, will not let me be quiet, vnfesse I quit him this place; and, I feare, with his language, hee will compell you to giue consent: therefore it is that I desire to preuent him, if you thinke good, and to leaue it him on this condition, that he declare one thing to you that I shall propound. *Siluander* then without staying for *Diane*'s answer, said to *Phillis*: Only go oue,

out, (you shepheardeſſe) of your owne accord, for I will neuer refuſe this condition, ſince without this adoe I will neuer conceale any thing from her that ſhē deſires to know of me. At this word hee ſet himſelfe in her place; and then *Phillis* ſayd to him. Enuiouſ ſhepherd, though the place where you are, may not be bought, yet haue you promiſed more then you are aware of. For you are bound to tell vs what you are, and what occaſion hath brought you into this Country, ſince you haue beeene heere ſo long, and we could neuer yet know but little of it. *Leonide* that was of the ſame minde, taking hold of the words, Questionleſſe (ſayd ſhe) *Phillis*, you haue not hitherto ſhewed more wiſedome than in this propoſition. For at one instant you haue freed *Diane* and me out of ſome paine; *Diane*, for the diſcommodity you diſt her, in hindering *Siluander* from ſuporting her as ſhe went; and me, for the deſire I had to know him more partiſcularly. I wiſh earnestly (aſwered the ſhepherd) fetching a ſigh, I were able to ſatisfie you in this curioſity; but my fortune denies me it (in ſuch manner) that I may truly ſay, I am both more deſirous, and almoſt as ignorant as you. For it pleaſed her to cauſe me to be borne, and to make me know that I liue, hiding from me all other knowledge of my ſelfe. And that you may not thiſke but that I will perfrome my promiſe, I ſware vnto you by *Thentates*, and by the beauties of *Diane*, ſayd hee, turning to *Phillis*, I will tell you truly all that I know.

*The History of Siluander.*

**V**hen *Aetius* was made Lieutenant generall in *Gaul*, by the Emperour *Valentinian*, he found it very dangerous for the Romanes, that *Gondioch* the firſt king of the Burgonians, ſhould poſſeſſe the greateſt part, and reſolved to chafe him out, and to ſend him backe ouer the *Rheyne*, from whence he was lately come; when *Stilico* for the good ſeruice which he had done to the Romanes, gaue him the ancient prouin- ces of the *Anubunes*, of the *Sequas*, and *Allobroges*, whom from that time they caſtled *Burgonians*, from their name, and without the commaundement of *Valentinian*: it is eaſie to beleeue what hee would haue done, to get all the forces of the Empire into his hands: but the Emperour ſeeing a great number of enemies at his elbow, as Gothes, Hunnes, Vandals and Frankes, which were all buſie in diuers places, comauanded *Aetius* to leauē them in peace. Which was not ſo ſoone, but that the Burgonians were gathered together into routes, and that ſo, that their Prouinces, and thoſe that neigbourd them, ſelt the ſmart of it, the enemies ma- king

king waste, with ſo great erueltie, that whatſoever they found, they car- ried away.

Now I at that time being about five or ſixte yeaſes olde, was, with many others, brought by the Burgonians into the vternmoſt towne of the *Allobroges*, who to reuenge themſelues, being entred into the Countrey, conſederate with their enemies, committed the ſame disorders they had receiued. To tell you what was the meaning of them that tooke mee, I know not, vñleſſe it were to haue ſome ſumme of money. So it was, that Fortune was ſo good to me, after ſhe had beeene my ſecret enemy, that I fel into the hands of an Heluetian, who had a father that was an old man, and a right honest, who conceiuing ſome good opinion of me, as well for my countenance, as for ſome pleasant anſwers, which in that age I had giuen him, tooke me to himſelfe, with a purpoſe to make me a ſtudent; and indeede, though his ſonne contrarie him what he could poſſibly, yet forbare he not from following his former deſigne, and ſo ſpared no coſt to cauſe me to be inſtructed in all kinde of learning, ſending mee to the Vniuerſity of *Marseilles*, in the prouince of the Romanes. So that I may ſay with good reaſon, that I had beeene loſt, if I had not beeene loſt. And though (according to my *Genius*) there was nothing more pleauant to me than letters, yet was it a continual punishment to mee, to thiſke, that I knew not from whence, nor who I was, imagining, that this miſfortune neuer beſtell any other. And being in this care, one of my friends aduized me, to enquire of ſome Oracle, to know the trueth. For for my part, I was ſo young, that I had no more remembrance than I haue now, either of the place whence I was taken, or where I was borne; and hee that gaue me this counſell, ſayd, that there was no likelihoode, but that the heauens, hauing had ſuch a care of mee, as I haue found ſince I was loſt, they would yet ſhew mee more fauour. This friend knew ſo well how to perſwade me, that wee went both together, and the anſwer we had was this:

*Thou wert borne in the Land where was Neptune,  
From whom thou drawſt diſcent thou ſhalt not know:  
Untill Siluander die, to ſuch fortune  
Thou wert from cradle mark'd: Fate will's it ſo.*

Judge (faire *Diane*) what ſatisfaction we had in this anſwer: for my part, without longer ſtay I reſolved neuer to enquire furder, ſince it was imposſible I ſhould know it without dying, and to liue afterward with

much quiet of spirit, referring my selfe to the guiding of heauen; and employing my selfe onely to my studies, wherein I made so good progresse, that the old *Abariel* (for that was the name of him who brought me vp) had a minde to see me before he dyed, presaging his end almoft at hand. Being then come to him, and hauing receiued the most sweet v-  
sage that I could desire: one day, when I was alone with him in his chamber, he spake to me in this sort, *My sonne*, (for as such I haue alwayes loued you, since the rigour of warre cast you into my hands) I doe not thinke you so mis-vnderstanding what I haue done for you, that you may make question of my goodwill; yet, if the care I haue had to instruct your youth, haue not giuen you sufficient knowledge of it, I would you should take notice of it, because I desire to do for you. You know that my sonne *Azabyde*, who tooke you, and brought you to mee, hath a daughter, whom I loue as my selfe: and because I determine to passe the few dayes behinde, in quietnesse and tranquillity, I haue a purpose to marry you to her, and to giue you so good a part of my wealth, that I may live with you, so long as it pleaseth God. And thinke not, that I haue had this purpose on a sudden, for it is long since I prepared for every thing. In the first place, I was desirous to know what your humor was, euen when you were a childe, to iudge if you could frame your selfe to be with me, for that in such an age there could be but little art, and so might we see (as naked) all the affectiōns of a soule; and finding you such as I wished *Azabyde* to be, I thought good to settle the repose of my last dayes vpon you, and for that cause I put you to study, knowing well, that there is nothing makes a soule more capable of reason, than the knowledge of things. And during your long absence from me, I haue determined to marry my young daughter to you, who (to please me) desires it alknost as much as my selfe. It is true, she would gladly know, who, and of what place you are.

And to satisfie her, I haue enquired of *Azabyde* many times, in what place he tooke you; but he hath alwayes to'd me, that he knew nothing but that it was at the riuier of *Rosne*, of the prouince of *Brannois*, and that you were giuen by one that brought you two dayes iourney, for exchange of some armors. But it may be, you can remember better, for you might be about fife or sixe yeeres of age; and when I asked him whether the cloaths which you then wore, might not giue some conjecture of what parents you were descended, he answered no, for that you were then so yong, that hardly could one iudgē by your habit, of what condition you were. So that, my sonne, if your memory doe not helpe you herein, there

there is no body can free vs of this paine. So the good old *Abariel* held his peace, and taking me by the hand, besought me to tell him all that I knew. Whereto, after all the thankes I could giue him, as well for the good opinion he had of me, as for the nouture hee had giuen me, and for the marriage which hee propounded, I made him answere, that in truth I was so yong when I was taken, that I had no remembrance neither of my parents, nor of my condition. This is (replied the good old man) somewhat combersome, yet we will not let to proceed further, provided you like of it, not greatly caring to speake with *Azabyde*, but to know your good will. And when I had answered him, that I were very ingratefull, if I did not wholy obey his commandement, at that instant causing mee to go aside, he sent to seeke out his sonne, and to tell him his purpose, which before my returne hee knew of by his daughter; and the feare of losing the goods which *Abariel* would giue vs, made him so much to dislike it, that when his father spake to him of it, hee so long rejected it, and with such reasons, that in the end the good old man not being able to get his consent, told him frankly, *Azabyde*, if you will not giue your daughter to whom I will, I wil giue my goods to whom you would not; and therefore resolute to agree to *Siluander*, or I will chuse him to be mine heire. *Azabyde*, who was very couetous, and fearing to lose that good, seeing his father in these termes, came better to himselfe, and besought him to giue him some few dayes space to think of it; whereas his father being a good old man, easily condescended, desiring to do all things with gentlenesse, and after told me of it: yet he needed not haue done it, for I perceived so much by the eyes and speech of his sonne, who began to deale so roughly with me, that I could hardly endure it. Now during the time that he had taken, he commanded his daughter, who had a better minde then hee, on paine of death (for he was a man of blood and murther) to make shew to the old man, that she was sorry her father would not satisfie his will, and that she could not helpe it, but with her disobedience, that she was ready to marry me secretly, and when it was done, time might worke her fathers content; and this he had in purpose to procure my death. The poore wench was much entangled: for on the one side the ordinary threatenings of her father, whose mischievous nature she knew too well, egged her on to play this part; on the other side, the loue which from her childhood shew bare me, with held her. So it was, that her tender yeeres (for shee had not passed aboue halfe an age) would not let her haue resolution enough to denie; and so, al trembling, she came to vse that speech to the good man, who received it with that confidence, that after hee had killed her fore-head twice

twice or thrice, at last he resolued to put it in practice as she had sayd, and enioyed me so peremptorily, that notwithstanding all the doubts I had in it, I durst not contradict it.

Now the resolution was taken in such sort, that I was to climbe thoro w a window into the chamber, where I must marry her secretly. This Towne is seated on the vmost bounds of the *Allobroges*, on the side of the *Heluecians*, and it is on the banks of the great lake *Leman*, in such sort, that the waues beat vpon the houses, and then disgorge themselues into *Rosne*, which passeth thorow the middest of it. The meaning of *Azabyde* was, because their lodgings were that way, to draw mee vp with a cord, halfe the height of the wall, and then to let me fall into the lake, where being drowned, they might never heare more newes of mee; because that *Rosne* with his swiftnesse, would haue carried me farre off; or touching on the hard rocks, I might haue beeene so bruised, that no man could haue knowne me. And, without doubt, his designe had taken effect, for I was resolued to obey the good *Abariel*, had it not beeene, that the day before this was to be done, the poore wench, that was commanded to shew me good countenance, that I might be the more abused, moued with compassion, and out of horrour to bee the cause of my death, could not hold from discouering it to mee, all trembling, saying to mee a little after, You see, *Siluander*, in sauing your life, I procure mine owne death, for I know well, *Azabyde* will never pardon me; but I had rather dye an innocent, then liue guilty of your death. After I had thanked her, I told her she shold not feare the fury of *Azabyde*; and that I would so prouide, that she shold haue no displeasure; that for her part, shee must onely doe that which her father had giuen in charge, and that I would finde a remedy both for her safety and mine owne: but aboue al things, she must be secret. And then toward night I prouided my selfe of all the money I could get, without the knowledge of *Abariel*, and set so good an order to that I was to doe, that the houre being come when I must goe to the place appoynted, after I had taken leaue of the olde man who came with me to the shore, I mounted into a little barke which hee had prouided, and then going softly vnder the window, I made shew to tye vp my selfe, but it was onely my clothes filled vp with grauell: and suddainely withdrawing my selfe aside, to see what would happen, I heard them fall at once into the lake, where, with the ore, I gently beat the water, that they mighte binke, when they heard the noyse, that it was I that beat so: but I was quickly compelled to be gone from thence, because they cast downe so many stones, that I could hardly saue my selfe; and soone after I saw

saw a light set in the window, whereby fearing to be discouered, I hid my selfe in the boat, lying all along groueling.

This was the cause, the night being very darke, and my selfe gotten a pretty way off, that they could not see me, but thought the boat did float so of it selfe. Now when euery one was gone from the window, I heard a great noyse about the place where I left *Abariel*, and as I might iudge, me thought I heard his exclamations, which I tooke to be occasioned by the noyse that hee had heard in the water, fearing I was drowned: so it was, that I resolu'd never to go to him more, not that it grieu'd me to serue him in his old dayes, for the great obligation that I was tied to him in, but for the ouer-great assurance of the euill will of *Azabyde*. I knew well, that if it were not at this brunt, it would be at another, that he would accomplish his wicked designe. So then being come to the chaines which lock the port, I was forced to leaue my boat, to goe swimming ouer to the other side, whither being come with some danger, by reason of the darkenesse of the night, I went to that place where I had hid my other clothes, and whatsoeuer I had of worth; and taking the way of *Agaune*, I came by the poynt of day to *Enians*; and I assure you, I was weary: for hauing gone fast, I was constrained to rest all that day there, where, by fortune not beeing knowne, I was willing to take counsell, as others did in their most vrgent affaires, of the wise *Bellinde*, who is mistresse of the *Vestals* which are along the lake; and as I learned since, is the mother of my faire mistresse: so it was, that letting her know all my disasters, shee consulted the Oracle, and the next day she told me that the god commanded me not to be disempowered for so great aduersities, and that it was necessary, if I would be gone, to seek out the fountaine of the verity of *Loue*, because in that water was my onely remedy, and as soone as I should be there, I might know both my father and my country. And asking her in what place this fountaine was: she gaue me knowledge, that it was in this countrey of *Forresty*; and then told me the property and the enchantment, with that courtesie, that I am infinitely yet bound vnto her. From that time I resolued to come hither; and taking my way by the towne of *Planctus*, it is some moneth since I came, where the first that I met with, was *Celadon*, who at that time was returnd frō a long voiage, by whom I vnderstood where this admirable fountaine was: but when I should go, I fellicke, so that I came not out of my chamber for sixe moneths together: & somewhat after, finding my selfe strong enough, so that I set my selfe on the way, I vnderstood by them there-abouts, that a Magician, by *Clidemans* procurement, had put it vnder the custody of two Lyons, and two *Vncomes*.

Vnicornes, which he had enchanted, and that the sorcery might not bee vndone, but with the blood and death of two the most faithfull Louers that euer were in this countrey. God knowes whether this news brought not me sorrow, seeing my selfe almost out of hope of that I desired: yet considering this was the Countrey, which the heauens had destined for me to know my parents, I thought fit to stay here, and (it may bee) these faithfull in loue may at last be found out; but yet it is a merchandize so rare, that I dare not haue too great an hope. With this purpose I resolued to clothe my selfe in shepheards weeds, that I might more freely liue with such good companies which are along the riuier of *Lignon*; and that I might not be idle, I employed all the remenant of my money which I had, vpon cattell, and a little cabbins, to which I haue since retired.

See, faire *Leonide*, that which you desired to know of mee, and behold my payment to *Phillis* for the plice which she sold me, which hereafter she shall not haue the boldnesse to take, since she hath giuen it for so good a price. I am much delighted (answered *Leonide*) in hearing you tell your fortune; and I must tell you, that you ought to hope well of your selfe, since the gods, by their Oracles, shew themselues to haue such care of you: for my part, I pray them for it with all my heart. And so do not I (comes in *Phillis* writhing her selfe:) for if he were knowne (it may bee) the worth of his father might make him carry away our mistrisse; it being very certaine, that good and alliance may do more in marriages, then their worth or loue. Take heede what you say (said *Siluander*) you are so farrefrom wishing me so much hurt, that I hope by your means, to come to the knowledge I desire. By my meanes (answered she?) how can that be? By your meanes (continued the shepheard:) for since it must be, that the Lyons shall die by the bloud of a Louer, and of a faithfull beloued, why may not I thinke, that I am this Louer, and you the Beloued? Faithfull I am, it is true (answered *Phillis*) but valiant I am not; so that in well louing my mistris, I will giue place to none; but for my bloud & life, talke no more of it: for what seruice can I doe her when I am dead? I assure you (answered *Diane*) that I wish your life of the two, and not your death, and I desire rather to be in danger my selfe, then to see you so by my occasion.

While they discoursed in this sort, and as they drew neer to the bridge of the Buttresse, they might see farre off, a man comming apace towards them, and drawing neerer, was quickly knowne of *Leonide*; for it was *Paris*, the sonne of the great Druide *Adamas*, who being returned from *Fleure*, and hauing knowne that his Niece was come to seeke him, and seeing

ing she came not back, he sent his sonne to let her know he was returned, and to understand what occasion had brought her so alone, for that it was not the custome to goe without company. As soone as the Nymph spyeed him a farre off, she told his name to the faire shephearde sses: and they, that they might not be wanting in their civility, whi he came neere them, saluted him with so great courtesie, that the beauty and pleasing fashion of *Diane* gaue him that delight, that he stood as almost rauished, and had it not bin that the welcomming of *Leonide* diverted him a little, he could hardly haue hidden this surprize: yet after the first salutation, and that he had told her what brought him to her, But sister (said he) (for *Adamas* would haue them call brother and sister) where found you this faire company? Brother (said she) we haue beeene together two dayes, and yet I assure you, we are not weary.

This here (shewing him *Astrea*) is the faire shephearde sse, whom you haue so often heard speech of, for it is *Astrea*, and that thare, is *Diane*, the daughter of *Belinde* and *Celeon*, and the other is *Phillis*; and that shepheard is the vñknowne *Siluander*, whose vertue is so well knowne heere, that there is none in this Court but loues him. Vndoubtedly (sayd *Paris*) my father did not well, to feare you were ill accompanyyed; and if hee had knowne, that you had beeene so well, hee would not haue beeene so disquieted. Gentle *Paris* (said *Siluander*) a person that hath so much of vertue as this Nymph, can neuer be ill accompanyyed. And yet much lesse (answered he) when she is among so wise and faire shephearde sses. And as he spake this word, he turned him to *Diane*, who perceiving her selfe to be summoned, answered; It is impossible (courteous *Paris*) that one can adde to a thing that is accomplished. Yet so it is (replied he) that (in my judgement) I loue better to be with her, when you are neere, than when she shall be alone. This is your courtesie (answered shee) that you vse these termes, in the behaife of strangers. You cannot (answered *Paris*) call your selues strangers to me, but withall, you must terme me a stranger to you, which is a reproch to me, whereof I am much ashamed, because I cannot be freed from blame, to be neigbor to such beauties, and so great merits, and yet be almost vñknowne to them: but, to amend this error, I resolute to do better for the time to come, & to conuerse with you, as much as without reason, I haue beeene remoued from you heretofore: and in speaking these last words, hee turned towards the Nymph, And you sister, though I be come to seeke you (said he) yet shall you go alone, since it is not farre from hence to the house of *Adamas*. For, for my part, I will tarry till night with this good company. I would I might do so too (sayd

(said she;) but for this time I am constrainyd to make an end of my iuorney. Yet am I purposed, so to order my affayres, that I may liue as well with them, as you : for I doe not thinke there is a more happy life than theirs. With such other like discourse she took her leaue of the faire shepheardesses; and after straite embracements, promised to come againe to them very soone : and so parted, much contented and satisfied with them, so that shhee resolued to change the vanities of the Court, to the simplicity of that life : but that which moued her most, was, that she had a desire to free *Celadon* out of the hands of *Galathée*, and thought that he would presently returne into the Hamlet, where she determined to conuerse vnder the shaddow of these shepheardesses.

Thus you see what was the voyage of *Leonide*, who sawe the birth of two great loues, that of *Siluander*, vnder a fayned wager, as wee haue sayd, and that of *Paris*, as wee will speake of, to *Diane*. For since that day he grew so amorous, that to be more familiar with them, he forsooke the life he vsed, and attired himselfe as a shepheard, and would so be called among them, that so hee might make himselfe more pleasing to his Mistris; who, for her part, honoured him according to his merit, and as his goodwill obliged her. But for that, in the course of our discourse, wee are to speake after of it, we will say no more at this tyme. Then, returning to their Hamlets, as they drew neere the great meddow, where the most part of the flockes fed ordinarily, they might see come from farre, *Tircis*, *Hylas* and *Licidas*, whereof the two first seemed to disport in good earnest; for the gesture of his armes, and the rest of the bodie of *Hylas* shewed as much: as for *Licidas*, he was by himselfe, his hat pull'd downe, and his hands behind him; he went looking on his feet, shewing well hee had something in his soule that much troubled him: and when they were so neare that they might know them, and that *Hylas* perceiued *Phillis* among the shepheardesses; and for that since the former day hee beganne to loue her, leauing *Tircis*, he came to her, and without saluting the rest of the company, tooke her vnder the arme, and in his accustomed humor (without other shew of words) told her the desire hee had to serue her. *Phillis*, who beganne to know him, and was contented to passe the tyme, said; I know not (*Hylas*) whence this wil springs, for there is nothing in me that may moue it. If you thinke that you say (sayd he) you owe mee the greater obligation; and if you doe not think it, you may judge me a man of spirit, that can know what is worthy to be serued, and so you may esteeme of me the better. Doubt not (sayd she) howsoeuer it be, that I esteeme you, and that I recceive your loue as it merits; and were it not for

for any other consideration; yet at least, for that you are the first that loued me. By fortune, while they were talking, *Licidas* comes in, whose ielousie was so high growne, that it ouer-topped his affection; and for his greater hurt, he came in euill tyme, so that he might heare the answer that *Hylas* made to *Phillis*, which was thus: I know not (faire shepheardesse) if you will continue as you beginne with me: but if you doe, you shall be the truer; for I know well, that *Siluander*, at least, will help to giue you the lie: and if hee will not doe it for sake of displeasing you, I assure my selfe, that all that were here yesterday, wil witness *Siluander* was your servant. I know not whether he hath left his loue vnder his pillow. *Siluander*, that thought not of the loue of *Licidas*, thinking it would be a shame for him to disprooue *Hylas*: and besides that, that hee should offend *Phillis*, to say otherwise before her, answered; Shepheard, you must seek no other witness than me in this matter: and you are not to think that the shepheards of *Lignen* can cloath and vncloath themselves so readily of their affections; for they are grosse, and therefore heauy and slowe in that they doe. But as anayle, the grosser it is, and the more weight it holdes, the harder it is to be wrested out: so, the tougher and grosser our affections are in vs, the longer they last in our soules: so that if you haue seene mee seruitour to this sayre shepheardesse, you may see mee so still, for we change not every tyme we sleepe. But if this befall you, I say, you that haue an hote brayne, as well as a balde head, and a red hayre, bewrayes much, you are not to giue the same censure of vs. *Hylas* hearing as his shepheard speake so frankly and so truly to his humor, thought that either *Tircis* had told him somewhat, or that he must know it elsewhere: and therefore all astonied; Shepheard (sayd he) haue you seene mee at any tyme? or where learned you this you speake of me? I never saw you (sayd *Siluander*) but your phisognomy and your discourse made mee judge that I say. For hardly may a man suspect in another that fault, whereof he is wholly exempted. Of necessity then (answered *Hylas*) you cannot be exempted from that inconstancy which you suspect in me. The suspition (replied *Siluander*) growes, either out of some small likelihood, or of the appearance of that which is not, but onely in imagination, and that a man cannot haue of another, without himselfe be spotted. But that which I sayd of you, is not of suspition, but of a certainty.

Call you that suspition, when we haere you say, that you haue loued *Laonice*, and leauing her for this second, who was heere yesterday with her, now you haue left them both for *Phillis*, whom without doubt you will leue for the first commer, whose eies will vouchsafe to look on you?

*Tircis*, who heard them thus discourse, seeing *Hylas* stand as overcome, beganne to speake in this sort: *Hylas*, you must no longer hide your selfe, you are discouered. This shepheard hath cleare eyes to see the spots of your inconstancy, you must confess the truth. For if you fight against it besides that, at the last, you shall be counted a liar, you being not able to resist, for that nothing is so strong as Truth, you shall be faine to shew your weakenesse.

Confesse it then freely to be as it is, and to encourage you, I will beginne. Know (gentle shepheard) that it is true, that *Hylas* is the most inconstant, the most disloyall, and the greatest traitour to shepheardeſſe, (to whom he promises goodwill) that euer was. And so (added *Phillis*) that he will oblige them whom he loues not at all. And *Meſtris*, (answered *Hylas*) are you also against me? will you belectue the impostures of these malicious? Doe you not see that *Trait*, finding himſelfe bound to *Siluander* for the iudgement he gaue in fauour of him, thinks fit to pay him in ſome ſort, by giuing you an euill opinion of me? What doth this import, ſayd *Phillis* to *Siluander*? What doth this import, ſaid the inconstant? know you not it is harder to take a place poſſeſſed, then that which no man holds? He would ſay (added *Siluander*). The more you loue him, the harder it will be for me to acquire your good graces. But, my friend *Hylas*, how much are you deceiued? ſo farre, that when I ſee ſhe daines to caſt her eye on you, I ſhall be aſſured of her loue. For I know her to be of ſo good iudgement, that ſhee hath alwayes knowledge to chafe the better. Then anſweſed *Hylas*, It may be (glorious ſhepheard) you think to haue ſome aduantage ouer me. Miftris, becauſe him not, for he is of no worth, and indeel, what man can he be that neuer had the hardiſhſe to loue, nor to ſerue, but ono onely ſhepheardesſe, and that ſo coldly, that you would think he iested? Whereas I loue as many as I ſee ſayre, and of them all I haue beene as well entartayned as I would wiſh. What ſeruice can you hope for of him that is ſuch a nouiſe, that he knoweth not how to beginne? But I that haue ſerved of all ports, of all ages, and of all humours, know of what fashion, and what ought, and what ought not to pleafe her: and for proofe of what I ſay, ſuffer me to queſtione him, if you would know his ignorance. And then turning toward him, he went on, What is it (*Siluander*) that ought moſt to binde a fayre ſhepheardesſe to loue vs? That is, (ſaid *Siluander*) to loue none but her. And what is that (continued *Hylas*), that may please her moſt? That is (anſwered *Siluander*) to loue her extremely. Now ſee then (ayes the inconstant) how ignorant and morous is this man: ſo farre is that which he ſayes

ſayes from truth, that it ingenders contempt and hatred. For, to loue but her alone, giues her cauſe to thinke, that it is want of courage, that he dares not vndertake: and ſo thinking her ſelfe to be beloued for want of another, ſhe will diſpife ſuſh a louer. Whereas if you loue in common; for the ſmall worth of the thing, ſhee will not thinke when you come to her, that it is not for that you know not whither elſe to goe; and this will binde her more to loue you, elſpecially, if you come to particulars, and make it appeare to her, that you ſtily more vpon her: and to perſuade her the better, you tell her all that you know of others, and oþre in the week; you bring to her all that you haue ſayd, and what they haue anſwered, ſiting the encounter as occaſion requireth, to the end you may make her the more pleaſing: & draw her to cheriſh your company. This way (yong louer) this way ſhall you binde her to any loue. But to please her, you muſt on the contrary, flie, as from poſſon, the extremity of loue, because there is nothing moſe grievous betweene two louers, than this ſo great affection: for you that loue in this ſort, to please your ſelfe, labour to be alwayes neare her, to be alwayes talking with her: ſhe cannot cough, but you muſt aske her, what ſhe ayles; ſhe cannot turne her foot, but you muſt doe the like. To be ſhort, ſhe is almoſt conſtrayned to carry you, you preſſe her, and impoſtune her ſo. But the miſchiefe is, if ſhe be ſicke ſometimes, and that ſhe ſmiles not on you, if ſhe ſpeaketh not to you, and intertwaine you not as ſhe was wont, then you fall to whining, & to teares; but ſuch plaints (I ſay) as wherewith you ſo fill her eares, that to free her ſelfe of theſe impoſtunities, ſhe is forced to reſtraine her ſelfe; and ſometimes when ſhe would be alone, and locke vp her ſelfe for a time to her owne thoughts, ſhe muſt be conſpelled to come ſee you, to entartayne you, and tell you a thouſand tales to content you.

Thinke you this to be a good meane, to haſte her loue you? You muſt doe in loue, as in other things, the mediocritie is onely coniendable, ſo that you loue after an indifferent taſhion, to auoyde all thoſe troubleſome impoſtunities: neither yet is this ſufficient for to please her: it is not enouſh not to diſplease, but you muſt haue ſome allurements which may be louely; and that is, to be pleasant, cheeresfull, to be alwaies ready to tell a merry tale; and aboue all, to be neuer ſilent before her. Thus, *Siluander*, muſt we binde a ſhepheardesſe to loue vs, and ſo gaue her good Graces. Now ſee, miſtrisſe, if I may not go for a maſter, and what reckoning you are to make of my affection. She would haue anſwered, but *Siluander* intermitteth her, beſeeching her to ſuffer him to ſpeak. And then he queſtioned *Hylas* in this ſort: What is it (ſhepheard) that you moſt deſire,

when you loue? To be beloued (answered *Hylas*.) But (replied *Siluander*) when you are beloued, what do you wish for most in this loue? That the person whom I loue (said *Hylas*) make more of me then of any other; that she trust me, and endeuer to please me. Is it possible then (inferrs *Siluander*) that to preserue life, you take poyson? how will you haue her trust you, when you will not be faithfull? But (said the shepheard) shee shall not know that. And see you not (answered *Siluander*) that you will do that with treason, which you should doe with sincerity? If shee know not that you loue another, shee will thinke you faithfull, and so this dissembling may profit you; but iudge if dissembling may doe you as much good as truth.

You talke of contempt and despite; and there is nothing that sooner brings them both in a generous spirit, than to think that he, whom now I see before mee on his knees, is weary with doing so before a score that may not compare with me: that mouth, with which he kisses my hand, is dried vp with the kisses it giues to the fist-hand it meets; and those eyes, with which he seemes to commit idolatry to my face, are yet sparkling with the loue of all those that haue the name of woman: and what haue I to doe with a thing so common? And why should I make much of him, when he will doe nothing more for mee, then for the first that vouchsafes to looke on him? When he talkes to me, he thinks it is to such or such an one; and the words that he vses, hee learned at the schoole of such an one, or, he comes to studie heere, that he may goe vter it there. God knows how soone contempt and despite may make her conceiue this thought: and so for the second poynct, that to make himselfe beloued, hee must loue but a little; he must be merry and pleasant. For, to be iocund and always laughing, is fit for a iester, and one of such a mould. But for a louer, that is, for another our selfe, O *Hylas*, hee must haue other condicions. You say, that in all things mediocrity only is good. That is it (shepheard) that hath no part of the extreme of the incane or defect, as faythfullnesse. For, he that is but a little faithfull, is not faithfull at all; and he that is, is in the extreme, that is to say, there can be none greater than other in faythfullnesse; so it is of valiancy, and so it is of loue: for hee that can meaſure it, or that can imagine any other greater than his owne, loues not: So you see, *Hylas*, that when you commaund to loue in a meane, you set downe a thing impossible; and when you doe so, you doe like vnto the melancholique fooles, that thinke they know all Sciences, and yet know nothing, when you haue an opinion you loue, but indeed you loue not.

But be it so, that one may loue a little: and know you not, that Loue hath no other haruest but loue, and all that it soweth, is but only to reape that fruit? And how would you haue her whom you loue but a little, loue you a great deale, since it must fall out, that what shee gayneth, shee shall lose a part of that which shee soweth in so ingratefull ground? Shee shall never know (sayes *Hylas*) that I loue so. See (sayd *Siluander*) the same treason which I reproached you with before. And imagine you, whereas you say, the effects of an extreme loue, are the importunitiess which you haue reckoned, that if you render them not, shee will not easily conjecture the feblenesse of your loue. O *Hylas*, how little you know in loue!

These effects which the extremity of Loue brings forth, and which you call importunitiess, are such (it may be) to those that, like you, know not to loue, and never approached neare vnto that god. Who hath lost his sight, but they that are thorowly touched, they which do loue in earnest, and know what are the dueties, and what the sacrifices which they offer at the Altars of Loue? So farre are they from giuing to such effects the name of importunitiess, that they call them felicitieſ and perfect contentments. Know you well, that to loue, is to die in himselfe, to reiue in another, that it is not to loue himselfe, but so much as he is pleasing to the beloued; and shortly, it is to transforme himselfe entirely (if it may be) into her. And can you imagine, that one that loues in this sort, can be combred with the presence of him whom she loues, and that the knowledge which she hath to be truely loued, is not a thing so delightfull, that all others in respect of it, cannot so much as be tasted?

And if you had at any time prooued, that it is thus to loue, as I say, you would never thinke that hee which thus loues, could do nothing but displease, when that should not be but only for this, that whatsoeuer is marked with this character of Loue, cannot be displeasing; and your selfe will confesse, that it is so desirous to please, that if it commit a fault, euē that error pleases, seeing with what intent it is done; whereas the desire to be pleasing, giues such force to a true loue, that though he render himselfe not so to all the world, yet is he never fayling to her whom hee loueth.

Thence it comes, that many which are not judged in generall more louely then others, yet are beloued and esteemed by some one. Now you see, *Hylas*, if you be not very ignorant, that till now you beleued you loued, and yet you did but abuse the name of Loue, & abuse them whom you thought you loued. How (said *Hylas*) did I never yet loue? What haue

haue I then done with *Carlis*, *Amaranthe*, *Laonice*, and so many others? Know you not (said *Silander*) that in all sorts of Artes, there bee some that doe right, and others wrong? Loue is of that kinde: for one may loue rightly, as my selfe, and wrongfully, as you; and so one may call me a master, and you a marrer of Loue. At these last words there were none could hold from laughter, but *Licidas*, who hearing this discourse, could not but more strengthen himselfe thereby in his iealousie, which *Phillis* greatly regarded not, thinking she had giuen proofs great enough of her loue; so that in reason, he was not to doubt it; but ignorance knowes not that iealousie in Loue is Iuic, that drawes to it selfe the nourishment which should goe to the good branches, and good fruit; and the greater it is, the more it shewes the fertility of the place, and the strength of the plant. *Paris*, that admired the great spirit of *Silander*, knew not what to iudge of him, and thought, that if he had beene bred among ciuill folke, he had beene without parakell, since liuing among shepheards, hee was such, that he knew none more gentle. That was the cause that he resolued to make friendship with him, more freely to enioy his company. And to procure the to hold on their disputation, he turned to *Hylas*, & said, that he must confesse he had taken the worse part, since he stood so long iuste. He neede not be astonied for that (said *Diane*) since there is not so violent a iudge as the conscience; *Hylas* knowes well, hee argues against the truth, and it is onely to flatter his fault. And though *Diane* held on this discourse some while, yet *Hylas* answered not a word, being busie in beholding *Phillis*, who when she was neere *Licidas*, entertained him course-ly enough: and because *Astrea* would not haue him ouer-heare what she said to him, she diuers times interrupted him, vntil at last she constrained him to say, If *Phillis* be so importuned, I will not loue at all. Truely shepheard, said she, (expressely to hinder him from harkening) if you bee as vngacious to her, as vnciuill to vs, shee will make no great account of you. And for that *Phillis*, without taking heede to this dispute, held on her discourse, *Diane* said to her, What, *Phillis*, doe you thus shew the duty you owe me? Will you leaue mee then to entertaine a shepheard? Whereat *Phillis* surprized, answered, I would not, mistresse, this error should displease you, for I was of opinion, that this goodly discourse of gentle *Hylas*, would haue kept you from heeding mee, who in the meane time was giuing order to an affaire that this shepheard spoke of to mee; and indeede she lyed not, for she was much busied for the coldnesse shee found in him. It were good then *Phillis* (said *Diane* with the words of a true mistresse) you thinke to pay all your faults with excuses; but remem-ber

ber that all these defects are but small proofes of your little loue, and that in time and place I shall remeber in what fashion you serue me. *Hylas* had taken *Phillis* by the waste, and not knowing the wager of *Silander* and her, was amazed to heare *Diane* speake so: therefore seeing her ready to beginne her excuse, he presented her, saying, Who would say, faire mistresse, that this glorious shepheardesse would handle you thus course-ly? will you yeld to her in any thing? Commit not this fault, I beseech you: for though she be faire, yet haue you beauty enough, to make you a part, and which (it may be) giues no place to hers. Ah! *Hylas* (said *Phillis*) if you knew against whom you speake, you would rather choose to be mute the rest of your life, then to be prouided of a word that might displease this faire shepheardesse, who in the twinkling of an eye, may (if you loue) make you the most vnhappy man that euer loued. On me, said the shepheard, she may rayse or cast downe, open or shut her eyes: but my misfortune, no more then my happiness shall never depende; neither of her eyes nor of her whole face, and yet I loue you and will loue you. If you loue mee. (added *Phillis*) and I haue any power ouer you, shee hath much more, for I may be moued either by your loue, or by your seruices, not to vse you hardly: but this shepheardesse being neither loued nor serued of you, will never haue pity.

And what neede haue I (sayd *Hylas*) of her pity? Yes certainly (replied *Phillis*) you want her mercy: for I will nothing but what she wills, and can do nothing but what shee commands: for behold, the Mistres I loue, whom I serue, and whom I adore, so that she is all my loue, all my fruice, and all my devotione. Now see, *Hylas*, whom you haue offended, and what pardon you are to sue for. Then the shepheard casting himselfe at the feete of *Diane*, all astonied, after he had a little beheld her, sayd; Mine owne faire Mistres, if he that loues, may behold any other thing then the subiect beloued, I might well haue scene in some sort, that every one was to honor and do reverence to your merit; but since I haue mine eyes clo-  
sed against al other things, but my *Phillis*, you shuld shew too great cru-  
elty, if you pardone not the fault which I confess, & for which I cry you mer-  
cy. *Phillis* that was sorry to be thus pestered with this man, that she might  
talke with *Licidas*, as he had desired, made haste to answer him before  
*Diane*, and to tell him that *Diane* would not pardon him, but with con-  
dition, that he should tell them the suites and aduentures which hee had  
had since hee beganne to loue; for it was impossible but the discourse  
would be very pleasing; since he had serued in so many sorts, the acci-  
dents must needs be accordingly.

Truly

Truely *Phillis* (sayd *Diane*) you are a great diuiner: for I had a purpose neuer to pardon him, but with that condition: and therefore, *Hylas*, resolve to do it. How (sayd the shepheard?) will you constraine me to tell my life before my Mistris? and what opinion will shee haue of me; when shee shall heare say that I haue loued aboue an hundred? that to some I haue bid farewell before I left them, and left others, before I sayd any thing to them? when shee shall know that at one and the same time I was diuided among many, what will shee thinke of me? Nothing worse then shee now thinkes (sayd *Siluander*:) for shee will then but iudge you inconstant, as shee doth already. It is true (sayd *Phillis*) but that you may not enter into this doubt, I haue busynesse elsewhere, whither *Astrea* shall go with me, if shee please, and in the meane time you shall obey *Diane*'s commandement. At this word shee tooke *Astrea* by the arme, and withdrew to the side of the wood where *Licidas* was euuen now gone: and because *Siluander* had ouerheard her answere to *Licidas*, hee followed afarre off, to see what his meaning was: whereto the euening somewhat serued his turne that he might not be scene, for it waxed late; besides that, hee went behind the bushes hiding himselfe so, that hee followed them at pleasure vnseen, and came so fitly, that hee heard what *Astrea* sayd to her: what humor is this of *Licidas*, to desire to speake with you at this howre, and in this place, hauing so many other commodities that I know not what hee meanes to choose out so vnsit a time? I know not, sayd *Phillis*: I haue found him very sad this euening, and I cannot tell what hath besafne him; but hee hath so coniured me to come hither, that I cannot delay it. I beseech you to walke here-about while we are together, for aboue al, hee desires I should be alone. I will do (answered *Astrea*) what pleasest you: but take heed it bee not euill thought of, to see you talke with him at so vnsit hours, especially being alone in this darke place. It is for that cause (answred *Phillis*) that I haue put you to the paine to come hither; & therefore, I pray you to walke so neare vs, that if any one come on vs, hee may thinke that we three are together. While they talked thus, *Diane* and *Paris* preſſed *Hylas* to tell them his life, to satisfie the commandement of his Mistris; and though hee made much difficulty, yet at laſt hee began in this ſort.

The History of *Hylas*!

You will then, mine owne faire Mistris, and gentle *Paris*, that I tell you the aduentures beſalme, ſince I began to loue. Thinke not that my refuſall

refuſal was, for that I knew not what to ſay: for I haue loued too much to want matter, but rather for that I haue too little day to haue the leſure not to tell you all (that would be too long) but not to begin alone. Yet ſince for obedience I muſt ſatisfie your wil, I pray you harken to me: while I put you in mind, that all things are ſubiect to ſome ſuperior power, which almoſt enforceth vs to actions, which it pleaſeth vs, and that whereto mine enclines ſo violently, is loue, for otherwife, it may be you wold woder to ſee me ſo carried, that there is no chaime either of duty or obligation, that may withhold me. And I freely confeſſe, that if everyone muſt haue ſome inclination of nature, mine is of inconstancy, for which I am not to bee blamed, ſince the heauens ordaine mee ſo. Haue this conſideration before your eyes, while you heare the diſcourse which I am to make.

Among the principal Countries, that the *Rosne* in his ſwift course viſits, after it hath receiued *Arar*, *Isere*, *Durance*, & other riuers, hee comes dashing vpon the ancient walls of the towne of *Arles*, chiefe of that country, and the moſt peopled and richest of the Romane prouince. Neere this faire towne, there incamped a great while ſince, as I heard our Druides tell, a great Captaine, named *Cains Marinus*, before the notable victory which hee got againſt the *Cimbres*, *Cimmeriens*, and *Celtoſcites*, at the foote of the *Alpes*, who being deuided by the deepe *Scitique Ocean*, with their wiues and children, purpoſing to ſacke *Rome*, were ſo ouerthronwe by this great captaine, that there remained not one aliue: and if the Romane armes had ſpared any one, the barbarous fury that was in their courage, made them turne their owne hands againſt themſelues, and in rage kill themſelues, that they might not liue being vanquished. Now the Romane army, to affiſe their allies and friends of their common wealth, comming to encampe, as I told you, neere that towne, and according to the cuſtome of that wary nation, compassing their campe with trenches, it fel out that being neare to *Rosne* this riuer which is moſt violent, and which threatens and beates inceſtantly his bankes, by little and little in time met with theſe large & deepe ditches, and with maine strength entring into the chanell which hee found already made, runs with ſuch fury, that makes the ditches ſtretch out to the ſea, where hee goes diſcharging himſelfe by this meaneſ, two wayes: for the ancient course hath alwayes followed his ordinary way, and this new one is growne ſo great, that it equalls the greateſt riuers, making betweene both a moſt delectable and forcible land, and because they were the trenches of *Cains Marinus*, the people by corruption of the word, call it *Carmage*, of his name: and ſince, for

for that the place is inuironed with these two armes of *Rosne*, and the midland sea they call it the Isle of *Camarge*. I would not haue sayd so much about the originall of this place, had it not bene that it was the countrey of my nativity, and where they, of whom I am descended, haue long time dwelt: for by reason of the fertility of the place, and that it is as it were cut out from the rest of the land, there is a number of shepheards that are withdrawne thither, which for the abundance of pasture, they call *Pasture*, and my fathers haue alwayes bene held in some consideratiōn among the principall, were it for that they were thought good and vertuous men, were it for that they had honestly, and after their condition acquired the goods of fortune; so they left me sufficiently prouided: for, when they died, which was (without doubt) too soone for me, for my father died the day that I was borne, and my mother bred me vp with all manner of delicatenesse, an only child, or rather a marred child, endured but till I was twelue yeeres of age. Judge what master of an house I was like to proue: among other imperfектions of youth, I could not auoyd that of presumption, supposing there was not a shepheard in all *Camarge* which ought not respect me. But when I was a little advanced, and that Loue began to mingle with this presumption, mee thought all the shepheardeſſe were in loue with me, and that there was not one which receiued not my loue with obligation. And that which fortified me in this opinion, was that a faire and wise shepheardeſſe my neighbour, called *Carlis*, made me all the honest shewes, which neighbour-hood might challenge. I was so yong as yet, that none of the incommodities which loue vſes to bring to the louer, by his violent transports, could reach me, that I felt nothing but sweetenesse, and on that subiect, I remeber, that sometime I went singing these verses.

## A SONNET

On the sweetnesse of Loue.

VV Hen speakes my shepheardeſſe, or rather when ſhe ſingis,  
Or with her eies sweets glaſe to mine ſhe dazzling brings,  
Loue ſeems to take in her, and with her gracious ſounds  
Ranishes us by th' eare, with charmes our ſights confounds.

Not as you ſee him, when he cruelly tormentis  
The heaſes that are poſſeſt with paſſions violente,  
But then when like a child full wantonly he moanes,  
Plaies on his mothers lap, and formes a ſchool and loues.

Nor

Nor when he ſports himſelfe with thoſe the Papboan maidis,  
Nor when on graces lap himſelfe to reſt he laid,  
You could ſee him ſo pleas'd as neare my ſhepheardeſſe.

But when he burtheneth ſo, may we him Loue confeſſe?  
He is ſo when he playes, and makes his place of reſt,  
In *Carlis* boſome ſweete, as on his mothers breſt.

Though the age wherein I was, ſuffered me not to know that it was Loue, yet forbare I not to delight my ſelfe in the company of that ſhepheardeſſe, and to vſe thoſe deuices wherewith I vnderſtood, that they whom they call Louers, ſerued their turne; ſo that the long continuance made many thinke, that I knew more then my age would allow of. And that was the cauſe, that when I was corne to 18. or 19. yeeres, I found my ſelfe engaged to ſerue her. But for that my humor was not to care much for this vaine-glory, which the moſt part of them which trade in Loue, will arrogate to themſelues, that is to be eſteemed conſtant: the good countenance of *Carlis* tyed mee more then this imaginary duty. From thence it came, that one of my greatest friends tooke occaſion to diuert me from her: his name was *Hermante*; and without any heede of mine, was become ſo amorous of *Carlis*, that hee tooke no contentment but to be neare her. I, who was young, neuer perceiued this new affection, as I had but two little craft to finde it, ſince the ſubtilleſt in that myſtery are ſcarce able to do it. Hee was older then I, and by conſequence wifer; ſo that he knew ſo well to diſemble, that I doe not thinke that any at that time ſuſpected him. But that which brought him moſt diſcommodity, was, that the parents of this ſhepheardeſſe deſired there might be a marriage betweene her and me, for that they were of opinion, that it would be for her aduantage. Whereof *Hermante* being aduertised, eſpecially knowing by the ſpeech of the ſhepheardeſſe, that indeeſ ſhee loued me, he thought ſhe would withdraw from me, if I began to withdraw from her. Hee well found out (as I told you) that I would change as ſoone as occaſion was offered. And after he had conſidered with himſelfe, how he might beginne this deſigne, he thought, that working in mee an opinion of my greater worth, he might make me neglect, for vncertainty, that which was moſt auerſed to me. Hee brought it about very eaſily: for beſides that I beleued him as my friend, this good could not be very deare vnto me, which beſet me without paine, & made me beleue I might compaſſe any thing of the beſt, if I would beſtow the ſtudy. Hee

Kk 2

on

on the other side knew so well to perswade me, that I held for certaine, that there was not a shephearde in all *Carmage*, that would not more willingly entertaine me, then I would make choyce of her. Assured by this beleefe, I thrust *Carlis* wholly out of my soule, after I had made election of another, whom I judged the worthier: and, without doubt, I deceived not my selfe, for she had beauty enough to winne loue, and wisedome to carry it: her name was *Stilliane*, esteemed among the fairest and wiest of all the Iland, otherwise lofty, and such an one, as I must haue to put me out of the error wherein I was.

And see what my presumption was! Because she was serued by many, and they all lost their time, I beganne to woo her the more willingly, that the world might take better knowledge of my merit. *Carlis*, which truely loued me, was astonied at this change, not knowing what cause I might haue, but she must needs suffer it. She did much to recall me, and at the first vsed all sorts of allurements which she could think of: which I tooke no heede of to returne, I was in the deepe seas, there was no meane to come backe to land so readily. But if she tooke displeasure at this separation, she was fully revenged on him that was the cause of the euill: for conceiting to my selfe, that as soone as I assured *Stilliane* of my loue, shee would more willingly giue her selfe to me; at the first time I met her, to talke within an assembly which was purposely made; dauncing with her, I said, Faire shephearde, I know not what your force is, nor with what charmes your eyes furnish themselues; so it is, that *Hylas* sees himselfe now so much becom: your seruant, that no man can bee more. Shee thought I mocked her, knowing well the loue that I had borne to *Carlis*, which made her answer smilingly, These discourses, are they of those that you learne in the schoole of faire *Carlis*? I would haue answered, when acording to the order of the dance, there were that separated vs, and I could not come neare her afterward, howsoever I laboured it: so that I was constrained to stay vntill the assembly brake vp. And seeing her goe with the formost, to withdraw themselues, I aduanced my selfe, and tooke her by the armes. Shee at the first beganue to smile, and after said, Is it vpon resolution, *Hylas*, or commandement, that this night you haue enterprized thus on me? Why (answered I) make you this demand? Because (said she) I see so small likelihood of reason, in that you do that I can not suspect, but from those two occasions. It is, said I, for them both; for I am resolued neuer to loue but the faire *Stilliane*, and your beauty commandes me to loue none other. I beleue (answered she) that you thinke not that you speake to me, or that you know me not; and, that you may no

no longer deceiue your selfe; know that I am not *Carlis*, and that I call my selfe *Stilliane*. I must be much deceived (answered I) to take you instead of *Carlis*; for she is too imperfect, to be taken for you, or you for her. And I know too well, for my liberty, that you are *Stilliane*, and it were more for my rest that I knew lesse. Wee were come as farre as her lodging, and yet could I not find, whether she liked of it or no. The next morning, it was no sooner day, but I went to seek out *Hermante*, to tell him what befell me. In the euening I found him yet in his bed. And seeing me somewhat moued: How now, sayd he! what newes? Is the victory obtained without combat? Ah my friend (answered I) I haue found out one. I may talke to; she disdaines mee, she mockes me, she sends me at every word to *Carlis*: to be short, she vses me like a Mistris. He could not hold from laughter, when he had heard all the discourse at length, for he expected no lesse. But knowing well my changing humour, hee feared I would goe backe to *Carlis*, and that she would entertaine me, which was the cause that he answered me: Did you hope for lesse from her? Would you thinke her worthy your loue, if not yet knowing in truth, that you loue her, she should giue her selfe to you? How may she giue credite to a few words which you haue vsed, having heretofore heard so much, or that you sweare the contrary to *Carlis*?

Vndoubtedly, it were a very easie conquest, that she should shew her selfe vanquished for so small a fight. But (said I) before I am beloued of her, if it be needfull that I tel her, what I haue done to *Carlis*, when should this be by your aduice? Truely (answered *Hermante*) you little know what belongs to Loue: you must learne, *Hylas*, that when one sayes to a shephearde, I loue you, especially when they make some demonstratiōn, she doth not so easily beleue it; for that it is the custome of shepherds well bred, to haue it of courtesie, and it seemeth their Sexe, for the weake-nesse of it, binds men to serue and honour them. And on the contrary, vpon the least shew of mislike which one giues them, they quickly thinke they are hated; because loues are naturall, but ennemities are not so: and they that goe against nature, it must be on a resolute designe: whereas they that follow that way, seeme to do by custome. Therefore, *Hylas*, I tel you, that you shall more easily make *Carlis* beleue you hate her, vpon the least euill will you shew her, then you can perswade *Stilliane* you loue her. And because you may see she hath on her heart that you loue *Carlis*, beleue me, that that which you haue to doe of most necessity, is to giue her knowledge that you no more loue this *Carlis*: which you must do by some action, known not onely to *Carlis*, but to *Stilliane*, and many others.

To be short (faire shepheardeſſe) he knew ſo wel to turne me on euery ſide, that at laſt I wriſt to the poore *Carlis* this letter :

The Letter of *Hylas* to *Carlis*.

I write not at this booke (*Carlis*) to tell you that I loue you, for you haue beleued it but too well; but to affiſe you that I loue you no more; I know certamly you will be amazd at this declaration, ſince you haue alwayes loued me almoſt beyond my deſire. But that which drawes me from you, is, I muſt confeſſe, your miſfortune, that will no longer continue to you the pleaſure of our amity, or rather, my good fortune, which will haue me no longer ſtay at ſo poore a thing. And to the end you may not complaine of me, I bid you farewel, and give you leaue to take it as you thinkē good: for you are to haue no more hope in me.

By fortune, when ſhee received this Letter, ſhe was in very good company; and *Stilliane* her ſelue was there, which ſo much miſlikerd this action, that there was none in all that troupe that blaſmed mee more. Which *Carlis* vnderſtanding, I pray you, ſayd ſhe to her, binde me for euer, and make him an anſwer. For my part (ſayd *Stilliane*) I ſhalbe a good ſecretary; and then taking paper and inke in the preſence of all the reſt, wrote thus to me in the name of *Carlis*.

The anſwer of *Carlis* to *Hylas*:

*Hylas*, thy arrogancy hath beene ſuch, that thou art perſwaded thou art beloved of mee; and the knowledge which I haue of thy humour, and my will, which haue alwayes ſtarred, are ſuch that they haue kept mee from louing thee, ſo that all the loue which I haue borne thee, hath beene onely in thy opinion, and ſuch was my unhappynesse, and thy good fortune: and heorein there is nothing of certaintie, but that indeed when thou thoughtest thou were beloved of me, thou were deceiued. I ſwear unto thee, *Hylas*, by all the merites which thou thinkest thou haſt, and which are not in thee, which are a greater number than thofe that diſable me from being worthy of thee:

The aduantage which I pretend in all this, is to be exempted hereaſter from thy impoſturiesties, and not to be utterly unthankfull for the pleaſure thou haſt done me in this; I cannot wſh better for thee, nor for my ſelue, but that the hea-thenes would make thee alioyes hold on this reſolution to my conſentment, as they haue giuen thee the will to reiect me for my impoſturiesties. In the meane time, like content; and if thou haſt asmuch as I, being freed from ſo combersome a burden, beleeue me, *Hylas*, it ſhall not be ſmall.

I muſt not lie: the reading of this letter touched me a little, for I knew well in my conſcience, I had done wrong to this ſhepheardeſſe; but the new affection which *Stilliane* had bred in me, ſuffered me not to ſtay long; and at laſt, howſoever it was, I caſt the fault on her. For, ſayd I, in my ſelue, If ſhe be not ſo faire nor ſo louely as *Stilliane*, is it I that am guilty? Let her complayne to them which haue made her of leſſe perfeſſion: And for my part, what can I contribute, but to be ſorry, and bewayle with her her povertie? But this ought not to hinder me from adoring and deſiring the riches of another. With ſuch reaſons I endeouored to caſh fit to me the compassion which Loue had made in me. And thinking I had no more to do than to receiue *Stilliane*, who by this time, mee thought, was wholly mine; I deſired *Hermane* to carry to her a letter in my behalfe: and withall, I let him ſee the Letter I wriſt to *Carlis*, that ſhe ſhould no more doubt her. He that truely was my friend in every point that concerned *Carlis*, made not dainty; and taking a fit time, when ſhee was alone in her lodging, as he preſented to her my Letters, hee ſayd ſmiling to her: Faire *Stilliane*, if the fire burne the foole that comes too neere it; if the Sunne dazzle the blinde that dares looke full on it; and if the ſword giue death to him that receiuſt it into his heart: you muſt not thinkie it ſtrange, if the miſerable *Hylas* comming too neere you, is burned; if daſting to behold you, he be daſzed; and, if receiuing the fatal ſtroke of your eyes, he feele the mortall wound in his heart. He would haue gone on, but ſhe all impatienc interrupted him: Ceafe, *Hermane*, you labour in vaine, neither *Hylas* hath worth enough, nor you perſwaiſt ſufficient, to giue me the v.ill to change my conteinment for his: Nor wiſh I my ſelue ſo much euill, nor ſo much good to *Hylas*, that I will conſent to mine owne unhappynesse, by beleeuing your words. It ſuffiſes me, *Hermane*, that the humour of *Hylas* is knowne to mee at anothers cost, without mine owne triall: And it ſhould be enough to you, that *Carlis* is weakely deſeuied, though you ſerue not as an iſtrument for the ruine of ſome other. If you loue *Hylas*, I loue *Stilliane* much more; and if you will giue him the counſell of a friend, couſell him as I couſell her, that is, that ſhee never loue *Hylas*: ſay to him likewiſe, that he never loue *Stilliane*. And if hee will not beleeue you, affiſe your ſelue, to his conuſion, hee ſhall employ his time in vayne: and for the letter which you preſent me, I will make no diſſiculty to take it, hauiing ſo good deſences againſt his weapons, that I ſcare not a whit the blowes. At this word vnfolding my letter, ſhe read it aloude, it was at laſt but an aſſurance of my affection by the Conge which I had giuen to *Carlis* for her ſake, and a right humble ſupplication, that ſhe

she would be pleased to loue me. She laughed, after she had read it; and turning to *Hermante*, asked him if he were willing she should make an answer. And he answering that he desired it passionately, she willed him to haue a little patience, and she would go write. It was thus :

The answer of *Stiliane* to *Hylas*:

**H**ylas, see how weakely founed your desaignes are, you would shew in consideration of *Carlis*, I shold loue you; and there is nothing that pronokes me more to hate you, than the memory which I haue of *Carlis*. You say, you do loue me. If a more creduble person than you should tell me so, it may be I might beleue him: for I know well I deserve it. But I that never lied, assure you, that I loue you not at all, and therefore doubt not of it: so (would I seeme to haue small iudgements, so loue an humours so contemptible). If you finde these words somewhat too rude, remember, *Hylas*, I am combrayned, to the end you may not perswade your selfe, that you are beloned of me. *Carlis* is witness to me of the condition of *Hylas*, and *Hylas* shalbe of mine, if at least he will at any time say trus. If this answer please you, give thankes to the prayer of *Hermante*: if it displease, remember, you accuse none but your selfe.

*Hermante* had not seene this Letter, when he deliuered it me, and yet he had an opinion there was much coldnesse in it, yet did not hee thinke shee should haue made it so strange, neyther was he so much astonied as my selfe: for I stooode like a man bereaued of his wits, letting the Letter fall on the ground; and after, being come to my selfe, I pulled downe my hat ouer mine eares, cast mine eyes downe on the earth, crossed mine armes ouer my brest, and a great pace, without speaking, began to walke about the chamber. *Hermante* stood immouable in the middest, not so much as casting his eyes towards me. We stayed some time in this manner, not speaking; at last, in an instant striking one hand against the other, and making a leape in the middest of the chamber: At her peril, said I aloude: let her seeke who will loue her, that she may know if there want in *Carmaine* shepheardesses more faire than she; and who wil be wel pleased that *Hylas* would serue them? And then turning to him; O what a foole is *Stiliane*, said I, if shee thinke I will loue by force? and I shall haue but little courage, if I euer trouble my selfe for her; and why thinkes shee her selfe better than another? It is true; she deserues one should suffer some paine for her. I assure my selfe, *Hermante*, she resolued it while you talked with her; and that could not be, without making at least her eyes narrow, without

without biting her lip, and without rubbing one hand on another, to make them white. I scoufe at her fancies, and her selfe too, if shee thinke I take more care for her, than I doe for the greatest stranger in *Gaule*. She knowes not how to reproch me but with my *Carlis*. True it is I loue her, and in despite of her, I will loue her still; and I make no question, but she shall soone enough finde her want of wisedome, but she must never hope that *Hylas* can loue her. I speake such like words: at which I saw *Hermante* change colour; but I was then ignorant of the cause: since, I haue iudged it was for the feare he had, that I might come againe into the good graces of his Mistris. Yet made he no other shew, but that he strained himselfe to laugh, and told mee it would make them much amazed, when they should see that change, if I tooke that resolution, as readily would I execute it: and in that disceine I went to finde out *Carlis*, of whom I asked a thousand pardons for the Letter which I had written to her, assuring her, that it was not want, but transport of affection. She that was angry with me, as one may well think, after she had heard me quietly, at last, answered me thus: *Hylas*, if the assurances you make to me of your good will be true, I am satisfied; if they be false, thinke not that euer you can remoue the amity which for euer you haue broken, for your humour is very dangerous. She would haue layd on, when *Stiliane*, to shew her the Letter I had written to her, coming to visit her, interrupted vs, when she saw me by *Carlis*. Wake I, or dreame I, (sayd she) all astonied? Is this *Hylas* that I see, or is it some fancy? *Carlis* wel pleased with this meeting, It is *Hylas* indeede (companion) sayd she, deceiue not your selfe: and if it please you to come neere, you shall heare the sweete words, with which he cries me mercy; and how he vnsayes all that which he had written to me, submitting himselfe to such punishment as shall please mee. His chasticement (answered *Stiliane*) ought to be no other than to make him continue the affection he beares me. To you (said *Carlis*) so farre is it, that hee sware when you entred in, that hee loued none but mee. And since when (added *Stiliane*) I know well, at the least, that I haue a good writing that *Hermante* an howre since brought me in his behalfe: and, that you may not doubt of that I say, reade this paper, and you shall see if I lie. O God, what became of me at these words? I sweare vnto you (faire shepheardesse) that I was not able to open my mouth for my defence. And that which ruined me for euer, was, that by mis-hap many other shepheardesses came in at the same time, to whom they told this tale, so much to my disaduantage, that I could not possibly tarry there any longer, but without speaking a word vnto them, I came to tell *Hermante*.

my misadventure, who had like to haue dyed with laughter, as indeed the matter deserued. This bruite so spred ouer all *Carmagne*, that I durst not talke to any one shepheardesse, that cast it not in my teeth, whereat I concei'd such shime, that I resolued to goc out of the Ile for some time. You may see, if whe I was young, I tooke such thought to be called inconstant, I ought not at this houre to give backe a step. See what it is (sayd *Paris*) one must be an apprentice before he be a master. It is true (answered *Hylas*) and the worst is, wee must often pay for our apprenticeship. But to com: to our discourse, being no longer able to endure the ordinary warre which euery one made on me, the most secretly I could possibly, I gaue order for my busynesse, and referred the whole care to *Hermane*; and after I put my selfe into a great vessell that lanched out with many others. I had then no other purpose, but to trauell and passe away the tyme, grieuing no more for *Carlis* nor *Stilliane*, than if I had never seene them: for, I had so lost their remembrance, when I lost their sight, that I had not the least sorrow. But see how hard it is to crosse the natural disposition! I had no sooner set my foote into the Barke, but I sawe a new subiect of Loue.

There was among many other passengers, an old woman which went to *Lyons*, to render her vowes in the Temple of *Venus*, which shée had made for her sonne, and carried with her her daughter in law for the same cause; and who with good cause might beare the name of faire, for she was no lesse then *Stilliane*, and much more then *Carlis*: her name was *Aymee*, and could not reach above 18. or 20. yeeres, and though shée was of *Carmagne*, yet shēe knew me not, because her husband being ielous (as ordinarily old men are, that haue yong and faire wiues) and her mother in law suspiciois, held her so short, that she never came into any assembly. At the instant that I saw her, she pleased me, and what purpose soever I had to the contrary, I must loue her; but I then foresaw well, I should find some paine, being to deceiue the stepmother, and the daughter in law. Yet not to yeld to the difficulty, I resolu'd to employ all my wits; and iudging that I w:is to beginne my enterprise by the mother (for shée kept me from claiming neere my enemy) I thought nothing fitter then to make my selfe known to her: and that could not be, for that being of one place, no ancient amity of our family, or some former alliance, would make easie the meane to grow familiar with her; but the occasion afterwards taught mee what I had to do; I was not deceived in this opinion: for as soone as I told her who I was, and that I had fained some bad reason to cloake that I went about, which she tooke for good, and that I had assu-

red her, that that which made mee discouer my selfe to her, was but to desire her freely to make vse of me. My sonne (answered shée) I do not wonder that you should shew such good will towards me, for your father loued me so well, that you should much degenerate, if you had not some sparkes of that affection. Ah my child, thou art the sonne of an honest, and the most louing man that was in all *Carmagne*: and speaking these words, she tooke me by the head, and holding me to her brest, and sometimes kissing my forehead; and her kisses made me remember the harths that yet retaine a gentle heate after the fire is out: for my father should haue married her, and it may bee, he had done her too much seruice for her reputation, as I vnderstood afterward: but I, that little cared for such kindnesse, but as they might be profitable for my purpose, fayning to receiue them with much obligation, thanked her for the loue she had borne my father, beseeching her to turne that good will towards the sonne; and that since the heauens had made mee heire to the rest of his goods, shée would not dis-inherit me of that which I esteemed most of, which was, the honor of her good graces; and that for my part, I would succeed in the seruice which my father had vowed to her, as to the best of all his fortunes. To bee short (faire shepheardesse) I knew how to flatter my old woman; so that shēe loued nothing more then mee: and contrary to her custome, to gratifie me, she commanded her daughter in law to loue me. Oh how well had she bene aduised, if she had followed her counsell! but I never found any thing so cold in all her actions: so that though I were with her all the day, yet had I not the hardinesse to make my purpose appeare by my words, till we came neere to *Avignion*; for *Stilliane* had made me lose much of that opinion which I had of my selfe. But besides this, shēe was alwayes at the feete of the old woman, who intartained me with the times passed. It fell out, that this company with which we went, as I haue told you, and many marchants assembled together, made a faire, to traffique in the Iland neere *Avignion*; and for as much as we that were not vsed to such voyages, found our selues benummed with sitting so long, while the boatemen were about their busynesse, wee set foote on land to walke about; and among others, the mother of *Aymee* was of the company. As soone as my shepheardesse was in the Ile, she began to runne along the riuier, and to play with the other wenches which were come forth of the boate of that company, and I thrust my selfe among them, to haue the meane to take time for my purpose, while the old woman was walking with other women of her age. And by hap *Aymee* being somewhat separated from her companions, gathering floures that grew by the waterside,

side, I aduanced my selfe, and tooke her by the arme: and after wee had gone some while without speech, at last, as comming from a sound sleep, I sayd vnto her, I should be ashamed (faire shepherdesse) to be so long mure so neere you, hauing so good cause to speake to you, if I had not more to hold my peace, and if my silence did not proceed from thence, whence to hold your peace, nor what you may haue to speake; and lesse, what words or silences you meane. Ah, faire shephearde (sayd I) the affection which consumes me with a secret fire, giues mee such occasion to shew my hurt, that hardly can I hold my peace; and on the other side, that affection makes me feare so to offend her whom I loue, in declaring it to her, that I dare not speake: so that the affection which ought to put words into my mouth, is that which denies mee them when I am neere you. Me, sayd she, presently? Think you well, *Hylas*, of what you say? Yes: I say, before I durst vtter it. If I thought these words were true, I will speake to you in another sort. If you doubt (sayd I) that these words be true, cast your eyes on your perfection, and you shall be fully assured. And then with a thousand oathes, I told her all that I had in my heart. Shee without being moued, answered me very coldly, *Hylas*, accuse not that which is in me, for your owne follies: for I know well to remedy it, so that you shall haue no cause: as for the rest, since the loue which my mother beares you, nor the condition wherein I am, cannot turne you from your me; and that I will auoide all manner occasions for you, to continue that you shall know I am such as I ought to be, you see how coldly I speake to you: it is not for that I feele not sencibly enough your indiscretion, but to let you know, that passion transports me not, but that reason only makes me speake thus, that if I see that this meane will nothing preuaile to alter your dessine, I will after run to some more extreme. These words deliuered with such coldnesse, touched me more to the quicke, then I can tell you: yet could not this withdraw mee: for I knew well, that the first skirmishes are ordinarily maintained in this fashion. But by chance, when *Aymee* seeing me without words, and so astonied, turned away without saying more, there was one of her companions, that seeing me so mated, came towards me; and blowing her nose, passed by twice or thrice with her hand before her eyes, and afterwards began to run, as if shee had allured mee to run after her. At the first, I was so amazed with the blow, I made as though I heeded it not: but when shee came back the second time,

I fell on running after her: and shee, after shee had somewhat run about her companions, started from them; and when shee was a little from them, faining to bee out of breath, lay downe behind a thicke bush. I that at first ran without any dessine, seeing her on the ground, and in a place where shee might not bee seene, seeming desirous to bee revenged for the paine shee had put mee to, began to clap her: whereto shee made a small resistance, but so, that she shewed this priuacy displeased her not, especially for that seeming to defend her, she discouered purposelly, as I thinke, to make her white skin seeme whiter by much, then one would iudge by her face. At last being risen vp, she sayd to mee, I did not thinke, *Hylas*, you had bene so rude a gainester, otherwise I would not haue meddled with you. If this displease you (sayd I) I craue pardon: but if it be not so, I was neuer in my life better payd for my indiscretion then now. How meane you that, sayd shee? I meane, said I, faire *Floriant*e, that I neuer saw fairer then that I spied eene now. See, said shee, what a lier you are! and at this word strooke me gently on the cheeke, and ran backe to her companions. This *Floriant*e was the daughter of an honest knight, that then was sicke, and kept neere the shore of *Arar*: and shee hearing of her fathers sickenesse, went to seeke him out, hauing stayed somewhat with one of her sisters, who was married in *Arles*: her face was not very faire, for shee was somewhat browne: but shee had such conceits, and was of so liuely an humor, that I must tell you, this meeting made me lose the will I had to *Aymee*, and that so quickly, that I felt little displeasure in leauing her; so that the contentment in finding this, cleared me of all griefe. I then forsooke *Aymee*, me thought, and addicted my selfe wholly vnto *Floriant*e: I may say me thought; for it was not true altogether, seeing that often when I saw her, I tooke pleasure to talke with her, though the affection which I bare the other, drew me with a little more violence: but indeed when I considered sometime what I sayd, I found, that whereas I was wont to loue but one, I did now serue two. It is true, that this was with no great paine: for when I was neere *Floriant*e, I neuer remembred *Aymee*; and when I was neer *Aymee*, *Floriant*e had no place in my memory. And ther was nothing so much tormented me, as when I was far from them both: for I was sorry for them both together. Now, gentle *Paris*, this entertainment lasted with me to *Vienna*; but being by chance at our lodging (for almost every night we went ashore, and specially when we passed by any good townes) lo, there comes a shepherdesse to intreat the master of the boate where I was, to let her haue a place, as farre as *Lyons*, because her husband being wounded by some enemies, had sent vnto her to seeke him out, The master

ster, who was courteous, received her willingly, & so the next morning she placed her selfe in the boate with vs. Shee was faire, but somodeft and discreet, that she was to be no lesse commended for her vertue: otherwise so sad and full of melancholy, that she moued pitty from all the company. And because I haue alwayes had much compassion on the afflicted, I had it infinitely ouer this, & endeuored to comfort her the best I could: whereat *Floriante* was not contented, what countenance souer she set on it, nor *Aimes* neither: for conceiue(gentle *Paris*) that though a woman dissemble, yet shee cannot choose but feele the losse of a louer; for that it seemeth to be a wrong to her beauty; and beauty being the thing that this Sexe most esteemes, is the most sensible part in her. Yet I that with my compassion beganne to mingle a little loue, not seeming to looke on those two wenches, I held on talke with her; and among other things, to the end our discourse might not fayle, and to haue the greater knowledge of her, I intreated her to tell me the cause of her sorrow. She then full of courtesie, began to speake thus:

The compassion which you haue of my paine, bindes me (courteous stranger) to give you more satisfaction than that you demaund; and you would thinke it a great fault, if I refused so small a thing. But I beseech you to consider withall, the state wherein I am, and to excuse my discourse, if I abridge it as much as I can. Know then (shepheard) that I was borne about the bankes of *Loyre*, where I was as charily brought vp to the age of fifteene yeeres, as one of my sort might be. My name is *Cloris*, and my father is called *Leonce*, the brother of *Geresban*, into whose hands I was deliuered, after the death of my father and my mother, being of the age I told you, and from that time I beganne to feele the blowes of Fortune; for my vncle hauing more care of his owne children than of me, thought himselfe ouer-layd with my charge. All the comfort I had, was from his wife called *Collire*, for she loued me, and prouided for what she could possibly, without her husbands knowledge. But the heauens would afflict mee in all: for when *Filander* the brother of *Collire* was slaine, she tooke such a grieve, that none could perswade her to suruiue him; so that within few dayes after, she dyed, and I abode with her two daughters, who were so young, that I had little contentment to be with them. It fell out, that a shepheard of the prouince of *Vienna*, named *Rosidor*, came to visit the Temple of *Hercules*, that stands on the shire of *Fran*, on the top of a rocke that rises in the midst of the mountaines, much aboue them all that are there-about. On that day there were together a great company of vs young shepheardesses: For it was a solemne day for that

for that place. I should vse but needlesse words, to tell you the speech we had together, and the fashion wherewith he shewed me his loue. So it was, that from that day he gaue himselfe to me so, that hee never made shew of contradicting it. He was young and goodly: for his wealth, he had much more than I might hope for; for the rest, his spirit so like that which appeared outwardly in his body, and there was a perfect agreement. His suite lasted foure yeeres, and I cannot say, that in all that time, he either did, or thought any thing wherewith he acquainted me not, and asked my aduice.

This extreme submissiōn so long continued, made mee most certaine of his loue; and his merits, which then had not a little bound mee to loue him, haue since that time wonne me in such a fashion, that I may say with truth, there was nothing in the world better beloued, then *Rosidor* was of *Cloris*, with which hee thought himselfe so strongly tyed to me, that he increased his affection, if it could haue beeene increased. We liued so, more then a yeere, with all the delight that so perfect a loue might bring to two Louers.

At last, the heauens seemed willing to make vs intirly contented, & suffered, that al the difficulties which impeached our mariage, were remoued. Behold vs now as happy as mortals might be! for wee were led into the Temple, the voyce of *Hymen*, *Hymene*, sounding on all sides. To be shre, being returned to our lodging, nothing might bee heard, but instruments of reioycing; nothing scene but dances and songs; euen then as mischiefe wold, we were separated by one of the most vnlucky occasions that might befall me. We were then at *Vienna*, where are the most part of the *Rosidor* possessions. It fell out, that some forlorne young men of the villages without *Lyoas*, on that side where our Druides went to lay the Guy, where they had vsed it in the forrests of *Mars*, called *Ayries*, meant to commit some disorder: my husband not able to brooke it, after hee had gently admonished them, impeached them for executing it: whereat they were so enraged, that thinking the greatest offence they could doe to *Rosidor*, was to hurt me; there was one of them about to throw a vyle of inke at my face: but seeing it comming, I turned my head aside, so that I was not touched but on my necke, as (laid sh: stooping downe) you may yet see the markes plaine. My husband, that saw my brest full of ynke and blood, thinking I had beeene grieuously wounded; and besides, conceiuing this outrage to be so great, that taking his sword into his hand, he strucke it thorow the body of him that gaue the blow, and then thrusting among the others, with the helpe of his friends, hee draue them out of his house.

Judge,

Judge, shepheard, if I were troubled: for I thought I was worse hurt then indeede I was, and saw my husband besmeared with the blood of him whom he slew, as also of a wound which he had on his shoulder. But when this first fray was in part passed, and by that the wound was dressed, and he apparelléd, the Justice came to seize on him, and carried him away with such violence, that they would not suffer mee to bid him farewell: but my affection more strong then their defence, made me way at last to him; and casting my selfe on his necke, clasped so fast about, that it was as much as they could doe to put me off. He on the other side, when hee saw me in this case, desiring rather to dye then to be separated from me, vsed all the violence which a great courage and an extreme loue was a ble to worke, which was such, that all wounded as hee was, hee got himselfe out of their hands, and went out of the Towne.

This defence kept him from being a prisoner, but it made his cause the worse with the Judge, who in the mean time sent out threatnings and Proclamations: during all which, his greatest displeasure was, that hee could not be with me; and because that desire pressed him sore, hee disgiued himselfe, and came to me one euening, and passed all the night with me. God knowes what my contentment was, but yet my feare was as great: for I knew that they which pursued him, vnderstanding the loue which was betweene vs, did all they could to surprize him; and it fell out as I alwaies feared: for at last he was found, and brought into Lyons, where presently I followed him, and to good purpose for him, for that the Judges whom at all hours I sollicited, tooke such pitty on me, that they shewed him fauour: and so, notwithstanding all the pursuit of the aduersaries, hee was set at liberty. If I found much sorrow in this accident, and paine when I saw him, beleue, courteous shepheard, that I had no lesse satisfaction, to see him out of danger, and acquitted from all that had passed. But because the displeasure which he had received in the prison, had made him sick, he was enforced to stay some dayes at Lyons: and I being alwaies about him, to giue him the best comfort I could; at last, being past the danger, he prayed me to set things in order at home, that we might entertaine our friends with that mirth that hee desired, for the good successe of his affaires: and behold, these dissolute fellowes, who had beene the cause of all our paine, seeing they could haue no other remedy, resolued to kill him in his bed: and being entered into his lodging, gaue him 2. or 3. stabs with a ponyard, & leuing him for dead, fled away. Alas! courteous shepheard, iudge what I ought to bee, and in what repose was my soule like to be, that in truth is touched with the most sensible

sible accident that could befall me.

So ended Cloris, hauing her face couered with teares, which seemed so many pearles that rowled downe her faire bosome. Now, gentle shepheard, that that I will tell you, is a new head-spring of Loue. The affection which I saw in this shepheardesse, - touched mee with so much compassion, that though her face had not beene able to haue wondre my loue, yet the pitty struck me so to the quick, that I must confess, that *Carlis, Stillano, Aymee, nor Floriante*, neuer tied me with a stronger chain then this desolate *Cloris*: Which was not, for that I loued not the others, but I had yet besides their place this voyde in my soule. Behold mee then resolued into *Cloris* as well as into the others, but I knew well it was to no purpose to speake to her, while *Rosidor* were either not dead, or not healed; for the paine wherein she was, possest her altogether. Wee came in this sort to *Lyons*, where presently euery one parted. It is true, that the new affection which I bare to *Cloris*, made mee accompany her to her lodgинг, where especially I visited *Rosidor*, to haue some acquaintance with him, judging it best so to beginne, thereby to come to the good graces of his wife. Shethat thought him worse hurt then she found it (for they alwaies make the euil greater then it is, and the apprehension much encreaseth the accident which they doubt) changed her countenance and behaviour, when she found him vp, and walking about his chamber. But, see what befall me! the sadness which *Cloris* had in the boar, was (as I tolde you) the cause of my affection: and when being neere *Rosidor*, I saw her joyful and content, look how the compassion had made this loue to grow, so also her ioyfulness and contentment caused it to dye: proouing well as then, that every euill ought to be cued by the contrary. I entred then a slave and captiue into that lodgинг, and I came out a freeman, and master of my selfe. But considering this accident, I endeououred to remember *Aymee* and *Floriante*, and presently wished to finde them at their lodgинг; and turning on all hands, at last I met them by fortune together.

A good meeting: the next day was the great Feast of *Venus*, and because, according to custome, the day before the solemnity, the young women sing in the Temple, the Hymnes which are made in the honour of the Goddess; and they watch there vntill midnight: I heard them resolute with the mother of *Aymee*, to passe the night as the others, that shee might the better performe her vow. *Floriante* at the secret request of *Aymee*, promised to doe so too. And because they stayed there a great liberty, I had a designe, without any spech of it, to goe in likewise, fayning to be a wench, when it should be darke: but knowing that the *Druides* were

were themselues at the gate, when it waxed darke, I purposed to hide my selfe some good while before. And indeede, beeing got into a corner little frequented, and most dark, I tarried there till nine or ten of the clock in the night. Thē the Tēple was shut vp, and there were no more men but my selfe, vnlesse there were some that were as curious as I: and by that time the Hymnes had long continued, I came out of my lurking place. And because the Temple was great, and there was no light but that which the tapers lighted on the Altar, might giue all about, I easily set my selfe among the wenches, without their knowledge: and as I was searching with mine eyes for that part where *Aymee* might bee, I saw a little candle brought to a young wench, who rising vp, went with it to the Altar, and after di some ceremonies: she beganne to sing certaine couplets, to which at the end all the company answered. I know not whether it were for that the light was dimme (for sometimes they will helpe themselves by hiding the imperfection of the painting) or that indeed she were faire: yet so it was, that as I saw her, I loued her. Let them now tell me that say that loue comes frō the eyes of the partie beloued, that canont be: for shee could not see me; besides that, shee turned not her eyes to-wards me; and hardly could I behold her so well, that I might know her another time: and that was the cause that I thrust forward: by curiositē I crept gently among those shepheardesses that were next her. But by mis-hap, beeing (with greater danger) come hard by her, shee ended her Hymne, and sent backe the taper where it was wont to bee: so that the place was so darke, that hardly (though I might touch her) could I see her.

Notwithstanding, the hope that she or some other neere her, might beginne againe to sing, I stayed there a while. But I saw to the contrary, that the taper was carried into the other Quire, and presently after, one of those that were there, beganne to sing, as my new and vpknowne mistresse had done. The difference that I noted, whether in voyce, or face, was great; for she had nothing that came neere her whom I beganne to loue: which was the cause, that beeing no longer able to command my curiositē, I went to a Dame that was somewhat fatre off, and counterfeiting the best I could, I asked what she was that sung before the last. You must be a stranger (said she) if you know her not. It may be, I know her (answered I) if I heard her name. Who knowes her not (said shee) by her face, demands her name in vaine; yet to free you of your paine, know, she is called *Cyrene*, one of the fairest maidis that dwell on the banks of *A-rra*, and so held in all this country; so that if you know her not, you must

be of another world. Till then I had so well counterfeited my voyce, that as the night deceived their eyes, so my voyce beguiled their eares: but at that time, not remembryng where I was, after many other thanks, I said to her, that if in exchange of the paine that she had taken, I could yeeld her any seruice, I did not thinke any man happier then I was.

How now (said she) who are you that talke in this fashion? And looking more heedefully on mee, shee knew by my habit what I was. Whereat, all astonied (said shee) How come you to haue the hardinesse to breake our lawes in this sort? Know you not, that you cannot pay this fault but with the losse of your life? I must tell you true, that though I knew there was chastiment ordained, yet I did not thinke it was such, whereat I was not a little astonied, yet alledging vnto her that I was a stranger, and knew not their Statutes, she tooke pitty on me, and said, that from the beginning she well perceiued it; and that I must know that it was impossible to obtaine pardon for this fault, for that the law was so rigorous, to free those watches from all the abuses which were wont to bee committed.

Notwithstanding, seeing that I came not of any wicked intent, shee would doe what she could to saue me. And therefore I was not to tarry till the mid-night bell rang, for then the Druides came to the gate with their torches, and looked them all in the face. That now the gate of the Temple was shut, but shee would attempt to open it: and then casting a veile ouer my head, which couered me to the hanches, she fittē my cloak so vnderneath it, that it could not be discerned in the night from a gown: and hauing thus dressed mee, shee told some of her neighbours, who came with her, that shee was not well: and they all went to require the key of the most ancient of the company; and wee going together towards the gate with a little waxe-candle onely, which her selfe bare, and which she almost couered with her hand, sayning, as if she would preserue it from the windē, we went out of the prease: and thus happily I escaped out of this danger through her courtesie: and the better to disguise me, & without all, for the desire I had to know to whom I was so much bound, I went with the other to her lodging.

But faire shepheardesse (sayd he) turning to *Diane*, this discourse is yet but halfe done, and me thinkes the Sunne is downe long since; will it not be fit to referre the rest to another time, when we haue more leisure? You haue reason sayd she (gentle shepheard) one must not spend all his goods at once: that which remaines, may cause vs make another pleasing journey; besides that *Paris*, who is to passe the riuere, cannot stay longer

without committing himselfe to the night. There is nothing (said he, faire shepheardesse) that can trouble mee, when I am neere you. I wish (answered she) there were any thing in me that might please you; for your worth and courtesie binde every one to yeeld you all sorts of seruice. *Paris* would haue replied, but *Hylas* interrupted him, when he said: I would to God, gentle *Paris*, that I were you, and that *Diane* were *Phillis*, and that she would vse this language to me. When that shall be (said *Paris*) I shall not be affaid to binde my selfe in part to her, to whom I am already so entirely. Your obligations (said *Diane*) are not of those that continue for euer, you can reuoke them when you will. If the one (answered he) bring losse, the others haue aduantage; and aske *Phillis* if she be not well eased, that I am of that humour: for if I were otherwise, she might make some account of my seruice. With the like discourse *Diane*, *Paris* &c meet before they went home; and *Paris* giuing the good night to *Diane*, and the rest of the company, tooke his way by the side of *Laigneu*.

But in the meane time *Licidas* was talking with *Phillis*; for the ielousie of *Siluander* had tormented him so, that he could not stay vntill the next morning, to tell her what was in his heart. He was so farre besides himselfe, that he tooke no heed who heard him; but thinking he had beene alone with her, after two or three great sighs he sayd; Is it possible, *Phillis*, that the heauens haue preserued my life so long, to feele thy vnsuffisance? The shepheardesse that looked for some other discourse, was so surprised, that she could not answer him. And the shepheard seeing her mute, and thinking it was to inuent some excuse, went on. You haue reason (faire shepheardesse) not to answer, for your eies say as much indeed, too plainly for my quie: And this silence tells and assures mee but too well of what I demand, and which I would not know. The shepheardesse that felte her selfe offended at these words, answered him in anger: Since mine eies speake so much for me, why will you haue mee answer in another fashion? And if my silence give you more knowledge of my small loue, than my actions passed, could of my good will, thinke you I can hope to give you better proofe by my words? But I wel see what it is, *Licidas*; you would make an honest retreit; you haue a designe elsewhere: and because you dare not, without giuing your fickleynesse some reasonable couerture; you faile to your selfe *Chimenes*, and build vp occasions of displeasure, whe. e you know well there is no cause, purposely to make me blamed for your fault. But, *Licidas*, bring foorth your reasons,

let

Let vs see what they are: or if you will not do it, giue backe, shepheard, without accusing me of the errour which you haue committed, and for which I shall doe long penance: but let it content you, to leave the mortall displeasure, but not the blame which you goe about to raise by your ordinary complaunts, wherewith you importune both heauen and earth.

The doubt which I haue had (replyed the shepheard) makes me complaine, but the assurance which you giue mee by your egre words, makes me die. And what is your feare (answered the shepheardesse?) Judge, replied he, if it may be small, since the complaints that proceed of it, importune both heauen and earth, as you cast in my teeth. If you will know it, I will tell you in few words. I feare that *Phillis* loueth not *Licidas*. Yet, shepheard (sayd *Phillis*) you may thinke I loue you not, and beare in your memory what I haue done for you, and for *Olympe*. Is it possible that the actions of my life passed, should returne before your eyes, when you conciuie these doubts? I know weil (answered the shepheard) that you haue loued me; and if I had beene in doubt, my payne should not be such as I now feele: but I feare that a wound, as great as it is, if it bring not death, may heale in time: so that which Loue hath made you do for me, is by this time so fully healed, that hardly the skarre onely may be seene. *Phillis* at these vvords turning her head aside, and her eyes with a playne gesture of discontentment: Since, shepheard, (said she) that vntill now by the offices and those testimonies of affection vvhich I haue done you, I perceiue, Phause got nothing, assure your selfe, that which I complain most of, is the paine, and time which I haue emploied about it.

*Licidas* knew vwell the shepheardesse was much moued, but himselfe was so overcome of ielousie, that he could not hold from ansyvering her. This anger (shepheardesse) giues me, but more knowldege of that vvhich I feared; for to trouble ones selfe for the speech vvhich an ouer-great affection hath sometime brought out, is it not a signe he vvas never touchd? *Phillis* hearing this reproach, came a little to her selfe, and turning her face to him; You see, *Licidas*, all dissembling displeases me in any, but I cannot beare it in them with whom I would liue. How now? hath *Licidas* the hardnesse to tell me, that he doubts the loue of his *Phillis*, and I not thinke hee dissembles? and vwhat testimony may be giuen, that I haue not giuen you? Shepheard, shepheard, beleue me, these words make me thinke hardly of the assurance which sometimes you haue giuen me of your affectiō. For it may be, you deceiue me in that which concerns you, as it seemes you deceiue your selfe in that that touches me; or as you think you are not beloued, being, indeed, more then the rest of the world:

so you imagine you loue, when indeed, you doe not. Shepheardesse (answered *Licidas*) if my affection were of that common sort, that haue more of apparence then of effect, I would condigne my selfe, when the violence of it did transport mee beyond reason, or when I demand of you great proofes of a great amity: but since it is not of that kinde, and that you know well it imbraces whatsoeuer is greater, know you not that extreme loue never goes without this feare, though it haue no cause? and for the little it hath, this feare changes it selfe into ialousie, and ialousie into paine, or rather into madnesse, wherein I finde my selfe.

While *Licidas* and *Phillis* talked thus, thinking their words were heard but of them two, and that they had no other witnesses, but the trees, *Silvander* (as I told you) lay like a skout, and lost not a word. *Laonice* on the other side, which had beene asleepe in that place, awaked at the beginning of their speech; and knowing them both, was infinitely glad to be found to so good purpose, assuring her selfe, that they would not part vntill they had acquainted her with much of their secrets, wherewith she hapned to serue her owne turne to their ruine. And it fell out as she hoped; for *Phillis* hearing *Licidas* say that he was jealous, demanded very loude, both of whom, and wherefore? Shepheardesse (answered the foolish *Licidas*) aske you me that question? Tell me, I pray you, whence proceeded that great coldnesse towards me of late, and from whence that familiarity which you haue in so strait a sort with *Silvander*, if the loue which you were wont to haire me, be not changed to his benefit? Ah Shepheardesse! you may well thinke, that my heart is without feeling of your blowes, since it hath so liuely felt those of your eyes. How long is it since you haue withdrawne your selfe from me, since you took no pleasure to talke with me; and that it seemed you send about for other company, that you may auoyde mine? Or, where is the care you were wont to haue of my busynesse, or the griefe which my stay from your presence brought you? You may remember how syueete the name of *Licidas* hath beene to you, and how often it slipped out of your mouth, for the abundance of your heart, when you meant to name some other. You may remember your selfe, I say, and haue at this time nothing in the same heart, and in the same mouth, but the name and affection of *Silvander*, with whom you liue in such a sort, that there is not so great a stranger in our Country but knowyes that you loue him. And thinke you it strange, that I which am the same *Licidas*, which I haue alwayes yet beene, and was not borne but onely for you *Phillis*, haue entred into some doubt of you?

The extreme displeasure of *Licidas* rayled so great abundance of words

words in his mouth, that *Phillis*, to interrupt him, could not get a time to answer him; for if she opened her mouth to beginne, he went on with the more vehemency, not considering that his complaing made it worse: and if there were any thing that might helpe him, it was onely her answer, which he would not heare; and on the contrary, not heeding, that this torrent of words tooke avay all leisure for the Shepheardesse to answere him, he judged that her silence proceeded of the sente of her being guilty; so that hee went on amplifying his ialousie at all motions, and all actions that he sawe her vse. Whereas she found her selfe so surprised, and so much discontented, that she thus letted, knew not with what words to beginne either to complayne of him, or to remoue him out of the opinion vvhether hee was, but the passion of the shepheard, vvhich was so extreme, that it gaue him not leisure to dreame of it; for though it were almost night, yet he saw her blush, or at least he thought he sawe her, vvhich was the conclusion of his impatience, holding that for certaine, vvhether as yet he had no cause to doubt. And so vwithout fuder stay, after he had called twice or thrice on the gods, as iust punisshers of the vnfaythfull, he ranne into the woods, vrvvilling to haire or carry for *Phillis*, vvhich went after him to discouer to him his errour, but it was in vaine. For he ranne so syuily, that she soone left him in the thicket of the trees. And in the meane time, *Laonice* well pleased that she had discouered this affection, and saw so good a beginning of her desseigne, vvhidrcvv, as was the custome, vvhith the Shepheardeesses her compaines; and *Silvander*, on the other side, resoluued vvhith himselfe, since

*Licidas* tooke such ialousie at so cheape a rate, to sell him  
it for the time to come at a dearer, making shew  
to loue *Phillis* in sadnesse, when  
he should see him  
neare her.

The end of the eight Booke.



## THE NINTH BOOKE OF Astrea and Celadon.

**L**eonide, in the meane tyme arriuied at the house of *Adamas*, and gaue him to vnderstand, that *Galathée* had infinit occasion to vse him; and vpon vrgent cause which shee would tel him by the way. That he might not disobey, he resolued to be gone, as soone as the moone would shine, which was some halfe howre before day. On this resolution, as soone as the lighc began to appeare, they set themselves on the way; and when they were come to the foote of the little hill, hauing no more then one plaine to bring them to the Palace of *Isouer*, the Nymph at the request of her vncle, began her speech in this sort :

### The History of *Galathée* and *Lindamor*.

**M**Y father (for so shee called him) bee not moued, I beseech you, to heare that which I haue to say to you, and when you haue occasion, remember that the same loue caused this, which at some other time hath driven you to the like or more strange accidents. I durst not speake to you of it, if I had not a commission, namely, if I had not bene commanded: but *Galathée*, whom this busynesse concernes, is willing, since shee hath chosen you as the Phisicion for this sicknesse, that you should know both the breeding, and the proceeding; yet hath shee enioyned me to draw some words from you, that you will never speake of it. The Druide, which well knew what respect hee was to beare to his Lady (for so hee esteemed her) answered that hee had wisedome enough to conceale that, which he knew might concerne *Galathée*; & that therein the promise was more then needed. Vpon this assurance (continued *Leonide*) I will attempt to tel you, what you are to know. It is now a long tyme, since *Polemas* became

came to be in loue with *Galathée*: to tell you how it grew, were vnproufable: so it was, that he loued her, so that in earnest one might call him amorous. This affection passed on so far, that *Galathée* her selfe could not be ignorant of it, so much it wanted, that in particular, shee made it diuers times appeare, that his service was not displeasing to her, which tied him so fast, that nothing since could euer withhold him; and without doubt, *Galathée* had some good occasion to fauour *Polemas*, for he was a man that merited much: for his race, you know hee is of the ancient stocke of *Suri-en*, that in nobility giues not place to that of *Galathée*: as for his person, he is very louely, hauing both a face and fashion able to win loue: aboue all hee hath great knowledge, yet ashamed of it before the wifest. But why go I about to tell you these things? Your father knows them better then I. So it was, that these good conditions made him so commendable, that *Galathée* vouchsafed to fauour him more then any other in the court of *Amasis*: yet it was with that discretion, that no man noted it. Now *Polemas* hauing the wind so fauorable, liued with that contentment to himselfe, as a man founded vpon hopes might. But this inconstant Loue, or rather this inconstant Fortune, which delights in change, as in her nourishment, was willing that *Polemas*, as well as the rest of the world, should feele what the stripes are, that come from her hand: you may remember that it is somewhat since *Amasis* permitted *Clidaman* to bestow vs on his seruants: from this occasion, as from a swarne, haue issued so many loues, that besides that the court was pestered with them, all the country feeles them.

Now among others, by chance *Lindamor* was giuen to *Galathée*, hee hath much worth, yet she receiued him so coldly, as the ceremony of that feast would suffer. But he that before, it may bee, had some such intention, which he durst not make shew of, beyond the bounds of his discretion, was well pleased, that this subiect presented it selfe so luckily, to vnllock those deßines, which loue had made him conceale, and to giue birth, vnder the veile of that fiction, to most true passions. If *Polemas* felte the beginning of this new loue, the progresse of it was troublesome to him, for that the beginning was couered with the shaddow of courtesie, and the example of all the other Nymphs; so that though *Galathée* entertained him with that apperancy of delight, yet in reason that might not offend him, because shee was tied to it by the law, which was common; but when this suite continued, and more then that, when passing the limits of courtesie, he saw that it was in good earnest, then hee felte the effects which ielousie workes in the soule that truly loues. *Galathée*, for her part

little thought, or at least belueued not, it was so far gone, but the occasions, as thredes sowed together, draw the one to the other, carried him so far, that *Polemas* may be in some sort excused, if he would suffer himselfe to be wounded with so sharpe a blade; and if ielouſie could do more then the assurance which his seruices might giue him. *Lindamor* was gentle, & there was nothing which you could wish in a person welborn, where-with he was not furnished; courteous among the Ladies, braue among the warriours, full of valour, and courage, as any that hath beene in our court these many yeeres. He was about 25. yeeres of age, without ſeeing the effects which loue is vſed to worke in harts of that age, not for that out of nature he could not ſerue Ladies, or that hee wanted courage to hazard any one; but because he was alwayes buſied in exerciſes, which drove out idlenesse, he had not giuen leaſure to his affections to fixe their roots in his ſoule, for from the time he was able to beare armes, thrust forward with that generous iſtinct, that carries noble couraſes to the moſt dangerous enterpriſe, he let paſſe no occaſion of warre wherein he gaue not wiſneſſe of what he was. Afterward being returned to ſee *Clidaman* to perform duty to him to whō he was obliged, at the ſame time he gaue himſelfe to two, to *Clidaman*, as to his Lord, and to *Galathee*, as to his Lady, and to them both without receiuing diſgrace.

But the courteſie of young *Clidaman*, and the meriſts of *Galathee* had too great power ouer thoſe Louers, to be drawn fro their ſeruice. Behold then (as I tell you) *Lindamor* become amorous, but ſo, that his affection could no longer be hidden with the vaile of courteſie. *Polemas*, as he that had iſteſt, found it out ſoone enough: yet though they were friends, would he make no ſhew of it, but to the contrary, kept it cloſe to himſelfe: hee laboured nothing more, then to get more assurance of this Loue, to the end he might ruine him by all the tricks he could, as he tried afterward. And because ſince the returne of *Lindamor*, he had (as I told you) made profeſſion of friendſhip to him, hee thought fit to continue it. About this time, *Clidaman* beganne to delight in Tourneys and Tiltiſgs, wherein he profited well (as they ſayd) for a beginner. But aboue all, *Lindamor* bare away the glory of the goodliest and gentleſt; wherat *Polemas* was ſo vexed, that he could not diſemblle his ill will, and he thought that iſ he made a match with him, he might carry away the greater glory, for that being older, and of longer abode in Court, he was alwaies in al the deſignes of his Riuall: but *Lindamor*, that ſuſpected not the occaſions that made him do ſo, went on freely, and that made his actions more pleaſing, which *Polemas* did not, who had a ſecret purpoſe where he muſt vſe ſome cunning,

cunning, ſo that he ſerved but for a ſhew. And eſpecially, the laſt day of the Bacchanals, when the young *Clidaman* made a Tourney, to maintaine the beautey of *Silnie*, *Guymantes* and *Lindamor* did as muſch as men might, but among all, *Lindamor* got that grace and happieneſſe, that iſ *Galathee* had not iudged it, yet loue had giuen ſentence againſt *Polemas*.

The Nymph, that then beganne to haue eyes as well for other men, as till then ſhee had for none but *Polemas*, could not containe from ſpeaking muſch to the good of *Lindamor*. And ſee how Loue mocks and ſports with the wiſeſonne of Louers! That which with ſuch care and craft *Polemas* went about, ſeeking to aduaunce himſelfe aboue *Lindamor*, hurts himſelfe the more, and makes him almoſt his iſterior: for every one comparing their actions together, found ſuch diſference, that it had bin better for him either not to haue diſtled him, or to haue bin declared his enemy at once. It was that very euening that *Lindamor* thrust forward by his good Angell, (I thinke, for my part, there be good dayes, and unhappy dayes) auowed himſelfe, in earnest, ſeruant to the faire *Galathee*; but the occaſion was alſo as good as he could wiſh: for, dancing a dance which the Frankes haue lately brought out of *Germany*, where one goes to take away her whom he likes, led on by loue, but rather ſpurred to it (as I thinke) by destiny, he tooke away *Galathee* from *Polemas*, who more atteſtive to his diſcourse then to the dance, tooke little heede, and was at that time reproaching the Nymph for the new breeding loue which hee ſoreſaw of *Lindamor*. Shee, who till then neuer thought him to bee in earnest, offendeth at his diſcourse, tooke his words in ſo ill part, that ſhee told him what words *Lindamor* had vſed, which were ſo muſch the more pleaſing, for that ſhe thought ſhee was thereby reuenged of him for his ſuſpition.

That which makes me ſpeakē thus, is, for that there is none that may know more then I, who may ſeeme to bee deſtined to heare of all theſe Loues; for as ſoon as we were withdrawne, and that *Galathee* was in bed, ſhe willed me to ſtand at the beds head, and hold the light, while ſhe read the diſpatches that came to her, and ſpecially thoſe of importance. That night ſhe cauſed the Nymphs to leaue her alone: and when they were all gone, ſhe commanded me to locke the doore, then made me ſit at the beds feete, and after ſhe had ſmiled awhile, ſhee ſaid, You cannot choose but laugh, *Leonide*, at the gracious accident that beſtell me at the daunce. You know it is ſomewhile ſince *Polemas* had a minde to ſerue me, for I concealed it not from you; and for as muſch as me thought he carried himſelfe to-wards me with that honour and reſpect (I neede not lye) his ſeruice was not

not vnpleasing to me, and received it with a better liking; then from any others in the Court, not that hee had yet any loue of my part: I will not say but that it may bee (as Loue alwaies flatters his patients with hope) he imagined that which he desired: but the truth is, that I neuer yet iudged, that he had neuer any thing able to make mee loue him. I know not what may fall out hereafter, and I referre my selfe to that that shall bee, but for that which is yet, there is no likelihood.

Now *Polemas* seeing that I heard what he would say, and that I harkened to it with patience, being thereby made the more hardy, not marking that I liued with others in the same sort, is gone so far, that he knows not what he does, he is so much beside himselfe. And indeede, this night he daunced with me some while, at the first so chiding, that I was constrained (without thinking of it) to aske him what the matter was. Shall it not displease you (said he) if I discouer it? No, answered I, for I neuer aske for the thing I would not know. Vpon this assurance he went forward.

I must tell you, Madame, that it is not in my power, not to be offended at the actions which I see ordinarily before mine eyes, and which touch me so to the quicke, that if I had as great assurance, as I haue suspicion, I know not if there were any thing able to keep me aliue. In sadness I was yet so simple, that I knew not what he would say; yet thinking his loue had tied mee to some sort of curiositie, I aske what actions those were that touched him so to the quicke. Then pawsing a little, and looing stedfastly on me, he sayd: Is it possible, Madame, that without fictiō on you aske me this? And why (answered I) would you not haue me do so? Because (added he) it is you whom all these things concerne, and it is from you that they proceed; and then seeing that I speake not a word, (for I knew not what he would say) he beganne to goe on, and told mee, I would not haue you dissemble in this busynesse, without blushing. For resolutely I will enforce my selfe to tell you, though the discourse cost me my life. You know (Madame) with what affection, since the heauens made me yours, I haue indeuoured to giue proofe that I was truly the seruant of the faire *Galashee*: you can tell, if euē vntill now you haue knowne any action of mine tended to other end than your seruice. If all my desaignes haue not taken that poynt for their marke; and if all my de-sires arising from thence, haue not shewed themselues satisfied and contented, I assure my selfe, that if my fortune deny me to deserue any thing more in seruynge you, yet at the least she will not refuse me this satisfactiō on from you, that you will confesse, that truly I am yours, and no others

but yours. Now if this be so, iudge what griefe I ought to haue, after so much time spent (not to say, lost) when (if there be any reason in Loue, I ought with greater reason to haue expected some reward of my affection: I see another fauoured in my place, and an inheritor (as I may say) of my goods before my death. Excuse mee for speaking in this manner: the extreme passion drawes these iust complaints out of my soule, which though it would, yet can it not longer be silent, seeing he that triumphs ouer me, hath got the victory, rather by destiny than merit. It is *Lindamor*, of whom I speake; *Lindamor*, whose seruice is the more happily received of you, by that he is to giue me place, both in affection and faithfullenesse. My griefe is not to see him more happy than he durst wish for: but indeed to see him so at my cost. Excuse me, Madame, I beseech you, or rather accuse the greatnessse of my affection, if I complayne, since it is but a more manifeste proofe of the power which you haue ouer your most humble servant.

And that which makes me speake so, is, that I note you vse towards him the same words, and the same fashion of treaty that you did towards me, at the first breeding of your goodwill, and when you permitted me to speake to you, and that I might say to my selfe, you knew mine affection.

This putteth mee so farre besides my selfe, with such violence, that hardly can I command ouer these furious extremities which you put me to, and which the offence bringeth to my soule, and can produce no effects of discretion. He would haue sayd more, but the passion wherein he was, so suddenly tooke from him his voyce, that it was impossible for him to hold on longer. If I were offendel at his words, you may iudge, for they were both rash and full of vanity, and not to be borne with: yet that I might not giue knowledge of this brabble to them that haue eyes, but to spie the actions of others, I was compelled to make him an answer a little lesse eager than I had done, had I beeene else-where: and I sayd, *Polemas*, that which I am, and that which you are, will not suffer me to doubt that you are my seruant, so long as you stay in the house of my mother, and performe the seruice of my brother; but I cannot wonder enough at the follies which you mixe in your discourse, in talking of heritage, and of your goods. In that which is from my loue, I know not by what right you pretend yours.

My intention, *Polemas*, hath bene to loue you, and esteeme you as your verue deserves, and you are not to imagine beyond that. And for that you talk of *Lindamor*, get out of that error, for if I vse him as I haue done you,

you, you are to thinke I will doe so to all those that heereafter shall merit it, without other designe greater then to loue and esteeme him that deserves it, in what subiect soeuer it be found. And how, madame, said I then interrupting her, thinke you this a gentle answer? I know not how you could haue honestly sayd more: for indeed, it must be confessed hee is arrogant: but yet it may not be denied, but this arrogancy is bred in him, vpon some shew of reason. Of reason (answered the Nymph prese ntly?) What reason can he alledge? Many, Madame, replied I, but to conceale them all but one, I may say to you, that truely you haue allowed him to serue in a more peculiar manner then any other. That is (said Galathee) for that he pleased me more then the rest of my brothers seruants. I confess it, madame, said I, and seeing himselfe so farre in your good graces, how could he hope for lesse then to bee beloued of you? Hee had heard talke of so many examples of loue betweene vnequall persons, that hee could not flatter himselfe lesse, then to hope the same for himselfe, which he heard spoke of others, & I remember, that vpon that subiect he made verses which he sung before you: it is somewhat since you commanded him to conceale his affection: they were these:

## A SONNET.

VV *Herefore if you loue me,  
Feare you the world shoulde know?  
Then honest Amity,  
What can make fairer shew?*

*The spirits vertuous,  
Is each to other ties,  
And far from humane hearts,  
Expellet vanities.*

*But if your choice be such,  
That you displeased are,  
And that you thinke me vile,  
Worthy such a share:*

*Disdainefull beauty, that  
Lieft bid from all mens eyes,  
And never madst appear,  
Thus in thee gilty lies:*

*Yet Dido did not scorne  
A wanderer by sea.  
Paris, a shepheard yong,  
Wonne loue from Oenone,*

*Diane found some griefe,  
For her Endimion.  
Loue not regards the state,  
Or pompe of any one.*

*The sheepooke with the mace  
Of Kings he equall makes:  
And in the purest Loue,  
All his contentment takes.*

Then Adams asked her: And how, Leonide? it seemes by the words of Galathee, that she despised Polemas, and by these verses there is no man but will iudge she loued him, and that only he could not brooke with patience, that she should dissemble! Father (replied Leonide) it is true that she loued him, and she had giuen him that proof, that if he gaue credit to it, hee was not so arrogant, but that one might very well haue thought him to be of small vnderstanding, if he did not beleue it; and though she would dissemble with me, yet I know she had drawne him by shewes and hopes of good will, whereof the earnest was not so small as the first, but that many others haue bene deceiued, and I know not, considering what assurances were giuen, that any would thinke shee would lose them, and gaiesay her going forward, but he deserued this chastisement for his vngiftfulness which he vied to a Nymph, whose deceiued affectiō cryes vengeance, so that loue at last gaue an eare: for without faining he is the most deceittull, the most vngratefull, and most vnworthy to be beloued for this misprisall, of any vnder heauen, and deserves not to be pittied, if hee now feele the griefe which other haue suffered for him.

Adams seeing her so much moued against Polemas, demaunded who the Nymph was that hee deceiued, and laid, that shee was some of her friends, since she tooke the offence so to the quicke. Then shee perceiued that she had yeelded too much to her passion, and that vnawares shee had made knowne that which shee had kept so long secret; yet as shee had a quicke spirit, and that would not lie long in her fault, she couered by her dissi-

dissimulation, this error so well, that *Adamas* then tooke no great heed to it. And how, my daughter (sayd *Adamas*) know you not, that men liue with a purpose to ouercome and finish all that they undertake, and that the loue which they make shew of to other women, is but to make the way easie? You may see, *Leonide*, that all loue is for the desire of the thing that is wanting; and the desire being satisfied, there is no more desire; if there be no more desire, there is no more loue: therefore you may behold, that they which will be long loued, are they that giue least satisfaction to the desires of their louers. But (added *Leonide*) she whereof I speake, is one of my particular friends, and I know, she never treated with *Polemas*, but with as great coldnesse as she could. That likewise, replied *Adamas*, makes the desire to be lost; for desire is nourished with hope and fauours.

Now look how the match of the Lampe goes out when the oyle failes, so desire dies, when the nourishment of it is put out: therefore it is, that we see so many loues are changed, some for too many, othersome for too few fauours. But let vs returne to that you sayd to *Galathee*; what was that that she answered? If *Polemas* (answering *Leonide*) had had (said she to me) as much iudgement to measure himselfe, as he had rashnesse to dare to loue me, he would haue taken these fauours as from my courtesie, and not from my loue. But (continued *Galathee*) this is nothing to the worth of the accident which befell at that time; for I had scarcely answered *Polemas*, what you haue heard, but *Lindamor* following the course of the daunce, was come to snatch or robbe, and vwith that dexterity, that *Polemas* coul'd not auoyd it, and by that meanes not answer me, but with his eyes; but certainly, with a looke so frowning, that I know not how I held from laughter. As for *Lindamor*, whether he took heed to it, or perciuing it, would not let it appear, so it was, that presently after he spake to me in that sort, it had beene enough to haue made the poore *Polemas* madde, if he had heard it. Madame, sayd he to me, is it possible that all things should goe so quite contrary, and that iesting should turne to so true earnest, and the presages likewise which your eyes speake of to me, when I behold them? *Lindamor*, said I to him, so you may be punished as you deserued, if iesting you meet with earnest. This punishment, answered he, is so welcome to me, that I should beshrew my selfe, if I did not loue and cherish it, as the greatest happynesse that might befall mee. What meane you by that (sayd I) for it may bee wee speake of diuers things? I meane (sayd hee) that in this course of the dance, I haue stolne away you, and in the truth of loue, you haue stolne from mee both soute and

and heart. Then blushing a little, I answered him in choler, How now, *Lindamor*, what discourse is this? remember you what I am, and what you are? I do so, Madam (sayd he) and that is it that makes me speake so vnto you, for are you not my Lady, and am not I your servant? Yes (answered I) but not as you take it, for you ought to serue mee with respect, and not with loue: or if there be any affection, it should grow out of your duty. He presently replied, Madam, if I serue you not with respect, neuer was diuinity honored by a mortall man: but whether this respect bee the father, or childe of my affection, it concernes you but little, for I am resolued, whatsoeuer you are to mee, to serue you, to loue you, and to adore you, and thinke not herein, that the duty whereto *Clidaman* by the law of the game hath subiect vs, is the cause, well it may be the countre: but to conclude, your merits, your perfections, or to say true, my destiny giues me to you, and thereto I assent: for I must acknowledge, that what man soeuer sees you, and loues you not, deserues not the name of a man. These words were deliuered with such a vehemency, that he made it appearre to me, that he truly told me what was in his soule; & behold, I pray you, this pleasant encounter. I neuer heeded this affection, thinking that al he did, was in sport, & should haue neuer perceiued it, but for the ielousie of *Polemas*: but since I haue alwayes had an eye to *Lindamor*, and I should not lie, I haue found him as well capable of loue as ielousie: so that it seemes, that the other hath whetted the knife, wherewith hee would cut the thred of the small loue I bear him: for I know not how *Polemas* hath euer since so displeased mee in all his actions, that I could hardly endure him to bee neere me the rest of that night. On the contrary, all that *Lindamor* did, came so kindly to mee, that I wonder I marked it no sooner. I know not whether *Polemas*, by reason of his being crossed, haue changed his behaviour, or whether the euill opinion which I haue conceiued of him, haue altered my eyes when I beheld him: yet so it is, that either mine eyes see not as they were wont, or *Polemas* is no more the man hee was wont to be.

I must not lie to you, when *Galathee* spake in this sort against him, I was no whit sorry because of his ingratitude: on the contrary, the more to hurt him, I sayd, I do not wonder, Madam, that *Lindamor* is more welcome to you, then *Polemas*: for the qualities and perfections of them both are not equal; every one that sees them, will giue the same iudgement that you do of them. It is true, that heerein I fore-see a great hurly burly, first, betweene them, and after betweene you and *Polemas*. And why (sayd *Galathee*?) Are you of opinion he hath any power over my actions,

actions or of *Lindamors*. Not for that (said I) Madam, but I knew the humour of *Polemas* so well, that he will leaue nothing vnattempted, and wil remoue heauen and earth, to recouer the happinesse that he thinkes he hath lost; and for it he will commit these follies which cannot be hidden, but to those that will not see them, and so shall you haue displeasure, and *Lindamor* be offended: and God graunt it fall not out worse. No such thing, *Leonide*, answered she, if *Lindamor* loue me, he will do as I commaund him; if he do not loue me, he will not care what *Polemas* doth: and as for him, if he passe the bounds of reason, I knovv hovv to reforme him: leau that labour to me, for I can prouide well enough for that. At this word she commaunded mee to draw the curtaine, and let her rest, if at least these new desseignes would suffer her. But at the breaking vp of the daunce, *Lindamor*, who had noted what countenance *Polemas* had made when he tooke *Galathée* from him, had a conceit that he loued her. Notwithstanding, hauing never perceiued any thing by his actions pas- sed, he would aske him the question, resolued, that if he found him in loue, he would indeuour to diuert himselfe, for that he thought himselfe somewhat bound to it, for the loue he made shew of, which hee thought to be vnsatiated; and so going to him, desired he mght haue a word with him in priuate.

*Polemas*, who vised al maner of cunning that a Courtier was capable of, paynted his face with a fained shew of goodwill, and said, What is it that *Lindamor* is pleased to commaund of me? I never vsed commiundement (said *Lindamor*) where my prayer onely may take place; and at this time I neede neither of them, but onely as a friend, demaund a thing of you which our friendship bindes you to tell me. What may it be? (replied *Polemas*) since our friendship so bindes me, you are to thinke that I will answer you with the same freedome that you desire to know. This it is (replied *Lindamor*) that I haue some while serued *Galathée*, as I was tied by the ordinance of *Clidaman*, at last, I am constrainyd so to do by that of Loue. For it is true, that after I had long time serued her, by the dispo- sing of that fortune that gaue mee to her, her merits haue since so wonne me, that my will hath ratified that gift with so great affection, that to draw backe, would be as much want of courage, as it is now arrogancie to say, that I dare loue her. Yet the friendship which is betwene you and me, hauing bee of a longer date, than this of Loue, giues mee re- solution enough to tell you, that if you loue her, and haue any pretensi- on to her, I hope as yet to haue that pover of my selfe, that I can with- drayv, and giue proofe, that Loue is leſſe in me than Friendship, or at least,

leſt, the follies of the one shall giue place vnto the wisedome of the o- ther.

Tell mee then franklye that which you haue in your soule, to the end that neither your friendship, nor mine, may complayne of our actions. That which I say, is not to discouer the secrets of your intentions: since I lay open to you mine, you are not to be afraid that I should know yours: besides that, the lawes of friendship comnaund you, not to hide them from me; prouided, that not curiositie, but the desire of preseruing our goodwill, makes me demaund it of you. *Lindamor* spake to *Polemas* with the same freedome that a friend shoulde, poore and ignorant Louer, that thought he could finde it in loue! On the contrary, the dissembling *Polemas* answered him, *Lindamor*, this faire Nymph, of whom you speake, is worthy to be serued of all the world; but as for my selfe, I haue no pre- vention; yet this I will tell you, that as concerning loue, I am of opini- on, that every one, for his part, should do what he can. Then *Lindamor* repented that he had vsed a language so full of courtesie and respect, since he required it so ill. He resolved to doe his best to aduance himselfe into the good graces of the Nymph; and yet hee answered him, Since you haue no such dessigne, I am right glad, as of the thing most welconie to mee, for that to haue withdrawne my selfe, it would haue beeene a paine to me, little leſſe than death.

So farre off am I (added *Polemas*) from hauing any pretencion of loue, that I never looked on her, but with an eie of respect, such as we are all bound to giue her. For my part (replied *Lindamor*) I honour *Galathée* as my Lady; but I likevise loue her as a faire Lady: and me thinks, my fortune may ryme as high as it is permitted mine eyes to looke; and that I shal offend no diuinity by louing her. With such like discourses they parued, neyther of them well satisſed, yet somewhat differing, *Polemas* out oficklyſe, and *Lindamor*, for hauing found the vnfaitfulness of his friend. From that day they liued in a pleasant fashion, for they were or- dinarily together, and yet they concealed their dessignes. Yet not *Lindamor* in appearance, but in effect, hid himselfe in al thee propounded and purposed to do: and knowing well, that occasions passed, may not be re- called, he would not lose a moment of leisure, which he employed not to make his affection apparent to the Nymph. In which hee neyther lost his time, nor his payne; for shic liked so well of this goodwill, which hee made shew of, that if shic had not so much loue as he in her eyes, she had it at the leaſt in her heart. And because it is an hard matter to hide a great fire so well, but something will discouer it: their affections which beganne

beganneto burne in good earnest, were hardly to be concealed for all the wisedome they could vse.

This was the cause that *Galathée* resolued to speake with *Lindamor*, as seldome as she could, and to find some inuention for him to send his Letters, and to receiue their secrets; and for this purpose shew made a desseigne on *Fleurial*, nepphev to the Nurse of *Amasis*, and brother of hers, whose goodwill shew had long knowne, for that being Gardiner of those faire gardens of *Monbrison*, as his father during his life had beene, when they carried *Galathée* abroad, he tonke her often in his armes, and went vp and downe, gathering what floures shew would; and you know that these loues of infancy, being as it were sucking in with the milke, tare almost into nature: besides that, she knew well, that all countrey swaines are couetous; dealing bountifullly with him, shew wonne him entirely to her. And it fell out as she purposed, for one day being some distance remoued from vs, she called him to her, fayning to aske him the name of some flowres which she held in her hand; and after she had asked him a loude of them, somewhat abasing her voyce, she sayd to him, Come hither, *Fleurial*, doſt thou loue me well? Madame (answered he) I ſhould be the verieſt wretch liuing, if I loued you not aboue all the world beside. May I be assured (ſaid the Nymph) of what thou ſayſt? May I (replied he) neuer liue a moment, if I choose not rather to be wanting to heauen than to you. What, (answered *Galathée*) without any exception, were it in a thing that might diſplease *Amasis* or *Clidamor*? I care not then, ſayd *Fleurial*, whom I diſplease in ſeruing you: for I am to none but to you: and whosoeuer payes mee, yet it is of you that this benefit beſakes mee; and when this ſhall ceaſe to be: I alwayes had ſuch an affection to you, that euer ſince your childhood, I gaue my ſelfe entirely to you. But, Madame, whereto ſerue these words? I ſhall neuer be ſo happy to be able to giue prooſe of it. Then *Galathée* ſaid, Harken, *Fleurial*, if thou liue in this resolution, and thou wilt be ſecret, thou ſhalt be the happiest man (of thy condition) in all the world: and that which I haue done for thee heeretofore, is nothing to the valew of that which heereafter I will doe. But looke that you be ſecret, and remember, that if you be not, beſides that of a friend (as I am) I will henceforth become your mortall enemy; yet muſt you affiue your ſelfe, that it will cost you no leſſe then your life. Goe finde out *Lindamor*, and doe what he ſhall bid you, and beleeue thou, that I will conſider better than thou canſt hope for, for the ſervices which thou ſhalt doe for mee in this; and beware you haue not a tongue.

At this word *Galathée* came to ſeeke vs out, and laughing, ſaid, That *Fleurial* and ſhe had talked a good while of Loue, but, ſaid ſhe, it was loue of the garden, for that is the loue of the ſimple. *Fleurial*, for his part, after hee had turned ſome turnes about the garden, went forth ſomewhaſt troubled with this affaire; for he was not ſo ignorant, but hee knew well the danger into which he put himſelfe: whether with *Amasis*, if he ſhould diſcouer it, or with *Galathée*, if he ſhould not do as ſhe commanded him, thinking it was about loue: and hee had heard them ſay, that all the offences of Loue ſtrike to the heart. At laſt, the amity he bare to *Galathée*, and the deſire of gaine, made him reſolute, ſince hee had promiſed to per- forme his promiſe: and then he went to ſeeke out *Lindamor*, who expe- cted him; for the Nymph had auſſured him that ſhee would ſend him, and that onely he ſhould diſcret him what he was to doe.

As ſoon as *Lindamor* ſaw him, he made ſhew before others, not to know the cauſe, & asked him if he had any buſineſſe with him. To who he made anſwer aloud, that he came to beſetek him to preſent to *Amasis* his long ſeruices, and the ſimal means he had to be paide that which was due to him: and at laſt, ſpeaking ſomewhaſt lower, he told him the occaſion of his co- ming, & offered him his ſeruice at his pleaſure. *Lindamor* thanked him, & having ſhortly inſtructed him what he was to doe, he iudged the thing ſo eaſie, that he made no diſſiculty: from that time (as I told you) when *Lindamor* would write, *Fleurial* made ſhew to preſent ſome ſuite to the Nymph, and when ſhe made anſwer, ſhee returned it backe with ſuch an order as ſhee could obtaine from *Amasis*. And because ordinarily, theſe olde ſeruants haue alwayes ſome thing or other to aske, this man neuer wanted matter to exhibiſt at all times of ſome new requeſt, which often- times received an anſwer beyonc his hopes.

Now during this time, the loue which the Nymph had borne to *Po- & mas*, leſſened in ſuch ſort, that hardly could ſhee ſpeake to him without diſgrace, which he could not beare: and knowing well, that all this cold- neſſe proceeded of the loue of *Lindamor*, he ſuffered himſelfe to be tranſ- ported ſo farre, that not daring to ſpeake againſt *Galathée*, hee could not abſtaine from ſpeaking many things to the diſaduantage of *Lindamor*, and among other, that though he were an honest man, and accomplished, with many remarkable parts, yet the good opinion which he had of himſelfe, was not like theirs that know how to measure themſelues; and for prooſe of it, he had beene ſo proud as to raise his eyes to the loue of *Galathée*, and not onely to conceiue it in his ſoule, but to vaunt of it in ſpeech to him. A diſcourse, which at laſt came to the eares of *Galathée*, namely,

so farre passed, that almost all the Court knew it. The Nymph was so offended herewith, that she resolued to vse *Lindamor* so, that hereafter he should not haue occasion to publish his vanities: and that was the cause, that shortly after this bruit was extinct, for that she (who was in choler) pake no more to him, and that they that obserued his actions, finding no apparence of Loue, were constrained to beleue the contrary: and at that time was the sending away of Knights, which fell out fitly, and ayded her much, for that *Amasis* had sent him about a busynesse of importance to the banks of *Rhine*. But his departure could not bee so sudden, but hee found occasion to speake to *Galathée*, to know the cause of her change; and after he had spied out a time, the morning as shee went to the Temple with her mother, hee was so neare her, and so in the middest of vs, that hardly could *Amasis* perceiue him. As soone as shee saw him, shee would haue changed the place, but holding her by the garment, hee sayd, What is my offence? or what is your change? Shee answere, as shee went, Neither offence nor change, for I am alwayes *Galathée*, and you are alwayes *Lindamor*, who are too base a subiect to offend me. If these words touched him, his actions gaue witness; for though he were vpon his depariture, yet could he giue order to no other busynesse, but to search in himselfe wherein he had failed. At last, not finding himselfe guilty, hee wrote her a letter.

The letter of *Lindamor* to *Galathée*.

I tis not to complaine of my Lady, that I dare take vp my penne, but only to deplore the misfortune which make me so concerned of her, that at other times was not wont to vse me in this sort: I am the same man that haue serue you with all sort of respect and submision, and you are the same Lady that first was mine: since you received me for yours, I am become no lesse, nor you greater: if it be thus, why doe you not judge me worthy of the same entertainment? I haue called my soule to account for her actions: since it pleasest you, I will display them all before your eyes: for my p. rt, I cannot accuse any one of them, if you shall judge otherwise, when you haue heard them, it shall be no small consolation to the poore condemned, to know, at least, the cause of his punishment.

This letter was brought her as of custome by *Fleurial*, and so fitly, that though she would, yet durst shee not refuse it; and without lying, it was impossible that any other could haue playd this part better then he: for his request was so flouted with words of pity, and reverence, so well for-

ting to that which shee seemed to demand, that there was none but him selfe haue deceiued; and for thy part, if *Galathée* had not tolde me, I should neuer haue regarded it: but for that it was hard, or rather impossible, but the tender heart of the Nymph must discharge her selfe of it, to some trusty person, to whom shee might freely impart that which pressed her so sore; among the rest, shee chose out me as the most assured, as shee thought, and most affectionate. Now suddenly, as shee had received this paper, faining to haue forgot something in her cabinet, shee called me, and told the other Nymphs, that shee would come backe presently, and that they should attend her there. Shee went vp into her chamber, and then into her cabinet, without saying any thing to mee: I iudged shee had somewhat that troubled her, but I durst not aske her, for feare of troubling her: shee sat downe, and casting the request of *Fleurial* on the table, shee sayd, This beast *Fleurial* alwayes comes to molest me with the letters of *Lindamor*: I pray thee, *Loonide*, bid him bring me no more. I was somewhat astonied at this change: yet I knew well, that loue could not long last without brawles; and that these disputes are as bellowes, that do more kindle the coles: yet I forbare not to say to her, Since when, Madam, hath he done thus? Some good while (sayd she) and know you nothing of it? No truely, Madam (sayd I.) Then she with a little frowning brow, It is true (sayd she) that heretofore I haue liked it, but now hee hath abused my fauours, &c offended me by his rashnes. And what is this fault, replied I? The fault (added she) is not great, yet it displeaseth mee more, then if it were of importance. Thinke you what his vanity is, to make it knowne that he loues me, and that he hath told me so?

O Madam (sayd I) this cannot be true: his enemies haue intended it to vndo him, both with you & with *Amasis*. It is wel (replied she) but in the meane time, *Polemas* talkes of it every where; and is it possible any should know it, and that he only should be deafe at this bruite? but if he heare it, should not remedy it? And what remedy (answered I) would you hee should haue? What (sayd the Nymph) sword and blood. It may bee (sayd I) hee doth it with great reason: for I remember I haue heard it said, that that which touches vs in loue, is so subiect to slander, that the lesse light is giuen it, the better it is. See (sayd she) these good exhortes, at least he should haue demanded of me what my will was hee should do; herein he had done as he ought, and I should haue beeene satisfied. Haue you seene the letter (answered I) which he wrote you? No (said shee) and I will tell you more, I will neuer see them more, if it be possible, and will auoyde as much as I can, to speake to him. Then tooke I the paper that

*Fleurial* brought, and opening the letter, I read aloud that which I tolde you euuen now, and added at last, Well, Madame, ought not you to loue the thing is wholly yours? and not to bee so soone offended with him that hath not committed any fault? Then it is well (said she.) Is there any likelihood that he alone should not heare these bruits? But dissemble he as long as he will, at least I wil cōfōrt my selfe, that if he loue me, he shall truely pay the interest of the pleasure which he hath had in vanting of our loue; and if he loue me not, let him assure himselfe, that if I haue giuen him any subiect for the time passed, to conceiue such an opinion, I wil put him out of it hereafter, and giue him occasion to smother it, how great soever it hath beene. And to beginne, I pray you command *Fleurial* that he be not so hardy, to bring any thing from this arrogante. Madame (said I) I will doe what pleases you to command me, yet it shall be very necessary to consider ripely of this affaire, for you may doe your selfe much hurt, thinking to offend another. You know well, what manner of man *Fleurial* is, he hath no more spirit then will serue to keepe his garden: if you let him know this euill carriage betweene *Lindamor* and you, I am afraid, that out of pure feare he will discouer it to *Amasis*, or else runne away, & that which shall make him discouer it, shal be to excuse himselfe of mischiefe: For Gods sake, Madame, consider what displeasure this will bring: wil it not be better, without breaking forth, to devise some meanes to complaine to *Lindamor*? And if you will not doe it, I will, and I assure my selfe, he will satisfie you: or if he doe not, then shall you haue occasion to breake off all loue with him, telling him so much your selfe, without giuing *Fleurial* knowledge of it. How to speake to him I know not, said shee, and to heare him speake, my courage will not suffer mee, for I wish him much euill.

Seeing her to haue a heart so swolne with this offence, At the last, said I, you must write to him. Talke no more of that (said she:) hee is too proud, he hath too many of my letters already. At the last, not being able to get other thing at her hands, shee suffered mee to fold vp a piece of paper in fashion of a letter, and to put it in to the request of *Fleurial*, and to carry it to him: And this that he might not perceiue this dissencion. What the astonishment was of poore *Lindamor*, when he receiued this paper, it is hard to say to one that never prooued it. And that which afflicted him more, was, that hee must of necessity depart the next morning to goe his voyage, where the affaires of *Amasis* and *Clidamor* tied him to stay some long time. To deferre his departure, he could not; and to goe, was death.

At last hee resolved presently to write to her, yet a course rather to hazzard, then to hope for any good fortune. *Fleurial* did what hee could to present it speedily to *Galabee*, but he could not doe it, for that shee feeling this displeasure at her heart, was not able to bear this dis-vnion, but with such griefe, that shee was constrained to keepe her bed, out of which shee rose not many dayes. *Fleurial*, at last seeing *Lindamor* gone, tooke the hardinesse to seeke her in her chamber: and I must tell you true, because I wished ill to *Polomas*, I did what I could to piece vp this affection of *Lindamor*; and for this cause I gaue meanes for *Fleurial* to enter. If *Galabee* were surprised, judge you, for shee looked rather for any thing then that, yet shee was constrained to dissemble, and to take that which hee presented, which were but flowers in appearāce: I would be in the chamber, that I might be of the counsell, and to bring somewhat that might be to the contentement of poore *Lindamor*. And indeed I was not altogether unprofitable: for after *Fleurial* was gone, and that *Galabee* found her selfe alone, shee called me, and told me, shee thought to haue been exempted from the importunity of the letters of *Lindamor*, when hee had bene gone, but for ought shee saw, hee had nothing to be his warrant. I that would serue *Lindamor*, though hee knew nothing of it, knowing the Nymph to bee in an humor to talke of him, made it very cold, knowing well that if I contraried her at first, it was the way to lose all, and to affirme that which shee sayd, would serue the more to punish her: for though shee were not well satisfied toward him, yet loue as yet was the more strong, and in her selfe, shee was willing that I should take *Lindamors* part, not to giue me way, but to haue more occasion to speake of him, and put her choler out of her soule: so that having all these considerations before mine eyes, I held my peace, the first time shee spake to mee. Shee that would not haue this silence, added, But what thinke you, *Leonide*, of the arrogancy of this *Amasis* Madame (sayd I) I know not what to say, but if hee haue sayled, hee must do penance. But (sayd shee) what may I thinke of his rashnesse? why goes hee disgracing me with his tales? had hee no other fitter discourse then of me? and then, after shee had looked on the letter hee wrot, I haue somewhat else to do that hee continues to write to me: to this I answered nothing.

After shee had held her peace a while (shee sayd) And why, *Leonide*, answere you me not? haue I not reason to complaine? Madame (sayd I) is it your pleasure I should speake freely? You shall please mee, sayd shee. I must tell you then (continued I) that you haue reason in all, except it bee when you seeke for reason in loue; for you must know that hee that refers himselfe

*Fleurial* broughte, and opening the letter, I read aloud that which I tolde you euuen now, and added at last, Well, Madame, ought not you to loue the thing is wholly yours? and not to bee so soone offendred with him that hath not committed any fault? Then it is well (said she.) Is there any likelihood that he alone should not heare these bruits? But dissemble he as long as he will, at least I wil cōfōrt my selfe, that if he loue me, he shall truely pay the interest of the pleasure which he hath had in vanting of our loue; and if he loue me not, let him assure himselfe, that if I haue giuen him any subiect for the time passed, to conceiue such an opinion, I wil put him out of it hereafter, and giue him occasion to smother it, how great souer it hath beene. And to beginne, I pray you command *Fleurial* that he be not so hardy, to bring any thing from this arrogante. Madame (said I) I will doe what pleases you to command me, yet it shall be very necessary, to consider riely of this affaire, for you may doe your selfe much hurt, thinking to offend another. You know well, what manner of man *Fleurial* is, he hath no more spirit then will serue to keepe his garden: if you let him know this euill carriage betweene *Lindamor* and you, I am afraid, that out of pure feare he will discouer it to *Amasis*, or else runne away, & that which shall make him discouer it, shal be to excuse himselfe of mischefe: For Gods sake, Madame, consider what displeasure this will bring: wil it not be better, without breaking forth, to devise some meanes to complaine to *Lindamor*? And if you will not doe it, I will, and I assure my selfe, he will satisfie you: or if he doe not, then shall you haue occasion to breake off all loue with him, telling him so much your selfe, without giuing *Fleurial* knowledge of it. How to speake to him I know not, said she, and to heare him speake, my courage will not suffer mee, for I wish him much euill.

Seeing her to haue a heart so swolne with this offence, At the last, said I, you must write to him. Talke no more of that (said sh:) hee is too proud, he hath too many of my letters already. At the last, not being able to get other thing at her hands, shee suffered mee to fold vp a piece of paper in fashion of a letter, and to put it in to the request of *Fleurial*, and to carry it to him: And this that he might not perceiue this dissencion. What the astonishmēt was of poore *Lindamor*, when he receiued this paper, it is hard to say to one that never prooued it. And that which afflicted him more, was, that hee must of necessity depart the next morning to goe his voyage, where the affaires of *Amasis* and *Clidoman* tied him to stay some long time. To deferre his departure, he could not; and to goe, was death.

At last hee resolved presently to wreke to her, yet a course rather to hazzard, then to hope for any good fortune. *Fleurial* did what hee could to present it speedily to *Galathée*, but he could not doe it, for that shee feeling this displeasure at her heart, was not able to bear this dis-vnion, but with such griefe, that shee was constrained to keepe her bed, out of which shee rose not many dayes. *Fleurial*, at last seeing *Lindamor* gone, tooke the hardinesse to seeke her in her chamber: and I must tell you true, because I wished ill to *Polermas*, I did what I could to piecce vp this affection of *Lindamor*; and for this cause I gaue meanes for *Fleurial* to enter. If *Galathée* were surprised, judge you, for shee looked rather for any thing then that, yet shee was constrained to dissemble, and to take that which hee presented, which were but flowers in appearāce: I would be in the chamber, that I might be of the counsell, and to bring somewhat that might be to the contentement of poore *Lindamor*. And indeed I was not altogether unprofitable: for after *Fleurial* was gone, and that *Galathée* found her selfe alone, shee called me, and told me, shee thought to haue been exempted from the importunity of the letters of *Lindamor*, when hee had bene gone, but for ought shee saw, he had nothing to be his warrant. I that would serue *Lindamor*, though hee knew nothing of it, knowing the Nymph to bee in an humor to talke of him, made it very cold, knowing well that if I contraried her at first, it was the way to lose all, and to affirme that which shee sayd, would serue the more to punish her: for though shee were not well satisfied toward him, yet loue as yet was the more strong, and in her selfe, shee was willing that I should take *Lindamor* part, not to giue me way, but to haue more occasion to speake of him, and put her choler out of her soule: so that having all these considerations before mine eyes, I held my peace, the first time shee spake to mee. Shee that would not haue this silence, added, But what thinke you, *Leonide*, of the arrogancy of this *Amasis* Madame (sayd I) I know not what to say, but if hee haue sayled, he must do penance. But (sayd shee) what may I thinke of his rashnesse? why goes hee disgracing me with his tales? had hee no other fitter discourse then of me? and then, after shee had looked on the letter hee wrot, I haue somewhat else to do that he continues to write to me: to this I answered nothing.

After shee had held her peace a while (she sayd) And why, *Leonide*, answere you me not? haue I not reason to complaine? Madame (sayd I) is it your pleasure I should speake freely? You shall please mee, sayd shee. I must tell you then (continued I) that you haue reason in all, except it bee when you seeke for reason in loue; for you must know that hee that referrs himselfe

himself to the lawes of justice, puts the principall authority out of himself, which is to be subiect but to himselfe: so that I conclude, that if *Lindamor* haue failed in that he loues you, he is culpable, but if by the lawes of reason and prouidence, it is you that deserue chastisment, that will put loue that is free and commands others, vnder the seruitude of a superior. And why (sayd she) haue I not heard it sayd, that loue, to make it praise worthy, must be vertuous? If this be so, he must bee tied to the lawes of vertue. Loue, answered I, is a thing somewhat greater then this vertue, of which you speake, and therefore it giues it selfe lawes without the publishing of any other person: but since you command me to speake frankly, tell me, Madam, are not you more culpable then hee, both in that for which you accuse him, and in that which concernes loue? for if hee haue had the hardnesse to say he loued you, you are the cause, in that you haue sufferd him. Though it bee so, answered shee, yet by discretion he was bound to conceale it. Complaince you then (sayd I) of his discretion, and not of his loue? But hee hath more occasion to complaince of your loue, since vpon the first report at the first conceit that hath beeene giuen you, you haue chased from you the loue you bare him, without taxing him that he hath bene wanting in affection.

Excuse me, Madam, if I speake so frankly: you do the greatest wrong in the world to vse him in this sort: at least if you would condemne him to so great a punishment, it ought not to be without conuincing him, or at leastwise to make him blush at his errour. She stood for a while, before shee answered me; at last she sayd, Well, *Leonide*, the remedy shall be timely enough when hee returnes, not that I am resolute to loue him, nor to permit him to loue me, but to tell him wherein hee hath failed, and so I shall content you, and bind him from importuning mee more, if hee bee not as impudent as rash. It may be, Madam, you will deceiue your selfe, to think it will be time enough at his returne: if you knew what the violencies of loue are, you would not beleue that these delayes were like other affaers, at least looke on the letter. That is to no purpose (replied she) for by this time he is well gone: and with that word shee gaue it mee, and saw it was thus:

The letter of *Lindamor* to *Galathee*.

Somtimes loue, at this time the despaire of loue, hath put the pen into my hand, with a purpose, if it returne mee no assyngement, to change it into a sword, which promises me a full though a craggall healing. These blanke paper, which

you haue sent me for an answere, is a true testimony of my innocency, since it is as if it had sayd you haue found nothing to accuse me of, but it is also an assurance to me of your disdaine; for from whence can this silence proceed vntill it be from *the one* contentes mee in my selfe, the other makes mee despaire in you. If you haue any remembrance of my faithful service, for pity I demand of you, or life or death. I depart, she most desperate that ever had cause of despaire.

It was an effect of Loue which brought a change in the carriage of *Galathee*, for I sawe her much mollified; but this was no small prooffe of her lofty humour, not to giue knowledge of it, and not beeing able to commaund her countenance, which was become pale, shee so tyed her tonge, that she speake no word which might accuse her of relenting; but going out of her chamber, to walke in the garden, not speaking a word of the Letter: for the Sunne begaune to grow loue, and her disease, which was but trauaile of spirit, might finde more refreshing out of the house, than in the bed: so, after she was quickly made ready, shee went downe into the garden, and would haue none but me with her. By the way I asked if it pleased her to make an answer: and telling me no: Will you (Madam) that I do it? See (said she next) what would you write? That which you command me, sayd I. What you will (said she) so you speake not of me. You shall see (answered I) what I write. I haue nothing to doe with it (said she) I referre my selfe to you. With this leaue, while shee walked, I wrot in the same alley, in a paire of Tablets, an answer, such as I thought fittest, but shee that would not see it, would not haue the patience to let me make an end, without reading it while I wrot it.

The answer of *Leonide* to *Lindamor* for *Galathee*.

**D**raw from your euill the knowledge of your good; If you had not beeene belied, there wold never haue beeene sence of any thing: you may not know what your offence is, till you be beore presens, but hope in your affection, and in your returne.

She would not the Letter should be thus: but at last I preuailed aboue her courage, and gaue my Tablets to *Fleuriall*, with the key, commaunding him to deliuer them to the hands of *Lindamor* onely. And drawing aside, I opened my Tablets, and added these words, without the knowledge of *Galathee*:

## A Billet of Leonide to Lindamor.

I was desirous to have knowne when you were away : the pity of your euill made me tell you the occasion of your disaster. Polemas hath given one, that you loue Galathee, and you goe about bragging of it. A great courage, as here is, cannot suffer so great an offence without feeling. Let your wisedome direct you in those affayres with the discretion which hath alwayes gone with you, that for louing you, and taking pity of your euill, I may not haue, in exchange, matter to grieve for you, to whom I promise all ayde and fauour.

I sent this Billet, as I told you, to deceiue Galathee, and indeed I repented me of it shortly after, as I will tell you. It was about a moneth after Fleurial was gone, when behold, there comes a knight, armed at all piecces, an vñknowne Herald with him; and, to keepe all men from knowlidge of him he had his visor downe. By his port, euery one iudged of him as hee was indeede. And because at the towne-gate the Herald had demaunded to be conducted to *Amasis*, euery one, desirous to heare some newes, accompanied him. Being come vp to the Castle, the Guarde of the towne left him to them of the Gate-house. And after they had given notice to *Amasis*, they were brought before her, who had sent for *Clidaman*, to giue audience to thise strangers. The Herald, after the Knight had kissed the robe of *Amasis*, and the hand of her sonne, sayd thus with words halfe outlandish: Madam, this knight whom you see, being borne of the greatest of his countrey, hauing knowne, that in your Court every man of honour may demand reason of them that offend him, is come vp on this assurance, to cast himselfe at your feete, and to beseech you, that Justice which you never denied to any, may be allowed him in your presence, and before all these fayre Nymphs, to draw reason from him, who hath done him the iniury, by the meanes vusuall to persons so wronged. *Amasis*, after she had some while thought with her selfe, at last answred, that it is true, that this sort of defence of honour had alwayes beeene vsed in this Court: but she, being a woman, did never suffer them to come in armes, yet her sonne was of age to manage greater affaires than these, and she would referre her selfe to that he should do. *Clidaman*, without stayng for the Herald's replie, turning to *Amasis*, said: Madame, it is not onely to be serued and honored of all those that inhabit this Province, wherein the gods haue established you the Soueraigne Lady, and your Ancestours also : but much rather to punish them that are faulty, and to honour

honour those that deserue well; the best meanes of all is, by Armes, at the least, in those things that cannot otherwise be searched out; so that if you abolish out of your estate this most iust fashion of discouering the secret practices of the wicked, you giue way vnto licencious lewdnesse, that will never feare to doe euill, so that it may be performed in secret. Beside that, these strangers being the first, that in your time haue had recourse to you, haue some reason to complayne, to be the first refused. So that since you haue referred them to me, I will tell you (sayd he) turning him about towards the Herald, that this Knight may frankly and freely accuse whomsoeuer he will, for I promise him to assure himselfe of the field.

The Knight then set his knee to the ground, kissed his hand, by way of thankes, and made a signe to the Herald to hold on. Sir (sayd he) since you doe him this grace, I must tell you, he is heere in search for a Knight called *Polemas*, whom I desire may beshew me, that I may finishe what I haue vndertaken. *Polemas* hearing himselfe named, came forward, saying in a fashion losy enough, that he was the man whom he sought for. Then the vñknowne Knight presented to him a piece of armour; and the Herald sayd: This Knight would say, that he presents you this gage, promising that he wi'll be to morrow, by the Sunne rising, at the place that shall be appointed, to fight with you, to the vttermost, to proue on you, that you haue wickedly inuented that which you haue sayd against him. Herald, I receiue (sayd he) this gage; for though I know not thy Knight, yet wil I not leaue to be most assured to haue iustice on my side, as knowing well, that I never sayd any thing against the truth: and let the morrow be the day of triall. At this word the Knight, after he had saluted *Amasis* and all the Ladies, returned into a Tent, which hee caused to be spred neere the towne-gate. You may thinke that this put all the Court into diuers discourses: especially *Amasis* and *Clidaman*, who loued *Polemas* well, had much griefe to see him in this danger, yet their promise bound them to graunt the field. As for *Polemas*, he prepared himselfe as full of courage to the combatte, without hauing knowledge of his enemy. And for *Galathee*, that by this time had almost forgotten the offence that *Lindamor* had receiued from *Polemas*, (besides that, shee beleueed not that he knew his euill came from thence) shee never thought of *Lindamor*, nor I neither, who tooke him to be an hundred leagues from vs, and yet it was he, who hauing receiued my Letter, resolued to be revenged in this sort, and so vñknowne, came to present himselfe, as I told you. But to make short, for I am no great good warriour, and so I should (if I would)

would particularize this combate ) talke somwyng haſt improperly.

After long combate, they had both of them equall aduantage, and they were both so loaden with blowves, that the soundest of the two was as much certaine of his death, as of his life, their horses beganne to sinke vnder them; but they on the contrary, so fresh, as if they had not fought all that day, beganne to powre out their bloud, and to open wide gashes, with such cruelwy, that every body tooke pitty to see two persons of that valour to be so lost.

*Amasis* among others said to *Clidaman*, that it were fit to separate them: and there was none that might better doe it than *Galathée*. Shce tha: for her part was already touched within, and wayted but for this commandement, to effect it with a good heart, with three or four of vs came into the field. When she entred, the victory lay on *Lindamors* side, and *Polemas* was brought to euill termes, although the other were not much wounded, on whom, by chance, she lighted, and taking him by the skarfe, which tied his helmet, and which hung somewhat lowe behinde him, she pulled him with some stresse. He that felt himselfe touched, turnede rudely on that side, thinking he had bin betrayed, and with that furie, that the Nymph thinking to giue backe, lest she should be hurt, rode on her robe, and fell dovvne in the midst of the field. *Lindamor*, who kacys her, ranne presently to helpe her vp; but *Polemas*, without any regard to the Nymph, seeing this aduantage, when he was in despaire of the combate, tooke his syword in both his hands, and gaue him, behind on the head, two or three blowes, with such force, that he constrainyd him with one great wound to set one knee on the ground, from whence he rose so iince ised, for the discouteresie of his enemy, that afterwards, though *Galathée* requested him, he would not leauue off vntill he had layd him at his feete; where leaping on him, he dis-armyd his head, and being ready to giue him the last stroke, he heard the voice of his Lady, that said to him: Knight, I adiure you by her whom you loue best, to giue me this Knight. I wil (said he) Madame, ifhae will confesse he hath spoken fally of mee, and of he: by whom you adiure mee. *Polemas* being, to his owne thin-king, at the latt poynt of his life, with a loude voyce confessed what they would.

So *Lindamor* departed, after he had kissed the hand of his mistresse, who neuuer knew him though he speake to her, for the Helmet, and the feare wherein she was, kept her from marking his voyce. It is true, that passing by me, he said very softly, Faire *Leonide*, I am much bound vnto you, to conceale me to your selfe: thus you see the effect of your letters: & without

out longer stay, mounted on horse backe, and though he were sore wounded, yet galloped he away, vntill they lost the sight of him, vawilling to be knowne.

This trauell of his did him much hurt, and brought him to that extremitie, that being arriued at the house of one of *Florials* Aunts, where he resolued before to withdraw, if he were wounded, hee found himselfe so feble, that hee stayed more then three weekes before hee could recover himselfe. In the meane time, behold, *Galathée* returning in great choler against the vñknowne Knight, for that hee did not leauue the combate at the second time, seeming to be more offended in this refusall, then obliged, in that he gave him to her. And because *Polemas* held one of the first rankes, as you know, *Amasis* and *Clidaman*, with much sorrow, caused him to be carried out of the field, and looked vnto with such care, that in the end they began to haue hope of life in him.

Every one was very desirous to know who this vñknowne Knight was, the courage and valor of whom, had won him the fauor of many. *Galathée* onely was shie that conceiued an euill opinion; for this proud beauty remembred the offence, but forgot the courtesie. And because I was the party whom she trusted with her most secret thoughts, as soon as she saw me in priuate, Know you (said sh: ) this discouterous Knight, to whom Fortune, not valour, gaue the aduantage in this fight? I know (said I, *Madam*) this valiant Knight, &c. I know him to be as courteous as valiant. If he hath not shewed it (said she) in this action, otherwise he would not haue refused to leauue the combate when I requested him. *Madame*, answered I, you blame him for that, for which you are to esteeme him, since that, to giue you the honor which euery one owes to you, he was in danger of his life, and saw his bloud powre downe on the earth. If (said *Galathée*) there in *Polemas* did wrong, he had the aduantage shortly after, when notwithstanding any prayer I could make, hee would not giue ouer. And had he not reason (said I) to bee desirous to chastise this pride, for the small respect hee bare to you? And for my part, I finde, that in this, *Lindamor* hath done very well. How, (interrupted shce) was it *Lindamor* that fought? Indeede I was overtaken, for I named him before I thought it: but seeing it was done, I resolued to tell her, Yes, Madame, it is *Lindamor*, who felt himselfe offended at that which *Polemas* had spoke of him, and would make it apparent by Actnes. Shce stood as it shce were besides her selfe: and after shce had some while thought of this accident, shce said, Then is it *Lindamor* that hath done me this displeasure? Is it he that yecked me so small respect? Had he then so litle confide-

consideration, that he durst put my honour into the hazzard of Fortune, or of Armes? At this word shee pawsed out of extreme choler: And I, that in any case desired she should know he had done no wrong, answered, Is it possible, Madame, that you can complaine of *Lindamor*, without acknowledg the wrong you haue done to your selfe? What displeasure hath he done you, since in vanquishing *Polemas*, he hath vanquished your enemy? How, my enemy (said she?) Ah! *Lindamor* is much more: for if *Polemas* talked, *Lindamor* gaue him the subiect. O God (sayd I then) what is that I heare? *Lindamor* your enemy? that hath no soule but to adore you, and hath not a drop of blood which hee would not spend for your seruice: and he your friend, that by his forged discourses, hath endeououred by practices to wound your honour? But who knowes (said she) if it bee not true that *Lindamor*, thrust forward by his vsuall arrogancy, hath vsed such language? Well then, replied I, how much are you bound to *Lindamor*, that hee hath made your enemy confess that he invented it? Oh! Madame, pardon mee, if you please: but I cannot but herein accuse you of a great mistaking, that I may not say ingratitude. If hee hazzard his life to make it appeare that *Polemas* lyed, do you accuse him of inconsideration? And if he haue made the lyer confess it, will you taxe him of discourtesie? And if hee had not commited his right to Armes, how should the truth of this busynesse haue beene found? And if, when you commanded him the second i[n]ne, hee had left the battaile, *Polemas* had never confessed, that you or any other should haue heard. O poore *Lindamor*, how must I bewaile thy fortune? And what is it thou canst doe, when thy most notable seruices are offences and iniuries? But well, Madame, it may be, you shall not haue long time to vse these cruelties: for a most pittifull death may bring end to your mistakings and his punishment; and (it may be) euен now, when I speake, he is no more; and if it be so, the Nymph, *Galathos*, is the onely cau[e]. Why doe you accuse me, said she? Because ( replied I ) that when you would haue separated them, and in recouling, your knee touched the ground, hee would haue helped you vp: in the meane time that courteous *Polemas*, whom you commend so much, wounded him in two or three severall places, out of that aduantage, where I saw the blood make the ground red: but if hee dye for this, it is lesse cuill then that he receiues from you: for seeing himselfe mistaken, hauing done his endeouour, this (me thinks) is a displeasure to which no other can be equalled. But, Madame, may it please you to remember, that heretofore you haue sayd to me, in complaing of him, that to blot out these speeches of *Polemas*, he knew no other remedy; hee was to serue himselfe

himselfe of sword and blood. And now hee hath done that which you judged he should doe, and yet you finde it not well done.

If *Silene*, and some other Nymphs had not interrupted vs, before I had left off my discourse, I had well aswaged this great minde of the Nymph; but seeing so many persons, we changed our talke. And yet my words were not without effect, though shee would make no shew of it to me, but by a thousand passages I found the truth: for, from that day I resolued neuer to speake to her more of him, vntille she asked me some newes. She on the other side, looked that I should speake first, and so more then eight dayes passed without speech. But in the meane time, *Lindamor* was not without care to know both what was said of him in Court, and what *Galathos* thought of him. He sent *Fleurial* to me for this cause, and to giue me word in a letter. He did his message so well, that *Galathos* tooke no notice of it: his Billet was thus:

The Billet of *Lindamor*, to *Leonide*.

**M**adam, who doubts of my innocency, shall bee no lesse guilty against the truth: yet if the closed eyes see not the light, though without shadowe to shone on them, I may be suffered to doubt, that my Lady for my misery, hath her eyes shone against the brightness of my iustice, bind mee, by assuring her, that if the blood of my enemy cannot wash away the staine, with which he hath gone about to defile me, I wil voluntarily add thereto mine own, that I no otherwise preserue my life which is hers, but that her rigour shall make mee ready to render it.

I enquired particularly of *Fleurial*, how he fared, &c. if there were any that knew him: and I vnderstood that hee had lost much blood, and that much hindred his healing: but there was no danger: that to bee knowne, it could not bee, because the Herald was a Franke of the army of *Merone*, who kept about the banks of *Rhine* at that time; and they that attended him, were not suffered to go out of doores, and that his Aunt and Sister tooke him but for the knight that sought with *Polemas*, whose valour and liberality wonne them to serue him with that care, that they were not to doubt but he would be better; that hee had commanded him to come know of me, what the bruite was in the Court, and what he was to do. I answered him, that hee should carry to *Lindamor*, that all the Court was full of his valour, though he were vñknowne, that for the rest hee should looke to his healing, and that I, for my part, would bring what I could

to his contentment. Thus, I gave him mine answere, and told him the day before your departure, When *Galathée* comes into the garden, invent soone occasion to go to see your Aunt, and take leaue of her, for it is necessary for our bulines, that I speake with you againe. He failed not, and by fortune the next day, the Nymph being come toward euening into the garden, *Fleurial* came to make his reuERENCE, and would speake with her: but *Galathée*, that thought it was to give her letters from *Lindamor*, stood so confused, that I saw her change colour, and looked pale like death. And because I feared, *Fleurial* would perceiue it, I came forward, & said to her, Madam, here is *Fleurial*, that would go to see his Aunt because she is sick, and desires you to giue him leaue for some few dayes. *Galathée* turning her eies and words to mee, asked what her disease was. I thinke (answered I) it is so many yeeres passed, that it takes from her all hope of recovery. Then she turned to *Fleurial*, and sayd, Go and returne quickly, but not before she be well if it be possible: for I loue her well, for the speciall good will, which shee hath alwayes borne mee. At this word she held on her walking, and I set my selfe to speake to him, and shewed in my gesture more then indeed of displeasure, and admiration, that the Nymph might note it: at last I told him, See, *Fleurial*, you bee secret and wise, thereon depends all our good, or all your euill, and above all, do what *Lindamor* shall command you. After he had promised me, he went his way, and I disposed my countenance the best I could to sadness and displeasure; and sometimes when I was in place where the Nymph only might heare, I fained to sigh, and lift vp mine eies to heauen, and strike my hands together, and to be short, I did al I could imagine to giue her some suspition of what I would. She, as I told you, that looked alwayes when I should speake of *Lindamor*, seeing I sayd nothing, but on the contrary auoided all occasions, and in stead of that pleasant humor, which made mee bee esteemed of among my companions, I had but a troubled melancholy, by little and little began to bee of opinion, that I would giue it her, but not all: for my purpose was to make her beleue, that *Lindamor* going from the combat, was so sore wounded, that he was dead, that pity might obtaine that of that glorious soule, which neither affection nor seruices could. Now, as I told you, my plot was so well fited, that it fell out as I did forecast, for though she would dissemble, yet could she not choose but be as liuely touched for *Lindamor*, as any might be. And so seeing me sad, and mante, she imagined either he was in very hard case, or some thing worse, and felt her selfe so pressed with this vnguicnnesse, that she could not possibly longer hold out her resolution.

Two daies after, that *Fleurial* was gone, she made me come into her cabinet, and seeming to talk of another matter, sayd to me, Know you how *Fleurial*s Aunt doth? I answere, that since he went I knew nothing. Truely (sayd she) I would be very sorry, if the old woman should not do well: you haue reason (sayd I) Madam, for she loues you, and you haue had many seruices of her, which are not yet fully acknowledged. If she liue (sayd she) I will do it, and after her, I will remember *Fleurial* for her sake. Then I answere, Both the seruices of the aunt, & those of the Nephew, deserue some good recompence, and especially *Fleurial*; for his faithfulness, and affection cannot be bought. It is true (sayd she) but because you speake of *Fleurial*, what great matter had you to say to him? or hee to you, when he went away? I answered coldly, I recommended mee to his aunt. Recomendations (sayd she) were not so long: then she came neerer me and layd her hand on my shoulder: Tell truth, continued shee; you speake of some other thing. And what might it bee (replied I) if it were not that? I had no other busynesse with him. Now I know (sayd she) that at this present you dissemble: why did you say you had no other busynesse with him, and haue had so much for *Lindamor*? O! Madam, I little thought you would haue remembred a man so vnfortunate; and then holding my peace, I fatched a deepe sigh. What is the matter (sayd she) that you sigh? tell me true; where is *Lindamor*? *Lindamor* (answered I) is no more then earth. How, (cried shee out) *Lindamor* is no more? No indeed (answered I) the cruelty which you haue vfed towards him, hath rather slaine him then the strokes of his enemy: for going from the combat, and knowing by the report of many, the euill satisfaction which you had of him, he would never suffer himselfe to be dressed; and because you haue such a desire to know, that was it that *Fleurial* told mee, whom I commanded to assay, if he could wisely withdraw the letters which wee haue writ him, to the end that as you haue lost the remembrance of his seruices by your cruelty, so might I consume in the fire the memories which might remaine. O God (sayd she) what is that you tell me? Is it possible he should be so lost? It is you (sayd I) that may say you haue lost him: for his part, hee hath gained by dying, since by death hee hath found rest, which your cruelty will never permit him, while hee liued.

Ah! *Leonidas* (sayd she) you tell me these things, to put mee to paine: confess the truth, hee is not dead. Would to God it were so (sayd I) but for what cause shoulde I tell you? I answere, his death or life are indiffe-rent to you; and specially since you loued him so little, you may be glad to be

be exempted for the importunity he would haue gitten you: for you are to beleue that if he had liued, hee would never haue ceased from giuing such proofes of his affection, as that of *Polemus*. Indeed then, sayd the Nymph, I am sorry for the poore *Lindamor*, and sweare vnto you, that his death touches me more to the quicke, then I thought it would: but tell me, had he never no remembrance of vs at his end? and did hee not shew to be grieved to leaue vs? See, Madam (sayd I) a question which is not vsuall! He died for your sake, and you aske if hee remembred you? Ah! that his memory and his sorrow had not bin too great for his helth! I beseech you talke no more of him. I assurre my selfe, he is in the place where he receiues the reward of his fidelity, and where it may bee, hee shall see himselfe reuenged at you cost. You are in choler (sayd she.) You must pardon me (sayd I) Madam: but this is the reason that constraines me to speake thus, for there is none that can giue more testimony of his affection and fidelity then I, and of the wrong you haue done him, to give him so vnworthy a recompence for so many seruices. But (sayd the Nymph) let vs set this aside; for I know that in some thing you haue reason: but I haue not done so much wrong as you impute. And tell mee, I pray you, by the loue you beare me, if in his last words hee remembred mee, and what they were? Must you (sayd I) triumph in your soule at the end of his life, as you haue done ouer al his actions, since he begā to loue you? If this must be to your contentment, I will satisfie you. As soone as he knew that you went about to blemish the honor of his victory, and that in stead of pleasing you, he hath by this fight got your hatred, it shal never be (sayd he). O iniustice, that thou shalt, for my cause, lodge longer in so faire a soule. I must by my death wash away my offence. Then hee tooke all the clouts which hee had on his wounds, and would no more suffer the hand of the Chirurgion: his wounds were not mortall, but the ranckling brought it to those termes, that he perceiued small strength in him to liue: he called *Fleorial*, and being alone, hee sayd, My friend! *Fleorial*, thou now losest him that had great care to do thee good: but you must arme your selfe with patience, since it is the will of heauen: I would yet haue one piece of seruice from thee, which shall better please me, then that thou euer didst. And hauing drawne from him a promise that hee would do it: hee continued, You must not faile in what I bid you. As soone as I shall be dead, rip vp my belly, and take out the heart, and carry it to the faire *Galathée*, and tell her that I send it her, that at my death I may keepe nothing that belongs to any other. At these last words, hee lost both speech and life.

Now

Now this foole *Fleorial*, that hee may not bee wanting in that which was commanded him, by a person whom he held so deare, hath brought hither the heart, and without me would present it to you. Ah! *Leonide*, (sayd she) is it certaine he is dead? Oh God, that I knew not his sicknes! and you would nevr tell me of it! I would haue found some remedy. O what a losse haue I sustained! & how great is your fault? Madam, (answerd I) I knew nothing: for *Fleorial* stayed with him to attend him, because he had none of his owne: but if I had knowne, I thinke I should not haue spoken to you of it, I knew your mind was so far remoued from that subiect. At these words, restiing her head on her arme, shee commanded me to leaue her alone, to the end, as I thought, that I might not see her teares which already encreased their drops: but hardly was I gone, before shee called me backe, and without lifting vp her head, shee bid mee command *Fleorial* to bring her that which *Lindamor* had sent her, in what fashion he listed. And presently I went out, fully assured that the knights affaires for whom I pleaded, would fall out as I had propounded. In the meane time, when *Fleorial* returned to *Lindamor*, he found him in paine, for the long tarrying hee made at *Mont-brison*: but my letter rejoyced him so, that at an instant a man might see him amended. It was thus:

The answere of *Leonide* to *Lindamor*.

YOur infiſce ſo cleeres, that the eyes faiſt & ſhut, cannot deny the brightneſſe. Content your ſelfe, that they whom you deſire ſhould ſee it by me, hauiing knowne your reſolution, haue found it moſt iſt: it is truē, that as the wounds of the body are not all healed, though they be ouer of danger, ſo are they of the mind: but hauiing remoued the danger by your valour and prudence, you muſt giue time to leaue to worke his ordinary actions, remembred that the ſores which beale ouerſoone, are ſubiect to putrefie, which is afterwards moſe dangerous then the wounds. Hope for all, your deſire: for you may haue it with reaſon.

I writ to him in this ſort, that ſadneſſe might not hurt his wounds, and that he might heale the ſooner. He writ backe to me thus:

The reply of *Lindamor* to *Leonide*.

SO, faire Nymph, may you haue all ſort of contentment, as all mine comes and depends on you alone. I hope now you command me, but lone which is ever accompanied with doubt, commands me to tremble: but les heauen do with mee what it pleaſes: I know, it will not deny me the graue.

Q 9 3

Now

Now, that which I answered (that I may not trouble you with so many letters) was in sum, that as soone as he might endure traueil, he should finde means to speake with mee, that then hee should know how true I was; and as shortly as I could, I let him know all the talke that Galathée and I had, and the displeasure she had of his death, and the will she had to haue his heart. See what the force is of a strong affection! *Lindamor* had beeene wounded in many places, and lost so much bloud, that he was in danger of his life; yet beyond the hope of the Surgeons, as soone as he received the last letter, you might see him walke, you might see him apparel himselfe, and within two or three dayes after, he assayed to mount on horse-backe; at last, he hazarded himselfe to come to me; and because he durst not come by day, that hee might not be seene, hee clad himselfe like a Gardner, and calling himselfe the cousin of *Fleurial*, resolued to come into the garden, and to behaue himselfe as occasion should be offered.

As he set downe, so he put it to effect; and causing his clothes priuily to be made ready, he told the Aunt of *Fleurial*, that before the combate, he had made a vow, and that hee would render it before hee went out of those parts: but that fearing the friends of *Polemais*, he would go in that disguise, and desired her to say nothing. The good old woman would haue dissuaded him from the danger wherein he was, counselling him, to put off his journey, till some other time. But he that was carried with too ardent a devotion to break off, told her, that if he did it not before he were out of the country, hee beleueed, all the misfortunes of the world would befall him. So about evening he departed, that he might meete no body, and arrived so happily, that vsuall, he entred into the garden, and was led by *Fleurial* into the house, where (at that time) hee had but one seruant to helpe him to worke, whom he made beleue, that *Lindamor* was his cousin, whom he would teach the mystery of a Gardner. If the knight wayted for the morning with great desire, and if the night seemed not to him longer than vsuall, hee that hath beeene in attempt of that hee desires, may judge.

So it was, that the morning was no sooner come, but *Lindamor*, with a spade in his hand, enters the Garden. I would you had seene him with this toole: you might well know he was not vied to it, and that he knew better to carry a launce. He hath sworne to me an hundred times since, that he was never more ashamed in his life, than to present himselfe thus attired before the eyes of his mistris; and he was twice or thrice in mind to returac. But in the end, Loue surmounted the shame, and made him resolute

resolute to stay our comyning. By fortune, that day the Nymph, to refresh her selfe, came downe into the Garden, with many of my companions. As soone as she sawe *Fleurial*, she was glad, and presently made a signe with her eye: but though I assayed to speake to him, yet could I not do it, because the new Gardner was by, who was so changed in his habit, that none could know him. For my part I excuse my selfe for not knowing him. For I would never haue thought that he would haue done this deince, without acquainting me with it. But he hath since told mee, that he concealed it from me, knowing well, that I would never haue suffered him to come thither, in that sort. Thinking then of any other rather than of him, I was very curious to aske of *Fleurial*, who this straunger was? He answered me coldly, that hee vsed the Auntes name, whom he would teach what himselfe knew in gardening. At this word *Galathée*, as curious, but lesse couragious than I, seeing me talke with him, came to him, and hearing that he was *Fleurial* cousin, asked him how his mother did. Then it was that *Lindamor* was much troubled, for he feared that that which was edured by his habit, might be discouered by his speech; yet counterfeiting as well as he could, he answered in a countrey language, that she was past all danger, and then followed a reverence after the same fashion, with such a grace, that all the Nymphs fell on laughing: but he, without shew of haating them, put his hat vpon his head with both his hands, and fell to his worke.

*Galathée* smiling, said to *Fleurial*, If your cousin be as good a Gardner, as he is a speake, you haue gotten a good helpe. Madam (sayd *Fleurial*) he can speake no better then those that taught him: in his village they speake all so. Yes, said the Nymph, it may be hee is taken for some great man among them. At this word she walked away. This gaue me some commodity to speake to *Fleurial*. But my companions, to passe the time, placed themselves about *Lindamor*; and every one to make him speake, said somewhat: and he answered them all, but with things so farre from the purpose, that they could not choose but laugh; for he speake so, that he seemed to be in earnest: and though he answered, yet did hee never lift vp his head, faining to be busie at his worke. In the meane time, going to *Fleurial*, I asked him how *Lindamor* did? He answered, he was yet ill enough: *Lindamor* had willed him to say so. And whence comes his euill (said I) for you told me his wounds were almost healed? You may know, answered he, by the Letter hee hath written to my Lady. My Lady (said I) thinke hee is dead; but give it me, and I will let her see it, tayning that it was long since written. I dare not (answered he) beca-

cause he hath expesly forbidden mee, and hath tied mee by oath. How (said I) is *Lindamer* entred into mistrust of me? Not so, said he, but contrarily, hee prayes you make the Nymph beleue hee is dead. But for his good, and my aduantage, the Nymph must receiue the letter at my hands. I was put into choller, and had said more, if I had not feared to be perceiued. But hee did so well that hee was commaunded, that I could draw no other thing from him; but for conclusion, that if the Nymph would haue that which *Lindamer* gaue her, she must receiue it at his hands. And when I told him, that it might be long before hee could speake with her, and that may doe hurt: he answered me not, but with nodding his head: by which he let me know he would not do it.

*Galathes* perceiving that we talked, desirous to know the subiect, returned from her walke sooner than of custome; and hauing called mee, would know what it was. I sayd to her freely, I would tell her that which was the resolution of *Fleurial*, but in stead of the Letter, I said it was the heart of *Lindamer*, and that hauing beeene in any case commaunded by him at his death, hee thought hee should commit treason, if hee did not performe his promise. Then *Galathes* answered me, that shee meant to speake with him particularly, and that shee thought hee could not haue a fitter meane than to fayne the bringing of some fruite in a basket, and in the botome they might lay the heart. I answered, This might well be so done: but I knew him to be such a beast, that he would doe nothing, because *Auarice* gaue him hope to haue much from her, if himselfe presented (in deliuering the heart into her hands) the seruices which in these occasions he had done. O (said she) if he keepe it but for this, let him tell you what he wil haue onely: for I will giue it him. That shall be (replied I) a kinde of ransome which you must pay for that heart. That is not (sayd she) of money that I must pay, but of my teares, and those drawne from my bloud. It may be, she was sorry she said so much. So it was, that she commaunded mee in the morning to speake to *Fleurial*: which I did, and set before him all that which I thought might moue him to giue me this Letter, euen to threatening. But all vvas in vaine: for, for resolution he said, Looke, *Leonido*, till the heauen and earth meet together, I will doe no otherwise. If my Lady will know what I haue to say to her, the euenings are so bright, that she may come with you to the foot of the staires, which descend from her chamber: the Moone shines, I haue seene her come often, the way is not long, no body shall know of it: I assure my selfe, that when she hath heard me, she will not complaine of the labour she hath taken.

When

When he had said thus, I was in extreme choler with him, representing to him that he was to obey *Galathes*, and not *Lindamer*: that she was his mistris, that she could de him good or ill. Shortly, that there was no like-lihood that shee would take the paine. But he, without being moued, told me, Nymph, it is not to *Lindamer* that I obey, but the oath which I haue made to the gods; if she cannot in this sort, I can shoure retorne chiches from whence shee came. I left him with his obstinacy so vexed, that I was halfe besides my selfe; for if I had knowne the designe of *Lindamer*, since the matter was so forvward, without doubt I had helped him. But not knowing it, I found *Fleurial* with so small reason, that I knew not what to say. At last, I returned to giue ansyvere to *Galathes*, who vvas in such choler, that she would make him be beaten, and thrust out of her mothers seruice, if I had not set before her the danger whereinto she put her selfe, that she discouered not vwhat had passed. Three or fourre daies passed vvhile the Nymph remayned obstinate, not to doe as *Fleurial* required: at last, Loue being ouer-strong to conquer all things, forced her so, that in the morning she told mee, that all the night shee had taken no rest; the ghost of *Lindamer* was all night about her, so that shee thought it was the least thing shee owed to his memory, to goe downe the stayres to receive his heart from another; and that I should signifie to *Fleurial*, that he should not faile to be there. O God! what was the contentment of the new *Garduer*? He hath told me siance, that in his life he never had such a surfe of ioy: because he perceiued his deuice beganas to take effect. And seeing the Nymph came no more into the Garden, he was afraid that she knew him.

But when *Fleurial* aduertised him of the resolution she had taken, this was a new resurrection of Loue, at least, if one may die for sorrow, and revive by contentment. Hee prepared himselfe to goe about what hee had to doe, with more curioly than euer against *Polemar*. The night being come, and every man retired, the Nymph sayled not to attire her selfe but onely with a robe for the night; and making me to open the former doore, she made me goe out first; and I swere, she trembled so, that she could hardly goe. Shee sayd she had a certaine paine in her stomake, which she was not used to, and tooke from her all strength. Shee knew not whether it were for being abroad in the night without light, or for going so late at an vnfit houre, or because she was to receive the present of *Lindamer*; but whatsoeuer it was, she was not well. At the last, being somewhat assured, we went downe, where we had no sooner opened the doore, but we found *Fleurial*, who had long wayted for vs. The Nymph

R

went

went out before, and going under a shelter of Madoimide, which for the largeness might warrant vs to say good the Desires of the Moone, and from bring forth from the windowes of those bedgings that answer the garden, she beganne all in choller to say to *Fleurial*: Well, *Fleurial*, how long haue you beeene so firme in your opinion, that though I command, yet you will do nothing? Madam (answering her) without being exact, I haue obeyed you in sayling you, if there be a fault: for, haue not you commandmed me exprely, that I should doe what *Lindamor* appoynted me? Now, Madame, it is he that hath thus commandmed me, and who deliuering me his heart, besides his commandement, bound me by oath, that I should not deliver it into any other hands but yours. Well, well, interruped she, fetching a sigh, where is the heart? Behold, Madam, said he, stepping backe three or fourre paces to a little Arbot. If it please you to come, you shall see it better then where you are. She rose vp, and came thither: but when she would enter, behold, a man that cast himself at her feete, and without saying any thing, kissed her robe. O God, sayd the Nymph, who is this, *Fleurial*? see, a man! Madam (said *Fleurial* smiling) it is an heart that is yours. How, said she, an heart? And when she would haue fled away for feare, but hee that kiss her robe, held her backe. Hearing these words, I drew neare, and presently I knew it was he, that *Fleurial* said was his cousin. I knew not suddenly what to think: I saw *Galathis* and my selfe in the hands of those two men, the one of whom was vs knowne to vs. What could wee resling to doe? To saye we did nothing, to aby, *Galathis* could not; to trust to our owne strength, there was no apparence. At last, all that I could doe, was to cast my selfe into the hands of him that held the Nymphis robe, and not being able to do more, I beganne to scratch and to bite him. That which I did, was with such speed, that the first thing that he felt, was the biting. Ah, courteous *Lindamor*, said he, how do you handle your enemies, when you deale so indeately with your seruants? Though I were almost besides my selfe, yet I almost knew the voyce, and asking him who hee was? I am (sayther) the man that beares the heart of *Lindamor* to this faire Nymph: and then not casting himselfe from the earth, turning to her, he went on:

I must confesse, Madam, that this rashnesse is growne, yee is no waye quall to my affection, which hath caused it. See the heart of *Lindamor*, which I bring you: I hope, this present shall do as well accepted from the hand of the givere, as from a stranger: yet if my misfortune deny me what Loue hath promised me, haing offended the divinitie which I only adore, condencme this heart, which bring you to all the cruell punishments you please:

please: for so the paine may satisfie you, it shal boare it patiently, and with as much contentment as you pardon it. I easily knew him then to be *Lindamor*, and so did *Galathis*: she seeing him at her feete whom she bewalled for dead; and in the place of a Gardiner, the Knight that gives place to none in all the Countrey. And knowing that *Galathis* was so surprised, I sayd, Is it so, *Lindamor*, that you surprize Ladys? This is not the act of a Knight, especially such as you are. I confesse, said he, gracious Nymph, that it is not the act of a Knight, but withall, you cannot deny, but it is of a Louer; and what am I more then a Louer? Loue, that hath taught others to spaine, teaches me to be a Gardiner. Is it possible (sayd he, turning to the Nymph) that this extreme affection which you haue caused, is so displeasing to you, that you wold haue it end in my death? I haue had the hardines to bring you that which you wold haue of mine, this heart, is it not more welcome to you in life then in death? Now, if it be your pleasure that it die, behold here a dagger, which may abridge that, which your rigour in time may bring.

The Nymph to all these words made no answer, but Ah, *Lindamor*, haue you betrayed me? and with these words went out into the Alley, where she found a seat fit for the purpose; for she was so besides her selfe, that she knew not where she was. There the Knight cast himselfe on his knees, and I came on the other side, and sayd, How, Madam, say you you are betrayed? Why doe you accuse me so? I swerte by the seruice I haue vowed you, that I knew nothing of this act, & *Fleurial* hath deceived me as well as you. But God be praised that the deceit is so commodious to every one: behold the heart of *Lindamor*, which *Fleurial* promised you; but see him in a state to do you seruice, may you not be glad of this treason?

It would be too long, to tell you all the discourse wee had. So it was, that at last we made a peace, and so, that this loue was more strongly tied then ever before: yet with condition, that for that present he should depart, to go whether *Amasis* and *Cleidamor* had sent him. This departure was vnplesing; yet hee must obey: and so, after hee had kissed *Galathis* hands, without any greater fauour, he departed. Well, hee went in great assurance, that at his retурne hee might see her at that houre, and in that place. But to what purpose shoulde I particularize every thing? *Lindamor* returned to them that being his followers expected him, & from thence, with great expidence went where *Cleidamor* thought hee was, and by the way hee framed a thousand wise excuses of his stay, sometimes accusing the incommodities of the mountaines, and sometimes the sicknes which yee appeared in his face, by reason of his wounds, and thinking that all

the while he was absent from from his Lady, his busynesse was not worth the stay, he came backe with the permission of *Amasis* and *Clidaman*, into *Feroffs*, where being arraigned, and hauing given a good account of his charge, he was hontored and made much of, as his vertue deserued. But all this went not to his heart, in respect of that aspect, which he had from the Nymph, who since his last departure encreased so her good will, that I know not if *Lindamor* had cause to call himselfe more louing, then beloued.

This suite passed so farre, that one night being in the garden, he pressed her of entimes to permit him to demand her of *Amasis*, that he was certeine he had done such seruices to her and her sonne, that they would not deny him this grace. She answered, You may more doubt of their good will then of your deserts; & you may be lesse assured of your merites, then of my good will: but I would not that you should speake of it, vntill *Clidaman* be maried. I am yonger then he, I may stay so long. You may well (answered he) but so wil not the violence of my passion, at least, if you will not agree to this remedy, giue me one that cannot hurt you, if your will be as you tell me. If I may (sayd she) without offending my selfe, I will promise you. After he had killed her hand, Madam (sayd he) you haue promised me to swaue before *Lindamor*, and the gods, that haue our discourses, that you will be my wife, to take aduise before them; neuer to haue any other. *Galarhee*, was ouertaken vpon sayning, that it was partly for the ded she had taken, and partly by my perswasion, though indeed it were her owne affection, she was concerred, and swearing betweene my hands, with condition, that *Lindamor* should sooner come into that garden, vntill the marriage were declared, and that to prevent the occasion that may make them passe further; behold, *Lindamor*, the most content that euer was, full of al sortes of hope, at least, of all those that a louer might haue, that was beloued, and wayting but for the promised conclusion of his desires, when *Love*, or rather *Fortune* would mocke him, and giue him the most cruell displeasure that any might haue. O *Lindamor*, how vayne are these thy propositions?

At this time *Clidaman*, being deparied with *Gnymantes*, to secke the aduentures of armes, and then hee went to the army of *Merone*, and though hee went privately, yet his actions made him well enough knowne, and because *Amasis* would not haue him stay there in that sort, she leuied all the forces she could make, to send to him, and as you know, gaue the charge to *Lindamor*, and kept *Polemas* for gouernour vnder her of all her provinces, vntill hee conuincing of her sonne, which she did, as well

to

to give satisfaction to these two great personages, as to separate them a little: for euer since the retурne of *Lindamor*, they haue had some brabble together, were it, for that there is nothing so secret, which in some sort is not discouered; and for that *Polemas* had some conjecture, that it was hee against whome he fought, or that loue only was the cause: so it was, that all men knew how little good will, they bare each to other. Now *Polemas* was wel content, and *Lindamor* went away with no ill wil; the one, that he might be neare his Mistresse, the other, that hauing occasion to do seruice to *Amasis*, he might thereby binde her, hoping by this way to make easie the passage to that good which hee aspired. But *Polemas*, that knew by the eye, how much hee was out of fauour, and contrarily, how many fauours his riall had receiued, hauing now no hope, neither in his seruices nor in his merites, ran to subtillty. And behold how he set vp a man! but the most crafty and deceitful that euer was in his mistery, whom, without acquainting any in the Court, he caused secretly to see *Amasis*, *Galaboo*, *Silie*, *Silore*, me and all the other Nymphs, and not only shewed him their face, but told him what he knew of the all, namely the things most secret, whereof being an old Courtier, hee was well informed, and after desired him to faim himselfe to be a Druid or great diuine. Hee came into that great wood of *Sauignes*, neare the faire gardens of *Mons-brison*, where by a small riuier, where he might passe ouer, he made his Lodging, and tarried there some while, seeming to be a great diuiner; so that the bruite of him came to vs, and specially *Galarhee* went to him to know her fortune. This crafty companion could so well play his part, with such circumstances and ceremonies, that I must confess the truth, I was deceiued as well as others.

So it was, that the conclusion of his cunning, was, to tell her that the heauens had giuen her by influence, the choice of a great good, or a great euill, and it was wisedome to choose: That both the one and the other, was to proceed from that which shee should loue; and if she neglegeted his aduise, she should be the ynhappiest woman in the world: and contrarily, most happy, if she made a good election; that if she would besieue him, he would giue her so certaine knowledge both of the one and the other, that she had no more to do, but to discerne them. And looking in her hand, and after on her face, hee sayd, Such a day being within *Marsellis*, you shall see a man clad in such a colour: if you marry him, you are the most miserablie in the world. Then hee let her see in a mirrour, a place which is by the riuier of *Lignon*, & said, You see this place, go at such an house, you shall finde the man that shall make you most happy, if you marry

marry him. Now *Climanche* (so is this deceiver called) had cunningly knowne both the day that *Lindamor* was to depart, and the colour of his cloathes: and his desseine was, that *Pelmas* seeming to go hunt, should be at the place which he shewed in the glasse. Now heare, I pray you, how all fell out: *Lindamor* sailde not to come forth apparelled as *Climanche* had foretold, and that day *Galathée*, who had good remembrance of *Lindamor*, stood so astonied, that she could not answere to what hee sayd. The poore knight thought it was for the griefe of his departure so farre off: so that after he had kissed her hand, hee went away to the Army more contented than his fortune required. If I had knowne she had beeene of that opinion, I would haue endeououred to haue diuerted her from it, but shee kept it so secret from me, that as then I had no knowledge of it. Afterward, the day drew on that *Climanche* had told her, that she should finde about the *Lignon*, him that should make her happy. Shee would not tell mee all her designe, onely shee let me understand, if the *Druyde* were true in that which he said: that the Court was so empty, that there was no pleasure in it: that for a while *Solitariness* would be more pleasing: that she was resolued to goe to her Palace of *Sow*, as priuately as shee could possibly: and that of her Nymphs she would haue but *Silvie* and me, her Nurce and the little *Morill*. As for me that was cloyed with the Court, I sayd, that it would be fit to withdraw awhile: and so letting *Astrea* know, that she would takophysicke, shee might be gone the next morning.

But it was her Nurce that confirmed her in that opinion: for this good old woman that loued her Nurce-child very tenderly, easily being drawne to credite these predictions, as (for the most part) all of her age are, counseled her to it, and pressed her so, that finding her already so inclined, it was an easie thing to thrust her into this Labyrinth. For my part, I was neuer more astoried: for suppose there be but three persons in this great building. But the Nymph, which well marked the day that *Climanche* had set, prepared the euening before to goe thither, and in the morning dressed her selfe, the most to her aduantage she could, and commaunded vs to doe the like. In that sort we went in a Coach to the place assignd where being arruied, by chancie, at the houre which *Climanche* had sayd, we found a shepheard almost drowned, and halfe couered with mud and grauell, whom the fury of the waet had cast on our shote. This shepheard was *Celadon*: I know not if you know him, who, by chancie, being fallene into *Lignon*, wanted of drowning himselfe: but wee came so fitly, that wee saved him: for *Galathée* believeng it was hee that was to make her

her happy, some that time begaine to loue him so, as shee chenging her paines to helpe to lay him in the Coach, and then to the Palace, heall this while not coming to himselfe. At then the same, the feignt of deach, & the scraoches he had in his face kepe him, that his beauty could not be per ceynd. And, for my part, I curse the Inchanter and Divine, wch was the cause that we took so much paine: for I swere, I never had the like in my life.

But after hee came to himselfe, and that his face was without soile, he seemed the goodliest man that I can tell of; besides that, he had a spirit sauouring of anything, rather than of a shopeheard. I haue seene none in our Court more ciuill, nor more worthy to be beloued: in somuch as I do not wonder that *Galathée* should be strongly inamoured, that she can hardly goe from him in the night. But indeed she deceiuers her selfe, because this shopeheard is lost for the loue of a shpheardeesse called *Astrea*.

Thus, all these things gaue no small blowe to *Lindamor*, because the Nymph, hauing found that true which this lyer told her, is resolued to die, rather than to marry *Lindamor*, and studys by all her skill to make her selfe amiable to this shpheard, who doth nothing, especially in her presence, but sigh his absence from *Astrea*. I know not whether the constrain he is in, (for she will not let him goe from the Palace,) or whether the water which he swallowed, when he fell into the riuver, be the cause: so it is, that euer since he goes puling, sometimes in bed, sometimes out, but at last, he hath gotten a feuer so burning, that knowing no remedy for his heath, the Nymph hath commaunded mee to seeke you out diligently, that you may see what is necessary to sauе him alive.

The *Druyde* was very attentiu during this discourse, and gaue divers iudgements, according to the subiect of his Nieces words, and (it may be) neere the truth: for he knew well, that shee was not altogether exempted, neither from Loue nor fault; yet as well aduised as he was, hee dissembled it, and sayd to his Niece, that it was no hard matter to serue *Galathée*, especially in the person of *Celadon*, whose parents he had alwaies loued, and though he were a shpheard, yet descended he from the ancient lyne of Knights; and that his Ancestors had chosen that kinde of life, for the more quiet and happier then that at Court; and therefore he was to be honoured and well serued. But this fashion of life which *Galathée* vsed, was neither good for the Nymph, nor honorable for her, that comming to the Palace, and hauing seene the manner of things, he would tell her how she should gouerne her selfe. The Nymph, somewhat ashamed, answered, It was some long time since she had a purpose to tell him, but she

she neither durst, nor met with opportunity: for indeede, *Clementine* was the cause of all the euill. O (answered *Adamas*) if I can catch him, I will make him pay, with vsury, the false title which he hath vsurped of a Drude. That will be easie (said the Nymph) by a meane that I will tell you. He told *Galathes* that she should returne twice or thrice, to the place where she was to finde this man, if she found him not the first time: I know that *Palmer* and behauing bin so tardy the first day, will not faile to come the others following: he that will take this deceiuer, he need but hide him in the place which I will shew you, whither, without doubt, he will come: and for the day, you may know it of *Galathes*; for, for my part, I haue forgotten it.

*The end of the ninth Booke.*

THE



## THE TENTH BOOKE OF Astrea and Celadon.

**W**ith this discourse the Nymph deceiued, in part, the length of the way, both of them being so attentiue, that, almost before they were aware, they found they were neare the Palace of *Isowr*. But *Adamas*, that desired in any wise to remedy this life, instructed her what he would haue her say to *Galathes*; and aboue al, not to let her know that he disliked her actions: for (said he) I know wel, that the courage of the Nymph must be ouercom with gentlenesse, and not with force. But in the meane time (my Neece) remember you to doe your duty; that these allurements are shamefull, both to thofe that are attainted with them, and to them that fauour them.

He had gone on with his aduices, if at the entry of the Palace they had not met *Silvie*, who led them to the place where *Galathes* was. At that time she was gone to walke into the next Garden, while *Celadon* rested. As soone as she saw them, she came towards them, and the Drude, with one knee on the ground, saluted her, kissing her robe, and so did *Leonide*; but lifting them vp, she embrased them both, thanking *Adamas* for the paines he had taken in comming, with assurance that shee would requite it in those occasions which might turne to his pleasure. Madame, sayd hee, all my seruices cannot deserue the least of these good words: I am onely sorry, that that which is presented, is not a stronger prooef of my affection; to the end, that in any case you might know, that if I be grown old without doing you service, it is not for want of good will, but for that I haue not had the happinesse to be employed. *Adamas* (answered the Nymph) the seruices which you haue done to *Amasis*, I take for mine; & chose which I haue had from your Neece, I take them as from you; so that you

you cannot say, but in the person of my mother, you haue well serued me; and in that of your Neece, you haue beene often employed. Alwayes as I may, I will acknowledge your seruices together. But in that which is offered at this time, bethinke your selfe; that since there is nothing more grieuous then the strokes that are layd on the part most sensible, that haing my spirit wounded, you cannot finde the meanes to doe me more acceptable seruice then in this. We will talke of it at leasure, in the meane time, goe to your rest, and *Silvie* shall bring you to your chamber, and *Leonide* render account to me of what she hath done.

So the Druide went away: And *Galathee* vsing *Leonide* more kindly then of wont, demanded the newes of her voyage, wherein shee satisfied her willingly: But (going forward) Madame (sayd she) I thanke God, I finde you more ioyfull then I left you. Friend, said the Nymph, the likely healing of *Celadon* hath brought mee this good: for you must know, that you were not gone aboue a mile hence, before he waked without his feuer: but since he is so much amended, that hee himselfe hopes to rise within two or three dayes. See (answered *Leonide*) the best newes that I could haue wished to haue had at my retурne, so that if I had knowne it sooner, I had not brought *Adamas* hither.

But to the purpose, said *Galathee*, what said he of this accident? For I assure my selfe, you haue told him. Pardon me, Madame, said *Leonide*, I told him nothing but what I thought could not be hidden from him whē he was to be here. He knowes the loue which you beare to *Celadon*, which, I haue told him, proceeded of pitty: he knowes well the shepheard, and those of his family; and assureth himselfe, he shal be able to perswade him to all things that he shal please: and for my part, I thinke, if you will imploy him, he will doe you seruice; but you must speake plainly to him. O God, sayd the Nymph, is it possible? I am assured, that if hee will undertake it, it cannot but all turne to my contentment: for his wisedome is so great, and his judgement also, that he can not choose but bring about what soever he beginnes. Madame, said *Leonide*, I speake not without ground: you shall see, If you will serue your selfe by him, what will bee. Now behold the Nymph the most contented in the world, already figuring to her selfe the accomplishment of her desires.

But while they discoursed thus, *Silvy* and *Adamas* spent the time aboue the same busynesse: for the Nymph, who was well acquainted with the Druide, talked of them very openly. He that was very wary, that he might know if his Neece had told him true, prayed her to tell him what she knew. *Silvy*, that desired in any case to breake off this discouſe, did

did it without dissimulation, and the shorkest she could, in this manner:

*The History of Leonide.*

Now, that the better to instruct you of all that you demand, I am constrainyd to touch the particulars of some other besides *Galathee*. And I shall doe it the more willingly, for that it may be behouefull for the time to come, that they should not be hidden from you. It is *Leonide* of whom I speake, whom (it seemes) destinies would intangle more than ordinary in the desaignes of *Galathee*. This that I tell you, is not to blame her, or to make it knowne. For telling it to you, I beleue it is no lesse secret than if you had not knowne it. You must then vnderstand, that it is long time since the beauty and merits of *Leonide* wannte her, after long suete, the affection of *Polemas*: and because the deserts of that knight were not so slender, but they could procure themselues to be beloued: Your Neece was not contented to be beloued, but she would also loue; but she carried it with such discretion, that euen *Polemas* was long without the knowledge of it. I doubt not but you haue loued, and that you know better than I, how hardly Loue will be hidden: so it was, that at last it burst out, and both knew they were louers, and beloued: yet was this amity so honest, that it would not suffer them to dare to shew it. After the sacrifice that *Amasis* made every yeere, on the day that she married *Pimander*, it fell out, that after dinner we were all in the Gardens of *Mont-brison*: the more cheerfully to passe this happy iourney, she and I to defend vs from the Sunne (being set vnder some trees) which gaue a pleasing shaddow. We were scarcely there, but *Polemas* came to sit by vs, seeming that it was by chance he met vs; but I obserued, that he had some good while followed vs with his eye. And because we sat without any words, and that he had a good voyce, I sayd to him, that hee should binde vs much to him, if he would sing. I will (said he) if that sayre will command me, poynting to *Leonide*. Such a commandement (said she) would be a great indiscretion; but I will make vs of my prayer, especially if you haue any new thing. I will willingly (answered *Polemas*) and morecouver I assure you, that this which you shall heare, was made but in the time of the Sacrifice, while you were in your prayers. And how (said he) is my companion then the subiect of this song? Yes in deed (answered he) and I am witnessse. And then he began to sing.

We sat very attentive, and (it may be) I had knowne more, had it not beeene for *Leonide*, who fearing that *Polemas* would shew that which she would hide from me, suddenly as he had ended, took hold. I dare lay a wa-

a wager (said she) that I can diuine for whom this Song was made : and then drawing neare his eare, made as if she named some ; but indeed she bade him take heede what he sayd before me. He being discrete, drew backe, and answered ; You haue not diuined right : I sweare vnto you, it is not for her whom you named. Then I perceiued she would hide her selfe from me, which was the cause, that sayning to gather some floures, I went from them on the other side, yet not without hauing an eye to their actions. Now *Polemas* himselfe since hath told me all, but it was after his affection was passed ouer ; for so long as that lasted, it was not in my power to make him confesse any thing. Being then alone, they took vp againe the discourse which they had left, and she was the first that beganne.

And why *Polemas* (sayd shee) doe you iest thus with your friends ? Confesse the truth, for whom are these verses ? Faire Nymph (sayd he) in your soule you know for whom they are as well as I. How ! (sayd shee) doe you beleeue me to be a diuiner ? Yes certaintly (answered *Polemas*) and of those that obey not the gods, who speake by their mouth, but make themselves obeyed of him. What meane you by that enigmatical speech (sayd the Nymph) I meane, sayd he, that Loue speakes by your mouth, otherwise your words would not be so full of fire and loue, that they can kindle in all that behold them, so burning coles, and yet you obey him not, though he commaund, that he who loueth, should be beloved : for disobedient, you worke that they who die of loue for you, may well feele you faire, but never louing, nor so much as onely pitifull. I speake for mine owne particular, that may sweare with truth, that in the world there was never beauty better beloved than yours of me. In saying these last words, he blushed, and she smiled, answering him, *Polemas*, *Polemas*, the old souldiers shew their skarres for witnessse of their valour, and complaine not at all ; you that complaine of yours, would hardly shew them, if Loue, as your Generall, to giue you a worthy reward, should demand to see them. Cruell Nymph, sayd the knight, you deceiue your selfe, for I may onely say to him, Loue, put away thy skarfe, and behold the eyes of mine enemy, for he can no sooner open his eies, but he shall see the wounds that I beare in my heart, not as you say, in my complaint, but in making it my glory, to haue so worthy an Author of my wounds. So that you may iudge, that if Loue will enter into reason with me, I can sooner satisfie him than you, for hee can perceiue the blowes which you cannot, because that the fire cannot burne it selfe, no more are you being insensible of your owne beauties, to be soof our teares, nor offended

where

where the armes of merit cannot resist ; if those of pitty at the least abate the sharpenesse of your rigours, to the end, that they that adore you for faire, may commend you for courteous. *Leonide* loued this knight, but would not he should know it as yet. But she likewise feared, that putting him quite beside all hope, shee might also make him lose his courage : which was the cause that she answered him, If your loue be such, the time will giue mee more knowledge than these words, too well deliuered to proceed from affection. For, I haue heard say, affection cannot be without passion, and passion wil not suffer the spirit to haue so free a discourse. But when the time shall haue told me as much as you, you are to beleeue, that I am not of stone, nor so voyd of vnderstanding, but your merits are knowne to me, and your loue may moue me. Till then, hope not of me, no more than of the rest of my company in generall. The Knight would haue kissed her hand for this assurance ; but because *Galathée* looked on, Knight, said she, be discrete, every one hath eye on vs, if you do thus, you vndoe me.

And at this word she rose and came among vs that were gathering of flowres. Behold the first discouery that they had of their goodwils, which gaue *Galathée* occasion to meddle in it. For, perciuing what had passed in the Garden ; and hauing of long time a purpose to winne *Polemas*, she would know that night, what was done betweene *Leonide* and him ; and because she alvvays made her selfe very familiar with your Neece, and had acquainted her with the particulars of her secrets, the Nymph durst not altogether deny the truthe of this loue-suite. It is true, that she concealed what concerned her owne will : and vpon this discourse *Galathée* would know the very words that they had vsed, wherein your Neece satisfied her in part, and in part dissembled. So it was, that she said enough to encrease the purpose of *Galathée*, so that from that day she resolued to be beloved of him, and vndertooke this worke with that cunning, that it was impossible it should fall out otherwaise. At that meeting, shee forbade *Leonide* to go on in that affection, and after told her, that she should cut off all the rootes, because she knew well, that *Polemas* had another designe, and that this would serue but to delude her. Besides that, if *Amasis* came to knowledge of it, she would be offended.

*Leonide*, who at that time had no more malice than a childe, tooke the words of the Nymph, as from her Mistresse, without searching into the cause, which made her say so, and so remained some dayes estranged from *Polemas*, who knew not from whence it might grove. At the first this made him more earnest in his suite. For it is the ordinary custome of yong

spirits,

spirits, to desire with more eagernesse, that which is hard to come by; and indeed he went on in that sort, that *Leonide* had much enough to doe to dissemble the goodwill she bore him; and at last, knew so little how to doe it, that *Polemas* perceiued he was beloved. But see what *Loue* had appointed!

This young louer, after he had three or four moneths continued this suite with the more violence, as he had the lesse assurance of the goodwill he desired: as soone, almost, as hee was certaine, lost his violence, by little and little loued so coldly, that as Fortune and *Loue*, when they beganne to decline, fall at once, the Nymph perceiued not that shee alone went on in this affection. It is true, that *Galathes*, who came on, was, in part, the cause. For hauing a desaigne on *Polemas*, she vsed such craft, and sped so well, what by her authority, and what with time, that one might say, shee robbed her insensiblly; for that, when *Leonide* handled him roughly, *Galathes* fauoured him: and when the other fled from his company, shee drew him to hers. And this continued so long, and so openly, that *Polemas* beganne to turne his eyes towards *Galathes*, and shortly after, the heart followed: For seeing himselfe fauoured by a greater than her that neglected him, hee blamed himselfe for suffering it without sence, and minded to embrace the fortune which came smiling on him. But O wise *Adamas*! you may see what a gracious encounter this was, and how it pleased *Loue* to play with their hearts. It is some while since, by the ordinance of *Clidaman*, *Agis* was allotted seruant vnto your Neece, and (as you know) by the election of Fortune.

Now though this young Knight was not giuen to *Leonide* out of his owne choyce, yet he agreed to the gift, and approoued it by the seruices which he afterward did performe, and that she disliked not, was shewed by her actions. But when *Polemas* beganne to serue her, *Agis*, as a couerous man, that hath his eyes alwayes on his treasure, tooke notice of the growing loue of this new Louer, and sometimes complayned to her of it: but the coldnesse of her answers (in stead of extinguishing his iclealousies onely) by little and little deaded his loue; for considering what small assurance he had in his soule, he laboured to get a better resolution then formerly he had had; and so, that he might not see another triumph ouer him, he chose rather to withdraw farre off. A receit, that I haue heard say, is the best that a soule infected with this euill, can haue to free it selfe: for as loue, at the beginning, is brought forth by the eyes; so it seemeth that the contrary shoulde be for want of sight, which can be in nothing more then absence, where the forgetfull, couered as with ashes, the ouer-lie-  
ly

ly representations of the thing beloued. And indeed, *Agis* happily attained his purpos for he was hardly gone, but loue likewise parted from his soule, lodging in the place of it the neglect of this flitter: So that *Leonide* purpoling by this new plot to winne *Polemas*, lost him that already was intirely hers. But the confusions of *Loue* ended not heere: for he would, that *Polemas* likewise for his part, should haue sence of that which hee made the Nymph to feele. Almost about the same time, the affection of *Lindamor* tooke birth; and it fell out, that as *Leonide* had disdained *Agis* for *Polemas*, and *Polemas* *Leonide* for *Galathes*, so *Galathes* disdained *Polemas* for *Lindamor*.

To tell the follies of them all, would be an hard piece of worke. So is was, that *Polemas*, seeing himselfe payed in the same money in which hee payd your Neece, yet could not lose nor hope nor loue, but contrariwise searched al sorts of plotting, to enter again into her fauor, but all in vaine. It is true, that as he could get nothing more to his owne benefit, yet hee hath so wrought, that he, who was the cause of his euill, is not come to bee possessor of his good: for whether it were by his cuaning practises, or by the will of the gods, that a certaine devout Druyde hath imparted to him, since that time *Lindamor* is no more beloued: and it seemeth, *Loue* hath a purpose not to suffer the heart of *Galathes* to be at rest, the memorie of the one being no sooner defaced in her soule, but another takes place. And now behold vs at this houre reduced to the loue of a shepherd, who for a shepherd, in his quality may deserue well, but not to be the seruant of *Galathes*; and yet is she so passionate, that if her euill hold on, I know not what will become of her: So as I may well say, I neuer sawe such a curiositie, nor so strange a dreame as she hath had, since she endued this euill. But this is not all: your wisedome ( sage *Adamas*) in this which I am to tell you, must worke one of his ordinary effects. Your Neece is so ouertaken with *Celadon*, as I know not if *Galathes* be more. Above all, Jealousie is so mingled among them, and I haue endeayred to excuse and abate the blowes of it, the best I could; yet I am out of hope for the time to come. Therfore it is, that I thanke God for your coming: for without fision, I know not how things can be carried without you: you must excuse me, if I speake to you so freely, of that which touches you: the armie which I beare them both, enforces me to it.

This ended *Silvester* discourse, with such a demonstration of mislike, to see this euill life, that *Adamas* thought well of her sonit: and to give beginning, not to the healing of the shepherd, but of the Nymphs; for that euill was the greater. *Adamas* asked whether aduise was? For my part,

part (said she) will you beginne to renoue from them the cause of this euill, which is the shepheard? but this must be done with some cunning: for that *Galathée* will not let him goe. You haue reason, answered the Druyde; but while we labour to doe that, we must take heede that he fall not in loue with them, for that yowth and beauty haue no small sympathy, and so we trauaile in vaine, if he happen to loue them. O *Adamas*, said *Silvie*, if you knew *Celadon*, as I doe, you would neuer haue this feare: he is so farre in loue with *Astrea*, that all the beauty of the world cannot please him, and after, we shall haue enough to looke to other things than to his healing. Faire *Silvie*, said the Druyde, you speake well, like one that neuer knew what Loue meant, and as one that neuer feit his forces: This little god, the more power he hath ouer every thing, the more sport he makes with every thing; so that when there is least likelihoode that he should doe any thing, it is then especially, that he is pleased to make his power to be knownne. Liue not you with that confidence, for that, as yet, there was neuer any sort of vertue, that could be exempted from Loue. Chastity it selfe could not, witnessse *Endymion*. Why, presently said *Silvie*, O wise *Adamas*, doe you presage so great a disaster? To the end, said he, that you might armee your selfe against the forces of that god, for feare, that being ouer-assured in the opinion that it is impossible, you bee not ouertaken before you are prepared. I haue heard say, that *Celadon* is so goodly, so discrete, and accomplished, that there is no perfection wanting in him which may winnedoue. If it be so, there is danger; for that the treasons of loue are so hard to discouer, that as yet, there was neuer the man that could doe it. Leaue the paine to me, said she, and onely see what you will haue me doe in this busynesse we talke of. Me thinks, said the Druyde, this warre must be made by the eye; and when I haue seene how the world goes, wee will dispose of our affaires to the least hurt that wee can; and in the meane time let vs keepe our dessigne secret.

Then *Silvie* left him to his rest, and went to seeke *Galathée*, who, with *Leonide*, was about the bed of *Celadon*, for hauing knowne he was awake, neither of them had the power to stay longer from the sight of him. The welcomes that he gaue to *Leonide*, were not small: for, for the courtesie with which she bound him, he loued and esteemed well of her, though *Silvies* humour pleased him better. Within a while after, they fell in talke of *Adamas*, commanding his Wisedome, his Wit, and Bounty: whereupon *Celadon* askeid if hee were not the Sonne of the great *Pelion*, of whom he had heard spoken so many maruailes. It is the same, answered *Galathée*, who is come expressly for your disease. O, Madame, answered

swered the shepheard, it must be a good Physician that can heale that, but, I thinke, when he shall know it, he will sooner despaire of my health, than dare to vndertake the cure. *Galathée* thought he speake of the sicknesse of his body. But, sayd she, is it possible you should thinke you are still sick? I assure my selfe, if you will, within two dayes you may leaue your bed. It may be, Madame, answered *Leonide*, hee is neuer the better for that; for sometimes we carry our sicknesse so hidden, that our selues know nothing till we be in extremity.

Their discourse had held longer, had not the Druyde come to finde them, that he might see what was necessary for his purpose. He found him well disposed for his body, for the disease had spent his fury and care to decline: but when hee speake to him, hee judged his spirit distempered, though he was not of beleefe that it was for these Nymphs: and knowing, that the wise Physician ought alwaies to apply his remedy to the euill that is ready to offer violence, hee resolued to begin his cure on *Galathée*. And on this designe, desirous, at once, to be certified of the will of *Celadon*, at night, when al the Nymphs were gone, & he tooke heed that *Meril* might not bee by, hauing shut the doore, hee speake in this sort: I thinke, *Celadon*, your astonishment is not small, to see your selfe suddenly raysed to so good a fortune as that you now possest; for I assure my selfe, it is beyond your hope, that being borne as you are, a shepheard, and bred in the villages, you now see your selfe cherisched of the Nymphs, made much of, and serued, I will not say of Ladyes, that haue beeene vsed to be commanded, but by her, that absolutely commands ouer this Countrey: A fortune, indeede, which the greatest haue desired, but whereto none could attaine but your selfe; for which you are to praise the gods, and giue them thanks, that they may continue it to you.

*Adamas* talked thus to him, that he might draw him to tell the truth of his affection; thinking, that by this meanes, making shew to approue it, he should make him best discouer it. Whom the shepheard answered with a great sigh, Father, if this be a good fortune, then must my taste bee distempered, for I neuer felt more bitter Wormewood, than that which this fortune, that you call good, hath made me taste, since I came to bee in the state wherein you see me. And how, (added the Druyde, the better to couer his craft) is it possible you should haue so small knowledge of your good, that you see not to what greatnessse this aduenture hath raysed you? Alas, answered *Celadon*, it is that which threatens a greater fall. Why? doe you feare (said *Adamas*) that this good lucke will not last? I feare, answered the shepheard, it will last longer then I desire. But wherefore is it,

that our shoope are astonied and dye, when they be long in a great water, and yet fishies delight and are nourished in it? Because, , auſwered the Druyde, it is againſt their nature.

And think you, father (ſayd he) that it is leſſe againſt the nature of a ſhepherd to liue among ſo many Ladies? I am a ſhepherd borne, and nothing can pleafe me, that is, not of mine owne condition. But is it poſſible (added the Druid) that ambition which ſeemes to be boroue with man, cannot make you part from your woods, or that beauty, whose allurements are ſo strong for a yong hatt, cannot diuert you from your former purpoſe? The ambition that every one ought to haue (ſaid the ſhepherd) is to do wel that which we are to do, and in that to bee the foremost among them of his condition, and the beauty which wee are to regard, and which ought to draw vs, is that which we may loue, not that which wee ſhould reuerence, and may not looke on but with the eie of reſpect. Why (ſayd the Druyde) do you conſecit to your ſelfe, that there is a greatneſſe among men, to which merit and vertue cannot attaine? Because (auſwered the the ſhepherd) I know that all things are to bee contained within the terimes that nature hath ſet them; and that as there is no likelihoode that a Ruby faire & perfit, though it be may becomē a Diāmód, ſo he that hopes to raise himſelfe higher, or to ſpeakē truer, to change nature, and make himſelfe other then that he is, loſes in vaine both his time and his paines.

Then the Druyde, aſtoniſhed at the conſiderations of the ſhepherd, and well pleased to ſee him ſo far remoued from the deſſins of Galathee, began againe in this ſort: Now my child, I praise the gods for that wiſe-doing which I find in you, and auſſure you that if you carry your ſelfe thus, you ſhall giue the heauens cauſe to continue to you, all ſort of felicity. Many borne vp by their vanity, haue gone out of themſelues, yþou hope more vaine then theſe that I haue propounded. But what is beſalne them? Nothin, gþut after a long and incrediblē paine, repenſance for beinſ ſo long time abuſed. You may thanke heauen, that hath giuen you this knowledg, before you haue occaſion to haue their repenſance, and you are to entreat it to preſerue you, that you may continue in the tranquillity, and ſweete life wherin you haue liued hitherto. But ſince you aſpire not to theſe greatnes nor theſe beauties, what is it then O Celadon that may ſtay you here among them? Alas (auſwered the ſhepherd) it is only the wiſe of Galathee, who holds me almoſt like a priſoner. It is veſt true, that if my ſickneſſe had permitted me, I had attempted to haue eſcaped by one meaneſ or other, though I knew the enterpriſe was full of diſſiculty; and if I could not haue the helpe of any other ſetting all ſpecks

ſpecks apart, I would haue gone away by ſorce: for Galathee held me ſo ſhort, and the Nymphs, when ſhe is not here, and little Merill, when the Nymphs cannot ſtay, that I know not which way to turne my foote, but they are at mine elbow. And when I would ſpeakē to Galathee, ſhee ſets on me with reproches in ſuch a cholē, that I muſt confeſſe I dares ſpeakē no more to her; and this abroad hath bene ſo troublousome to mee, that I may accuſe it as the principall cauſe of my diſease. Now, if you euer had pitty on a perſon afflieted, deare father, I adiuire you by the great gods, whom you ſo worthily ſerue, by your naturall bounte, and by the hoſtable memory of that great Pelion your father, to take pitty on my life, and ioynē your wiſe doine to my deſire, to ſet mee free from this offendive priſon: for ſo I may terme the ſtay I make in this place. Adamas, very glad to heare with what an affection he beſought him, embracē him, kiſſed his forehead, and after ſayd, Yes my ſonne, be auſſured I will do what you demand of me; and as ſoone as your weakeſſe will ſuffer, I will ſit you with meaſs to go hence without violence, only hold on your purpoſe, and looke to your health. And after many other diſcourses, he left him: but with ſuch contentinent, that if Adamas would haue permitted him, hee would haue riſen at that inaſtnt.

In the meane time, Leonide, that would not leauē Galathee long in the error wherein Clemente had put her, that euening when ſhe ſaw Siluie, and the litle Meril withdrawne, kneeled downe by the bed ſide, and after ſome ordinary ſpeech ſhe went on, O Madam, what newes haue I met with in this iourney? and newes which concerneſ you? and I would not for any thing but I had knowne it, to cleare your errour. And what is it, auſwered the Nymph? It is (added Leonide) there hath beeene put on you the cuſtoming practice that euer loue inuented; and me thinks you ſhould not grieue at my iourney, though I had done no other thing. That Druyde, who is the cauſe of your ſtay here, is the wickedſt man, and the moſt crafty that euer ſet himſelfe to beguile any. And then ſhe told her from point to point what ſhe had heard from Clemente's mouth, and of Polemas; and that all this practice was inuented, but to diſpoſeſſe Lindamor, and ſet Polemas in his place.

At the firſt, the Nymph ſtood a little aſtoniſhed, in the end, the loue of the ſhepherd that flattered her, perwaded, that Leonide ſpake this out of despight, and to turne her from the loue of the ſhepherd, that ſhe might poſſeſſe him alone. So that ſhee beleued nothing of that ſhee had told her: but contrarily turning into laughter, ſhe ſayd, Leonide, goe to bed, if may be, to morrow you will riſe vp moſe wiſe, and then you ſhall know

better to hide your craft; and with this word, turned to the other side, somewhat smiling: which offended *Leonide* so sore, that shee resolued to set *Celadon* at liberty, whatsoeuer it might cost her. And in this purpose, the same euening shee went to seeke her vncle, to whom shee vsed this language: Father, since you see that *Celadon* is so well, what would you haue him do here longer? I haue not concealed from you, what *Galathee* will is.

Judge what mischiefe may befall. I would haue freed the Nymph from the abuse whereto this Impostor *Climanthe* had perswaded her, but shee is so wonne to *Celadon*, that all that labour to withdraw her, are declared enemies, so that the surest way is to remoue this shepheard from thence, which cannot be done without you: for the Nymph hath such an eye to me, that I can turne no way but shee heeds me, and suspects mee. *Adamas* was somewhat astonied to heare his neece talke thus, and was of opinion, that she feared, the good will which shee bare the shepheard, was perceiued, and shee would preuent it: yet iudging that to cut off the roots of these louers, the best meanes was to remoue *Celadon*, and sayd to his neece, the sooner to discouer her plot, that he desired that she speake of aboue all things: but he knew not the meane. The meane (sayd she) is the most easie in the world, only get the cloathes of a Nymph, and dresse him in them, he is yong, and as yet hath no beard: by this deuice he may getaway vñknowne, and no body the wiser by whose helpe it was, and *Galathee* shall neu'r know whom to blame. *Adamas* found this inuention to bee good: and the sooner to execute it, resolued at that time, after the night were passed, to go seeke for such an habit, vnder pretence of seeking for remedies to heale the shepheard, giuing *Galathee* to vnderstand, that though the shepheard were freed from his feuers, yet hee was not cleere from danger of a relapse, and they must preuent it with wisedome. And communicated this dessine to *Silvie*, who approued it, prouided that hee slacked not his returne. *Celadon* was not thorowly awaked, when *Galathee*, and *Leonide* came into the chamber, in shew to know how hee did, and then *Adamas*, who knew well, seeing the great watchfulnesse of the Nymphs, that delay was dangerous, after he had asked *Celadon* some ordinary questions about his sicknesse, hee drew neere; and turning to the Nymph, wished her to permit him to enquire of some particulars which he durst not demand before her. *Galathee*, who beleueed it was concerning his sicknesse, drew aside and gaue way to *Adamas*, to acquaint the shepheard with his dessine, promising him to come within two or three dayes at the furdest. *Celadon* coniured him by the strongest prayers:

hee

he could, knowing well that without him this imprisonment would continue longer.

After he had giuen him assurance, hee went where *Galathee* was, and told her that the shepheard for the present was well: but as hee had before told her, it was to be feared lest he might relapse, and to preuent the euill, it was necessary he should go seeke that which was fit for him, and he would returne as soone as he had found them. The Nymph was well pleased with this, for on the one side shee desired the intire recovery of the shepheard: and on the other, the presence of the Druide began to trouble her, fore-seeing that she could not conuerse so freely with her beloued *Celadon*, as before shee had done, hee knew well what her purpose was: but he seemed not to heed it; and presently after dinner, hee set himselfe on the way, leauing the three Nymphs in some paine: for euery one had a differing dessine, and all three being desirous to effect it, it was necessary they should be finely deluded. That was the cause, that all three were more vsually about his bed, but *Silvie*, aboue the rest, that she might keep them from speaking in priuate to him: Yet could she not keep so good watch: but *Leonide* found a time to tell him the resolution, which shee had taken with her vncle, and then shee went on:

But tell true, *Celadon*, are you yet so without vnderstanding, that when you haue receiued this good office from me, you will remember no more that you see at this present, the loue I beare you? At least, call to your minde the wrongs that *Galathee* doth me, for your sake; and if the loue which in all others meritech loue, growing in me, cannot bring it forth in you, let me haue this contentment, to haire once from your owne mouth, that the affection of such a Nymph as I am, is not altogether distastefull to you. *Celadon*, who had already knowne this growing loue, desired it might die in the cradle: but fearing lest the despite which shee conceived, might cause in her contrary effects to the resolution which shee had taken with her vncle, he purposed to giue her soime words, that hee might not lose her altogether, and thus answered her, Faire *Leonide*, what opinion may you haue of me, if forgetting *Astrea*, whom I haue so long serued, I should begin a new amity? I speake freely to you, for I know well, you are not ignorant of what I am.

O *Celadon*, answered *Leonide*, hide not your selfe from me, I know as much of your affaires as your selfe. Then, faire Nymph, replied the shepheard, if you know it, how can you wish that I should force this loue which hath such force in my soule, that my life and my will depend of it? But since you know what I am, reade in my actions passed, and see what

remaineth in me to satisfie you, and tell me what you would haue me do? *Leonide*, at this speech was not able to hide her teares, as wise as she was: after she had considered how contrary to her duty it was to liue in this fa- shion, and that she traueld in vaine, she resolued to be mistris of her owne will; but for that it was so difficult a worke that she could not attaine to it at once, there must be some time to prepare her humours, that they might be capable to receiue the aduice of wisedome. And in this resolution she spake to him thus: Shepheard, I cannot (at this time) take the counsell that is necessary for me, to get sufficient force; I must haue leisure to gather together the powers of my soule: but remember you the offer you haue made me; for I meane to benefit my selfe by it. Their discourse had held on longer, if *Silnie* had not interrupted them, who comming vp- on them, and addreſſing her ſelfe to *Leonide*, Sister, ſaid ſhe, you know not that *Fleurial* is come, and hath ſo ouertaken the Guard of the gate, that he was with *Galathes* before we were aware. He hath giuen her letters, and I know not whence they come: But it muſt be from ſome good place, for ſhee hath changed colour twice or thrice. *Leonide* preſently doubted it was *Lindamor*, which cauſed her to leaue the ſhepheard with *Silnie*, and went to *Galathes* to know the certaintie.

Then *Silnie*, ſeeing her ſelfe alone with him, beganne to entartaine him with that courtesie, that if there had beene any place for Loue, without doubt ſhe had had it. And ſee how Loue ſports himſelfe with contrary- ing our deſſignes! The other two Nymphs, with all their Art, ſought it, and could not eſſeit it; and ſhe that regarded it not, came neerer the mark than the others. By that, a man may know how free Loue is, ſince he will be tyed to nothing, but what pleaſes him. Whiileſt *Celadon* was in this thought, *Silnie*, that ſought for nothing more than occaſion to ſet him into diſcourse, becauſe ſhe delighted much in his conuerſation, and to heare him ſpeak, ſaid, You will not thinke, ſhepheard, what pleaſure this hap to haue knowne you, brings to mee; and I ſwear to you, if *Galathes* would beleeue me, ſince her brother went out of this Countrey, we haue had your company more than heretofore. For, for aught that I ſee in you, I thinke there is pleaſure in your viſtages, and your honest liberties, ſince you are exempted from Ambition, and conſequently from troubles, liuing without craft, and without backe-biting, which are the foure plagues that our life brings. Wile Nymph (anſwered the ſhepheard) this that you ſay, is more than true, if we were out of the power of Loue; but you muſt know, that the ſame effects, which Ambition bringeth forth in Courts, Loue cauſeth to growe in our viſtages. For the enuy of a Riuall, is

is no leſſe than of a Courtier: and the artiſciall practices of Louers and Shepheards giue no place to others. And that is the cauſe that ſlaundre- rers retaine the ſame authority among vs, to make good their owne a- ctions, as well as among you. It is true, that we haue one aduantage, that instead of two enemies that you haue, which is Loue and Ambition, we haue but one; and from thence it comes, that there be ſome things parti- cularly among vs, which we may call happy, but none (as I ſuppoſe) a- mong Courtiers; for they that loue not at all, neede not auoyde the allu- rements of Ambition: and whoso is not ambitious, ſhall not for it haue his ſoule frozen, to reſiſt the flames of many faire eies: ſo that ha- uing but one enemy, we may the more eaſily reſiſt him, as *Silander* hath done hitherto, a ſhepheard indeeđe replete with many perfecti- ons, yet more happy (a man may ſay, without offence,) than wiſe: for, though this may (in ſome ſort) proceed out of his wisedome, yet this is it that I hold, That it is a great happiness, neuer to haue met with a beauty that pleaſed him: and hauing neuer found the beauty that drew him, he neuer had familiarity with any ſhepheardesſe, which is the cauſe that he ſo preſerues his liberty, because I thinke (for my part) that if one loue not elſewhere, it is impoſſible for him to conuerſe long with an a- miſſible beauty, but he muſt loue it. *Silnie* anſwered him, I haue ſo ſmall knowledge in this learning, that I muſt reſerue my ſelfe to what you ſay: yet doe I thinke, that it muſt be ſome other thing than beauty that cauſes loue; otherwiſe, the Lady that is loued of one, ſhould be ſo of all. There be many anſwers (ſaid the ſhepheard) to this obiection. For all beauties are not ſcene of one eie, ſo that as among colours, there be that please ſome, and diſplease others, ſo we may ſay of beauties; for all eyes doe not iudge alike: beſides that, theſe faire looke not on all with the ſame eie, and one ſhall pleafe ſuch whom ſhe indeuoureth to pleafe, and an- other quite contrary, whom ſhe ſeekes not to be pleaſing vnto. But, a- bove all theſe reaſons, mee thinkes, that of *Silander* was very good, when one demaunded of him, why he was not in loue? He anſwered, he neuer yet found his Loueſtōne, and when he found ſuch an one, he knew well, he muſt infaſtly loue as others did. And (anſwered *Silnie*) whom meant he by the Loueſtōne? I know not (replied the ſhepheard) whether I can better inſtruct you: For he is well ſtudied, and among vs we hold him for a man of great vnderſtanding. Hee ſayes hee learned it from the Druydes, that when the great God formed all our ſoules, hee touched e- very of them with a piece of a Loueſtōne, and that after, hee put all thoſe pieces into a place apart; and likewiſe thoſe of the women, after hee had touched

touched them, he locked them into another store-house by it selfe. After, when hee sent the soules into the body, hee brought foorth those of women, where are the loue-stones, which touched those of the men, and those of men to those of women, and caused them to fasten each to other. If there be wicked soules, they take more pieces, which they hide. It happens, that as soone as the soule is in the body, and that it meeteth with it that is his loue-stone, it is impossible but hee should loue: and from hence proceed all the effects of loue. For, as for them that are beloued of many, it is for that they were theeuish, and had taken more pieces; as for that which loues every one, and is not beloued, it is for that he had his loue-stone, and she had not hers.

Many oppositions were made, when he spake these things: but hee answered them all very well. Among others, I said, But what would he say, that diuers times one shepheard loues diuers shepheardeſſes? That is, said he, for that the piece of loue which touched it, being among others when the god mixed them, brake, and being in diuers pieces, they all, as many as there were, drew to them that soule.

But withall, marke, that those persons which are taken with diuers loues, loue not much: that is, for that these little pieces, beeing separated, haue not that force as if they were vntied. Moreouer, he said, that hence it comes, that we see often some in loue with others, which in our eyes, haue nothing amiable in them: whence proceede likewise, those strange loues that fall out sometimes, that a *Gaule* bred vp among the most beaſtfull Ladyes, came to loue a barbarous stranger. It was *Diane* that asked him what he sayd of *Tymon of Aibens*, that never loued any, nor any loued him? His piece of loue, said he, either was in the great gods Storehouse when he came into the world; or she which had it, dyed in the cradle; or before that *Tymon* was borne, or of yeeres to know her. So that euer since, when we see any that is not beloued, wee say, his piece of Loue was forgotten. And what sayd he (said *Silvie*) of that, that no man loued *Tymon*? That sometimes (answered *Celadon*) the great god reckoned the ſtones that remained, and finding the number disagreeing, because ſome of the theeuish soules had taken more (as I haue told you) that hee might ſet the pieces in their euēn number, the soules which were then ready to enter into the body, carried none with them. And thence it comes, that ſometimes we ſee ſhepheardeſſes compleate enough, which are ſo neglected, that none loue them. But the gracious *Corilas* asked him a question concerning himſelfe at that time, what hee would ſay of one, that hauing long time loued, came to leaue her and to loue another. *Silvie*

*Silvie* answered to this, that the piece of Loue that changed, was broken, and that that which he first loued, ſhould haue had a greater piece than the other for whom he left her. And as when we ſee yron betweene two loadſtones, ſuffers it ſelfe to be drawne by that which hath moſt ſtrength, ſo the ſoule leaues it ſelfe to bee carried by the ſtronger part of his loue. Truly, ſaid *Silvie*, this ſhepheard muſt be gentle, hauing ſo good conceiſſes, but tell me, I pray you, what he is. It will be hard for me (answered *Celadon*) to tell, for himſelfe knowes not; yet wee hold him to be of a good house, according to the iudgement that may be made of his good qualities: for you muſt know, that it is ſome yeeres ſince he came to dwell in our village, with ſmal meaneſſes, & without knowledge of himſelfe, but that he ſayd hee came from the Lake *Leman*, where he was bred a childe.

So it was, that after hee was knowne, every one helped him: beſides that, hauing knowledge of herbes, and of the nature of beaſts, the beaſts profited ſo well vnder his hands, that there is none that desires not to put them to him, whereof hee makes ſo good an account, that beſides the profit that he makes thereof, there are few that gratifie him not with ſomething, ſo that at this houre he is in good eaſe, and may call himſelfe rich: for, O faire Nymph, we want not much to make vs ſo: for that nature being contented with a few things, we ſeeke after nothing but to loue according to it; we are as ſoone rich as content, and our contentment being eaſily compassed, our riches are quickly gotten. You are (ſayd *Silvie*) more happy then we.

But you told me of *Diane*: I know her not, but by ſight: tell me, I pray you, who was her mother? That is *Bellinde*, answered he, wife of the wife *Celion*, who dyed young. And *Diane*, ſayd *Silvie*, what is ſhee? and what is her humour? She is, ſaid *Celadon*, one of the faireſt ſhepheardeſſes of *Lignon*; and, if I were not partiall for *Afrea*, I would ſay ſhee were the faireſt: for, in truth, beſides that ſhee is to the eye, ſhee hath ſo many beauties in her ſpirit, that there is nothing ſuperfluouſ nor defeſtive. Many times, three or four of vs ſhepheards, haue beeene together, to conſider of her, not knowing what perfection might be wiſhed for, that ſhe had not: for though ſhe loue nothing of loue, yet loues ſhee all vertue with ſo ſincere a will, that ſhe binds more to her by that ſort, then others moſt violent affections. And how, ſayd *Silvie*, is ſhe not ſerved of many? The deceit, answered *Celadon*, which the father of *Filidas* did her, is the hinderance that there are none now, and indeede, it was one of the moſt notable that euer I heard of. If it were not painefull to you, added *Silvie*, I would bee glad to leaue it of you, and also to know who this *Celion* was,

was, and who this *Bellinde*. I feare, answered the shepheard, the discourse will be so long, that it will trouble you. On the contrary, said the Nymph, We know not better how to employ the time, while *Galabee* readeas the letters that she went to receiue. Then, to satisfie your commandement, answered he, I will doe it as briefly as I can: and then hee held on in this sort:

## The History of Celion and Bellinde.

IT is true, faire Nymph, that vertue spoyled of all other ornament, ceaseth not to be of it selfe louely, hauing so many allurements, with which as soone as the soule is touched, it must bee beloued, and followed: but when this vertue meetes with a body that is faire, it is not onely pleasing, but admirable, for that the eyes and spirit are ravished in the contemplation and vision of this beauty: which shall bee manifested by the discourse which I meane to make you of *Bellinde*.

Know then, that neare the riuier of *Lignon*, there was a very honest shepheard, named *Philemon*, who after hee had beeene long married, had a daughter, whom he called *Bellinde*, who comming to growth, made as great a shew of beauty in her spirit, as might be seene in her body. Hard by her house lodged another shepheard, called *Celion*, with whom neighbourhoud had tyed a strong bond of amity: and fortune unwilling to doe more for the one then for the other, gaue him likewise at the same time a daughter, whose youth gaue great promise of future beauty; she was called *Amarante*. The friendship of the fathers caused that of the daughters to encrease, by frequenting together: for they were bred vp together from the cradle, and when their age permitted them, they led their flocks alike, & at night brought them in companies to their lodgings. But because, as they grew in body, their beauty likewise encreased to the view of the eye, there were many shepheards that sought their loue, whose seruices and afections could not obtaine more of them, then that they were received with courtesie.

It fell out, that *Celion*, a young shepheard of those quarters, hauing lost a sheep, came to seek it among *Bellinde*s flock, whither it was strayed. She restor it with such courtesie, that the recovery of his sheep was the beginning of the losse of himselfe; and from that time he began to feele with what force two faire eyes were able to offend: for before he was so ignorant, that the very thought of it never came into his soule. But what ignorance souuer was in him, it brought him to that passe, that it made him by his wounding

*Lib. 10.*  
ing know what his disease was, and the onely Physician from whom hee was to haue his health. So that *Bellinde* by his aches perceiued it almost as soon as himselfe: for, at the first he knew not what to say his designe was: but his affect on growing with his age, came to that greatness, that hee found the discommodity in good earnest, and then acknowledged it, being constrained to change the pastimes of his youth into a very curiosus pursuite. And *Bellinde* on the other side, though she were serued of many, receiued his affection aboue any other, yet no otherwise, then if he had bene her brother, which she made appeare one day, when he thought to haue found the commodity to declare his good will. She kept her flocke along the riuier of *Lignon*, and beheld her beauty in the water. Whereupon the shepheard taking occasion, said to her, holding her an amorous fashion his hand before his eyes, Take heede, faire shephearde, withdraw your eyes from this water, feare you not the dangers that others haue runge into by such actions. Why say you so, answered *Bellinde*, what as yet understood him not? Ah then, said the shepheard, faire and dissembling shephearde, you represent within this happy riuier, more beauty then *Narcissus* in the fountaine.

At these words *Bellinde* blushed, and that encreased her beauty the more, yet shee answered, Since whence, *Celion*, haue you wished mee so well? without doubt, it is well done of you. To wish you well, said the shepheard, it is long time since I did it, and you are to beleue, that this will shall be limited by no other termes then that of my life.

Then the shephearde, casting down her head on this side, said, I make no doubt of your amity, receiuing it with the same good will, that I offer you mine. Whereto *Celion* presently answerd, Let me kisse that faire hand by way of thankes, for so great a good, and for an earnest of the saffull seruice, whiche *Celion* is to render you the rest of his life. *Bellinde*, knew as well by the seruour wherewith he vttered these words, as by the kisses which he imprinted on her hand, that he figured to himselfe his amity, of another qualitie then she meant; and because shee would not haue him lie in this error, *Celion* (sayd she) you are far from that you thinke: you cannot sooner banish me from your company, then by this meanes, if you desire that I should continue the amity I haue promised you, continue likewise yours, with the same honesty that your vertue promises me: otherwise, henceforth I breake all familiarity with you, and protest neuer to loue you. I may as the custome of them that are beloued, is, abuse you: but I vse it not, because I freely wish you should know, that if you lie otherwise then you ought, you are neuer to haue hope in my amity.

mity. She added yet other words, which so astonished Celion, that he knew not what to answere: Only he cast himselfe on his knees, and without other discourse, with this submission demanded pardon, and then protested to her, that his amity proceeded from her, and that she might rule it as that which she had bred. If you vse your selfe thus (replied then Bellinde) you shall bind me to loue you, otherwise you shall constraine me to the contrary. Faire shephearde (replied he) my affection is borne, and such as it is, it must liue, for it cannot die but with mee, so that I cannot well remedy it but by time: yet to promise you, that I will study to make such as you command, I sweare it vnto you, and in the meane time, I desire neuer to be honored with your good fauour, if in all my life you knew any action, that for the quality of my affection may displease you.

At last the shepheard consented to bee beloved, on condition shée might know nothing in him, which might offend her honesty. So these louers began an amity, which lasted very long, with such satisfaction to them both, that they had cause to reioyce therein for their fortune. Sometimes, if the yong shepheard were letted, hee sent his brother Diamis to her, who vnder the colour of some fruite, brought her letters from his brother. She often returned answere with such good will, that hee had cause to be contented, and this affection was carried with that prudence, that few perceiued it. Amaranthe, though she were ordinarily with them, was ignorant of it, had it not bene that by hap she found a letter which her companions had lost; and see, I beseech you, what the effect was, and how dangerous a thing it is for a yong soule to come neere these fires! Vnill this time, the shepheardesse had not, not only the least feeling of loue; but not a thought to be beloved; and as soone as shée saw this letter, were it for that she bare some enuy to her companion, whom shée esteind not to be the fairer, & yet shée saw her often wooed by this honest shepheard, were it for that shée was of an age which is proper to such burning, that they can no sooner come neere the fire, but they feele it, were it for that this letter had so lively heates, that shée had no yce to resist them. So it was, that shée tooke a certaine desire not to loue, for loue it may be, would not attache her at the first in extremity, but to be loued; & serued of some shepheard of worth; and in this point, shée read the letter often-times, which was thus written in it.

#### Celions letter to Bellinde.

Faire shepheardesse, if your eyes were as full of variety, as they are to cause loue, the sweetnes which they promise at the first, would make me adore them, with

with as much of contentment, as they haue produced in me of vaine hope. But so far are they from performance of their deceifull promises, that they will not so much as confesse them, and are so wide from healing my hurs, that they will not call themselves authors. Yet can they hardly deny it, if they consider well who she is, having no likelihood that any other beauty then theirs could do so much. And yet, as if you had a purpose to equall your cruelty to your beauty, you haue ordained, that the affection which you haue caused to be borne, shall cruelly die in me. O God, was there ever a more unpitiffull mother? But I, who held more deare that which comes from you, then my life, being unable to suffer so great an injustice, am resolued to carry this affection with me into the grave, hoping that the beatuens mould at last with my patience, will bind you at sometimes to be as pitifull, as you are deare, and cruel to me for the present.

Amaranthe read this letter ouer diuers times, and without heed taking dranke vp the sweete poyson of loue, no otherwise then one weary sufferer him selfe by little to fall asleepe. If her thought set before her eyes the face of the shepheard, oh! how full of beauty found shée it to be? if his behaviour, how pleasing did it seeme? if his spirit, how admirable did shée judge it? briefly, shée saw him so perfect, that shée thought her companion happy to be beloved of him. Then taking againe the letter, shée read it ouer: but not without much pawing on the subiects that touched her most at the heart. And when shée came to the end, and that shée sawe the reproach of cruel, shée flattered her desires, which lately borne, call for feeble hopes as their Nurces, with opinion that Bellinde, as yet loued him not, and so shée might more easily winne him. But the poore soule heeded not, that this was the first letter that he had written to her, and that since many things might be changed. The amity which shée bare to Bellinde, sometimes drew her backe; but presently Loue ouertopped that amity. At last, the conclusion was, that shée wrot such a Letter to Celion.

#### Amaranthes Letter to Celion.

YOur perfections may excuse my errore, and your courtesie receive the amity which I offer you. I wish euill to my selfe, if I loue any thing more than you. But for your merit, I make my glory, whence would proceed my shame for any other. If you refuse what I present you, it must be for want of spirit or courage. From which of these two it is, it shalbe as dishonourable to you as to me, to be refused.

Shee gaue this letter her selfe to *Celion*, who not able to imagine what she would, as soone as hee was in a priuate place, he read it, but with no lesse astonishment than disdaine, and had he not knowne her to be infinitely beloued of his mistris, hee would not haue vouchsafed her an answer, yet fearing it might offend her, he sent this answere by his brother.

*Celions answer to Amaranthe.*

*I* know not what there is in me to moue you to loue me, yet I account my selfe as happy, that such a shepheardesse will dayne to regarde me, as I am unfortunate, in not being able to receive such a fortune. I would it pleased my destiny, that I could as freely give my selfe to you, as I am wanting in power. Faire Amaranthe. I should think my selfe the happiest that liueth, to liue in your seruice, but being no longer at mine owne disposition, accuse not, if it please you, neither my spirit, nor my courage, of that whereto necessary compells me. It shall always be much to my contentment, to be in your good grace, but yet more grieuous to you, to note at all times the weakenesse of my affection. So that I am enforced by your vertue to beseech you to turne this ouer-ardone passion into a moderate amitie, which I enteaine with all my heare. For this is not a thing impossible; and that which is not so, cannot be ouer-hard to me for your service.

This answer had beeene sufficient to haue diuerted her, if Loue had not beene of the nature of powder, which is then most violent, when it is most restrained. For against those former difficulties she opposed some sort of reason, that *Celion* ought not so soone to leaue *Bellinde*, it would be too great lightnesse, if at the first summons hee should be gone. But Time caught her to her cost to deceiue her selfe. For after that day the shepheard disdained her so that he shunned her, and often chose rather to be absent from *Bellinde*, than to be forced to see her. It was then that so easily she shipp'd her selfe on so dangerous a sea, and so notable for the ordinary shipwracks of them that ventured on them, and not long able to beare out this displeasure, sh: grew so sad, that shee fled from her companions, and the places wherein before she delighted, and at last, fell sicke in good earnest. Her deare *Bellinde* went presently to see her, and vna-wares desired the shepheard to beare her company. But as the sight of the good we cannot get, doth but increase the desire; so this visitation did but make *Amaranthes* euill worse.

The night being come, all the shepheardesses withdrew, and there stayed but *Bellinde* with her, so sorry for the euill of her companion (for she

she knew not what it was) that she tooke no rest; and when shee asked her of it, for answer she had nothing but sighes. Whereat *Bellinde* at the first being astonied, in the end, offended with her, said, 'I never thought, *Amaranthe* had so little loued *Bellinde*, that she could haue concealed any thing from her; but by that I see I was deceiued. And whereas I might haue said heretofore, I had a friend, I may now say, I loue a dissembler. *Amaranthe*, who for shame had shut vp her mouth vntill then, seeing they were alone; and being pressed with such an affection, resolued to trie the last remedy, which she thought fittest for her defence. Casting from her all shame, as farre off as she could, twice or thrice, she opened her mouth to tell her all, but her words died so betweene her lippes, that this was all she could do, to bring foorth these broken words, laying her hand ouer her eyes, as not daring to looke on her to whom she spake. My deare companion (sayd she) for so they called themselves: Our amity will not suffer me to hide any thing from you, knowing well, that though it be told you, what concernes me, shal be as carefully kept secret by you, as by my selfe. Excuse then, I beseech you, the extreme error, which to satisfie our amity, I am constrained to discouer to you. You aske me what my grieve is, and whence it comes; know, that it is Loue borne from the perfectiōns of a shepheard. But alas! at this word ouercome with shame and displeasure, turning her head another way, she held her peace with a torrent of teares.

The astonishment of *Bellinde* could not make her conjecture; yet to give her courage to make an end, she said; I did not thinke that a passion so common to all, would haue brought you this trouble. To loue, is a thing ordinary; but, that it is from the perfections of a shepheard, this happens but to persons of iudgement. Tell me then who this happy man is. Then *Amaranthe* taking her speech againe, with a sigh drawne from the depth of her heart, said; But alas! this shepheard loues else-where. And who is he, said *Bellinde*? It is (answered she) since you will know, your *Celion*. I say yours (my companion) because I know he loues you, and that this sole amity makes him disdaine mine. Excuse my folly, and without seeming to know it, leaue me alone to complaine, and endure mine euill. The wise *Bellinde* was so ashamed when she heard this discouer of the error of her companion, that though she loued *Celion*, as well as any might be loued, yet she resolued on this occasion to give prooef of that she was not. And therefore turning towards her, she said: Indeed, *Amaranthe*, I suffer in paine more than I can speake of, to see you so transported in this affection; for it seemeth, our sex will not permit vs so insire authority.

authority of loue; but since you are in these termes, I thanke God it lights in such a place, that I may giue prooef of what I am to you. I loue *Celion*, I will not deny it, as if hee were my brother. But I loue you also as my sister, and I wish (for I know hee will obey me) that he loue you more than mee; rest your selfe on mee, and reioyce you alone, prouided, you acknowledge when you are recovered, what *Bellinde* hath beeene vnto you.

After some other like discourse, the night constrained *Bellinde* to withdraw, leauing *Amaranthe* with such contentment, that forgetting her sadnessse, in few dayes shee recovered her former beauty. In the meane time *Bellinde* was not without paine, who studying for some meane to make her purpose knowne to *Celion*, found at last as fit a commodity as she wished. By fortune she met him, as he was playing with his Ram in the great pasture, where the greatest part of the shepheards fed their flockes. This beast was the leader of the troopes, and so well taught, that he seemed to understand his master when he spake to him. Whereat the shepheardeesse took such pleasure, that she stayed long at it. At last she would trie if it knew her as well as him; but it was much more ready to euerie thing shee willed; whereupon drawing aside from the company, shee said to *Celion*: What thinke you, brother, of the acquaintance betwene your Ramme, and me? It is the pleasantest that euer I sawe.

Such as it is, faire shepheardeesse (sayd he) if you will do me the honor to receiue it, it is yours. But you are not to wonder that he giues you all obesiance: for he knowes well, I would else disclaime him for mine, hauing learned by so many songs which hee hath heard of mee, as I passe vp and downe, that I was more yours then mine owne. This well expresses (saith the shepheardeesse) the obedience of your Ram, which I wil not receiue to to bee emploied, more for you then mee: but since you giue mee so intire power ouer you, I will try it, by ioyning to a commandement a most affectionat prayer. There is nothing (answered the shepheard) which you may not command me. Then *Bellinde*, thinking she had found the commodity she sought for, pursued her discourse thus: from the day that that you assured me of your amity, I judged the same good will to be in you, so also it bindeth mee, to loue and honor you, more then any person liuing. Now, though I say thus to you, I would not haue you thinke that I haue diminished this good will: for it shall accompany mee to my graue: and yet it may be you would do it, if I had not forewarned you: but bind me by beleevung that my life, and not my amity may diminish. These words put *Celion* into much paine, not knowing whereto they tended, at last

last hee answered, that hee attended her will, with great ioy and great feare; with ioy, for that he could imagine nothing more beneficial to him, then the honor of her commandements; and with feare, for that he knew not for what cause she threatened him: yet death it selfe could not be vnto welcome to him, if it besell him by her commandement. Then *Bellinde* held on:

Since, besides your sayings at this time, you haue alwayes giuen mee that witnessse of this assurance which you make mee, that with reason I cannot doubt; I will make no more difficulty, not to intreate, but to coniure *Celion* by all the amity with which he fauours his *Bellinde*, to obey her at this time. I will not command him a thing impossible, much lesse draw him from the affection which he beares me: rather on the contrary I will, if it may be, that he encrease it more and more. But before I passe further, let me know, I beseech you, if euer your amity hath bene of other quality then it is now. *Celion*, then shewing a countenance lesse troubled, then that which before the doubt had constrained him to haue, answered, that he began to hope well, hauing receiued such assurance, that to satisfie her demand, hee would againe auow that hee hath loued her with the same affections and passions, and with the same desires that youth did vsually produce in hearts transported furthest by loue; and that therein he would not except any one, that since her commandement had such power ouer him, it had got the like ouer his passion, that his sincere amity had so far surpassed his loue, that he did not thinke hee should offend a sister, to loue her with that mind. On my faith, brother (replied the shepheardeesse) for so I will hold you the remainder of my life, you so bind me by liuing thus with mee, that neuer any of your actions euer got more ouer my soule then this. But I cannot see you longer in paine. Know then, that that which I would haue of you, is onely, that preseruing inuiolably this good amity which you now beare me, you place your loue on one of the fairest shepheardeesses of *Lignor*. You may say this is a strange office for *Bellinde*; yet if you consider that she, of whom I speake, would haue you for her husband, and that she is, after you, the person whom I most loue, for it is *Amaranthe*, I assure my selfe you will not wonder at it. She hath intreated, and I command you by all the power I haue ouer you.

She made haste to giue him this commandement, fearing that if she staled long, she should not haue the power to resist the supplications which she foresaw. What thinke you, faire Nymph, became of this poore *Celion*? he grew pale like a dead man, and so besides himselfe, that hee could

not for a good while bring forth a word. At last, when he could speake with such a voyce as they haue that are in the midst of punishment, he cryed out, Ah, cruell Bellinde, haue you preserued my life till now, to take it from me with such inhumanity? This commandement is too cruel, to let me liue, and my affection too great, to let mee die without despaire. Alas, suffer me to dye: but let me die faithfull: that if there be no meane to recover *Amaranche*, but by my death, I may sacrifice my self most willingly for her health: the change of this commandement shall be no lesse witness that I am beloued of you, then whatsoeuer you shall be able to do to me. *Bellinde* was moued, but not changed. *Celion* (sayd shee) let vs leaue all these idle words, you shall giue me lesse occasion to beleue what you say to me, if you will not satisfie the first request, which I make you. Cruell, presently sayd the afflicted *Celion*, if you will that I change this amity, what power haue you more to comand me? but if you wil not that I chage it, how is it possible to loue vertue and vice? and if it be not possible, why for prooef of my affection, will you haue a thing which cannot be? Pitty thought to overcome her; and though she had much paine for the griefe of the shepheard, yet was it some contentment which could not be paralleled, to know her selfe so perfectly beloued of him, that shee loued so deare; and if may bee, haue got iudging ouer her resolution, had in her booke that shee would put from *Amaranche* all opinion that shee was attainted with her euile: though she loued the shepheard, and was well beloued, yet she enforced her pitty, which already had brought forth somē tears into her eyes, to returne into her heart, without giving knowledge that it was come in the end, that shee might not fall againe into the same paine, she went away, and at her departing, she sayd; Account of me, as pleases you, I am resolued never to see you, vntill you haue effected my praier and your promise; and thinke that this resolution shall ouer-lie your obstinacy. If *Celion* were besides himselfe, seeing himselfe so farre from all consolacion and resolution, he may iudge that hath loued. So it was, that hee stood two or three dayes like a man lost, running into the woods, and flying from all those whom formerly he had conuersed with. At last an old shepheard, a great friend of his fathers, one indeed that was very wise, and who had alwayes loued *Celion* passing well, seeing him in this case, and doubting there was no passion strong enough to worke such effects, but loue, so stred him on all sides, that he made him discourse his paine, whereto he gaue some asswagement by his good counsell: for in his youth he had often passed thorow the same straights. And at last, seeing him a little tractable, he mocked at him, for that he had such paine for

so small a matter, telling him that the remedy was so easie, that hee might be ashamed, that it shoulde bee knyghte, that *Celion* esteemed wist by every man, and a person of courage, should haue so little vnderstanding, that hee knew not how to resolute in an accident that was not very difficult, or at the worst, could not dissemble; and then hee went on: But it had bene fit, that at the beginning you had made these difficulties, for so she shall thinke your affection extreme, and this shall tie her to loue you the more: but since you haue made that demonstration, it wil suffice that to content her, you make shew of that which shee commands. This counsell at last was receiued of *Celion*, and executed as it was propounded. It is true that he wrote this letter to *Bellinde* before.

*Celions letter to Bellinde.*

*I*f I haue deserved to be so roughly used, as I haue bene by you, I choose rather to dye, then to suffer it: but since it is to your contentment, I received it with little more pleasure, then if in exchange you had awarded mee death: notwithstanding since I am dedicated to you, it is reasonable that you should absolutely dispose of me. I will endeavour then to obey you: but remember you, that so long as this constraint lasteth, so many dayes of my life must bee crossed out: for I can never call it life, that brings more griefe then death. Abridge it then, rigourous shephearde, if there be any one sparke, or of amity, but eu'en of pitty.

It was impossible, but *Bellinde* must haue feeling of these words, which shee knew came from an entire affection, but it was not possible for these words to diuert her from her desigge. She aduertised *Amaranche*, that the shepheard should loue her, & that her health only kept back the knowledge of it. This aduertisement hastened her recovery so, that she gaue prooef, that for the health of the body, the health of the minde is most profitable. How extreme was this constraint to *Celion*, and what paine did he endure? It was such, that he waxed leane, and so changed, that he might not be knowne. But behold what the severitie was of this Shephearde! It was not sufficient to handle *Celion* thus: for iudging that *Amaranche* had yet some suspition of their amity, shee resolued to push those affaires so forward, that neither of them both might gaine say it. Every man saw the apparent suit that the shepheard made to *Amaranche*: for it was openly declared, and the father of the shepheard knowing the commendable vertues of *Celion*, and how much honoured his familie had alwaies beeene, did not mislike this suite.

One day *Bellinde* desirous to sound him, propounded it as a friend, and he that judged it fit, agreed willingly to it: and this marriage was farre forward without the knowledge of *Celion*. But when he perceiued it, he could not be letted from finding a meane to talke with *Bellinde*, to giue her such reproches, that she was almost ashamed: and the shepheard seeing he must vse other remedy than words, ranne presently to the best, that was, to his father, to whom he made this speech: I shall be very sorry to disobey you at any time, and lesse in this than any other. I see, you like well of the alliance of *Amarante*: you may well know, that there is not a shepheardesse that I affect more: yet I loue her for a mistris, but not for a wife; and I beseech you command me not to tell the cause. The father at this speech, suspected that he had found some bad condition in the shepheardesse, and in his soule commended his sonnes wisedome that had that command ouer his affections: so that blowe was broken: and for that the thing was so farre passed, that many knew it; many also asked why it proceeded so coldly? the father could not choose but say somewhat to his most familiars, and they to others, that at last it came to *Amarante*, who at the first tormented her selfe much, but afterward setting before her selfe what her folly was, to seeke to make him loue her by force, by little and little she fell off, and the first occasion that shee sawe fit and conuenient to marry her selfe, shee tooke hold on. So these louers were eased of a burden so hard to be borne. But this was not, but that they might be ouer-charged with another much more heauy.

*Bellinde* was now of age to be married, and *Philemon* infinitely desirous to bestow her, to haue in his old dayes the contentment to behold himselfe renewed in that which might come of her. Hee would haue received *Celion*; but *Bellinde* that shunned marriage even as death, had forbidden the shepheard to speake, onely shee had promised him, that if shee were constrainyd to marry, shee would giue him notice of it, that hee might demaund her: which was the cause, that *Philemon* beholding the coldnesse of *Celion*, would not offer her vnto him. And in the meane time *Ergaste*, a principall shepheard of that Countrey, and who was well esteemed of every one for his commendable vertues, procured that shee was demaunded; and because hee would not haue it vented before hee were assured, he which managed the busynesse, dealt so secretly and waryly, as the promise of marriage was as soone knowne as it was demaunded. For *Philemon* assuring himselfe of the obedience of his daughter, bound himselfe by word, and after told her of it.

At the first shee found the resolution hard which shee was to take, because he was a man whom shee had neuer seene: yet that good spirit that neuer stoopes vnder the burden of misfortune, raysed vp it selfe presently, ouercomming that displeasure, and would not suffer onely her eye to giue signe of sorrow for that consideration. But she could neuer obtaine this ouer her selfe for *Celion*: and of necessity, her teares must pay the errour of her ouer-obstinate hatred of mariage. So it was, that to satisfie (in some sort) her promise, she aduertised the poore shepheard, that *Philemon* would marry her. On the sudden, having the permission so much desired, hee so sollicited his father, that the same day he speake with *Philemon*.

But now was no time, for which the father of *Bellinde* was much grieved, for hee loued him better than *Ergaste*. O God! what was the sorrow when he knew the award of his misfortune? hee went out of the house, and ceased not, vntill he found out the shepheardesse. At the meeting he could not speake, but his face manifested well enough what *Philemon* answer was. And though she stood in as great need of good counsell as he, and strength to support this blowe; yet would she declare her selfe as wel vanquished by this displeasure, as she had alwayes gloriied to be in all others. But likewise would she not appeare to be so insensible, but the shepheard might haue some knowledge that shee fel her cuill, and that it displeased her. Whereupon she demaunded, to what the demand which hee made to her father amounted? The shepheard answered her with the same words that *Philemon* had said to him, adding so many complaints and desperate laments, that shee had beene a Rocke, if shee had not beeene moued. Yet shee interrupted him, fighting against her selfe with more vertue than is credibl, and told him, that complaints are proper to weake spirits, and not to persons of courage: That he did himselfe great wrong, and her also, to vse that language. And (sayd she) at last, what is become of that good resolution which you said you would haue against all accidents, but the change of my amity? and can you haue an opinion, that any thing can shake it? Do you not see that these words can not boote vs any thing, but to make them that haue vs conceiu an euill opinion of vs? For Gods sake do not set a staync in my fore-head, which with such paine I haue hitherto auoyded: and since there is none other remedy, pacifie your selfe, as I doe; and (it may be) the Heauens will turne all things more to our contentment, than at this time wee are permitted to wish for. For my part I wil breake this misfortune as much as I can possibly.

But if there be no remedy, yet must not we be without resolution, rather let vs part asunder.

These last words brought the despaire of all, making him thinke, that this great courage proceeded from small amity. If it were as easie for me, answered the shepheard, to resolute against this accident, as you, I would judge my selfe vnworthy to be beloued; for so feeble an amity cannot merit so great happinesse. Well, for end and reward of my seruices, you giue me a resolution in the assured losse which I see of you, and secretly to say to me, that I must not despaire, though I see you become anothers. Ah Bellinde, with what eye will you see this new friend? With what heart can you loue him? And with what fauors will you entertaine him, since your eye hath a thousand times promised, that it would looke on none other with loue but me; and since this heart hath sworne to me, that it could never loue any but me; and since loue hath destined your fauours to no lesse affection then mine? Well, you command mee to leaue you: to obey you, I will doe so; for I will not at the end of my life, beginne to disobey. But that which makes me vndertake it, is, to know assuredly, that the end of my life shall not happen, before the end of your amity; & though I call my selfe the most vnhappy that liues, yet I cherish my fortune the more, for that it hath presented vnto me such an occasiō, to make my loue knowne to you, that you may not doubt of it: and yet I shall not be satisfied in my selfe, if the last moment that remaines, be not employed in assuring you. I pray the heauen (see what my amity is!) that in this new election, it fill you with as much happinesse, as you cause in me despaire. Liue happy with Ergaste, and receive him with as great contentement, as I haue had will to doe you seruice, if my dayes would haue permitted me, that this new affection, full of pleasures, which you promise to your selfe, may accompany you to your graue, as I assure you, that my faichfull amity shall close mine eyes for your sake, with extreme griefe.

That Bellinde let Celion talke so long, it was for feare, that speaking, her teares would doe the office of words, and that, that would encrease the griefe of the shepheard, or that it would giue prooef of the small power she had ouer her selfe. Proud beauty, that louest rather to be iudged to haue too little loue, then too little resolution! But at last, finding her strengthned enough to giue answer, she sayd, Celion, you thinke you giue me prooef of your amity, and you doe the contrary: for, how haue you loued me, hauing so euil an opinion of me? If since this last accident you haue conceiued it, beleeue the affection was not great, which could so readily suffer a change: But if you had no euill opinion of me, how is it possible you

you should beleeue that I haue loued you, and that now I loue you no more? For Gods sake haue pitty on my fortune, and conspire not with her to encrease my sorrow: consider what small likelihood there is, that Celion, whom I loue aboue the rest of the world, and whose life pleases me as much as mine owne, may bee changed for an Ergaste, who is vnuknowne to me, and in whose place I chooſe rather to espouse my tombe; that if I be forced, it is the comandement of my Father, whom my honour will not suffer me to contradict. But is it possible you shold not remember the protestations I haue so often made to you, that I would not marry my selfe? And you ceased not to loue mee: whence hath it this change? For, if without marrying me, you haue loued me, why can you not now loue me, without marrying mee, hauing an husband who can forbide mee to haue a brother whom I may alwayes loue with that amity I ought? Good will holds mee neerer to you then is permitted me. Farewell, my Celion: liue and loue me, who will loue you even to my end, what soeuer becomes of Bellinde.

At this word she kissed him, which was the greatest fauour that hitherto she had done him, leaving him so besides himselfe, that he was not able to frame a word to giue her answer. Whē he was come to himself, & that he considered that Loue stooped vnder duty, and that there was not a sparke of hope remaining, which might shine among his displeasures, as a person voyde of resolution, he went into the Wood, and into the places most couert, where hee did nothing but complaine of his cruell disaster, what aduice souer his friends could giue him. He liued in this sort many dayes, during which, he made the roaks to pity him. And that she, who was the cause of his euil, might haue some feeling, hee leaſt her these verſes:

STANZA'S  
Of Celion, on the marriage of Bellinde and Ergaste.

Do then the heauens agree, after such loue,  
After such seruices, that you should be  
Another mans sweete heart, and so must prooef.  
His deare delight, and dearer moity,  
And that I haue at last for loue most true,  
But memory, my sorrowes to renew?

You once did loue me well, what vaileth me ?  
 This amity now it is gone and past.  
 If you in others armes embrac'd I see,  
 And if for her I be constrain'd at last,  
 You now turn'd his, to keepe in silence still,  
 Displeasures cruell that my patience spill.

If he had more of Loue, or of desire  
 Then I, I know not what to say but cry  
 Alas ! Oh, is not this a cruell smart,  
 That he should gaine in one dayes space well-ny,  
 Without desire, what heauens will not becom  
 To infinite desires of endlesse loue ?

But (oh weake reason) duty you will say,  
 By her sad lawes compels me to doe thens.  
 What duty strong, or law more holy may  
 Befou're then this, that cleerly speakes for vs,  
 The faith so ofensworne, when hand in hand,  
 We promised a loue for eys to stand ?

May hand (you sayd) forthwith grow dead and dry,  
 My hand, as of a person most forsworne,  
 If I be failing in the thing that I  
 Assure, or if I any thing haue borne  
 Neerer my heart, or else hold ought more deare,  
 Then this affection which your faith did sweare.

Ob cruell memory of passed good,  
 Be gone, and euer banisht from my minde,  
 Since happynesse that in such glory stood.  
 Alas, I now so much defaced finde,  
 Deface it then, it is not reasonable,  
 That be in me that am so miserable.

Though he made it not appearē in any one of his actions, that there remained any hope in him, yet he alwaies had some little ; because the contract of marriage was not yet passed ; and for that he knew well, that oftentimes those meetings were often broke off, sometimes they that were

were thought most certaine. But when he knew the articles were signed on both sides, faire Nymph, how can I tell you the least of his despaires ? He wrung his hands, he tore his haire, he beat his brest with thumpes : to be short he was a man transported, and so without reason, that he oftentimes went out with a purpose to kill Ergaste. But when he was ready for it, some sparke of consideration, which in the middest of so great fury with-held him, made him feare to offend Bellinde, to whom notwithstanding, transported with passion, he wrote oftentimes letters so full of loue and reproches, that she could hardly reade them without teares. Among others he sent her such an one :

Celions letter to Bellinde in his transport.

**M**Y then, inconstant shephearde, my payne furnishe my affection ? Must it be, that without louing you, I haue such payne, when I know you are in another mans hands ? Is it not that the gods will punish me for louing you more then I ought ? Or rather is it not, that when I imagine not to loue you, yet I haue more loue for you then I had before ? Yet why shold I loue you, since you are, and cannot be any other mans, then one I loue not ? But on the contrary : why shold not I loue you, since I haue so much loued you ? It is true, that I ought not to loue you ? For you are an ingratefull soule, altogether forgesfull, and that haue no sense of Loue : yet whatsoeuer you are, you are Bellinde : and can Bellinde be, without Celion loue her ? Then doe I loue you, or if I loue you not, indige in your selfe, shephearde, for, for my part, I haue a spirit so disquieted, that I can discerne nothing else, but that I am the man in the world most affested.

At the end of the letter were these verses.

### STANZA'S.

**E**xcuse I cannot this inconstancy,  
 Which wrought this bad change of affection,  
 Change to the better, I call prudency,  
 But to the worse, shewes small discretion.

When Bellinde receiuē these letters and verses, shee was in paine to send him any of hers, because that hearing talke of the strange life he led, and the words which he uttered against her, she could not suffer it without

our great displeasure, considering what great cause of speech this gaue to them, who haue their eares but to listen after newes of others, and tongues to be telling them. Her letter was thus:

## Bellindes letter to Celion.

**I**T is impossible for me longer to endure the wrong, which your strange fashion of living brings to us both. I deny not but you haue occasion to complaine of our fortune: But I say withall, that a wise man knowes how to enjoy what is permitted him, without the impatience of becomming a foole. What a frenzy is this, that keeps you from seeing, that, while you publish to the rest of the world, that you dye for loue of me, you constraine me to thinke, that truly you never loued me? For, if you loued me, would you displease me? And, doe you not know, that death cannot be more grieuous to me, then the knowledge you haue given to every man of our amity? Forbeare then, brother, I beseech you, and by that name which ties you to haue care of that which touches me, I conserue you, that if at this present you cannot beare this disaster, without discouering your sorrow, you would at least take a resolution to goe so far off, that those who beare your complaint, may not know my name, but condole with you your owne griefe, not being able to suspect any thing to my disaduantage. If you give me content in this resolution, you shall make me beleeme that it was superfluity, and not want of affection, which hath made you commit this error against me. And this consideration shall binde Bellinde, besides the amity which she beares you, to conserue alwayes dearely the memory of that brother that loues her, and whom she loues among all these cruell insupportable displeasures.

Though Celion were so transported, that his spirit was almost incapable of reasons, which his friends could present him, yet so it was, that affection opened his eyes at that blowe, and made him see that Bellinde had counselled him to some purpose, so that resoluing to be gone, he secretly gaue order for his voyage, and the day before he would depart, he wrot to his shepheardesse, having a purpose to obey her, and he besought her to giue him the commodity that hee might take leaue of her, to the end he might depart with some sort of consolation. The shepheardesse that truly loued him, though shee foresawe that this farewell would but increase his displeasure, would not deny him this request, and appoynted the next day in the morning at the fountaine of Sicomores.

The day had scant begunne to dawne, when the desolate shepheard leaving his cabbin with his flocke, droue the right way to the Fountaine,

taine, where casting himselfe at length, and his eyes on the waters course, he beganne, while he attended his shepheardesse, to entertaine himselfe about his approching misfortune; and after he had beene somewhat silent, he breathed out these verses:

## A comparison of a Fountaine to his displeasure.

**T**HIS Spring, that euer flowing,  
Doth never make an end,  
But eare it selfe renewing,  
By waues that farre extend,

Resembles mine annoyes, whose sorrows me oppresse:  
For euen like to it, that never meanes to cease,  
As from a fruitful spring the griefs that I complaine,  
Are still renewed, and alwayes borne againe.

Then with a winding course,  
All as the flowing wane,  
Runnes wandring from its source,  
And no repose will haue:

Some with troubles great, with maine of many pains,  
As through the somwhile spared sandy plaines,  
The over-flowing waters couer quite,  
While I with teares bewaile my heany plight.

And as a vagabond,  
It with a murmur flies,  
Where waues the waues beyond,  
Floting along it cries.

In like sort I complaine of my most sad mischance,  
And againe? Loue my murmurring voyce advance.  
But what availeth me, since in the end  
I follow that that Destiny doth send?

While this shepheard talked thus with himselfe, and that he uttered loude enough many words at randon, he was so troubled with this dis-  
after,

after; *Bellinde*, that had not lost the remembrance of the appoyntment which she had giuen him, as soone as she could free her selfe from them about her, went to seeke him, so much trauelled with sorrow to lose him, that she could not hide it, but that it appeared in her countenance. *Ergaste*, who that morning was risen in good time to see her, by chance perceiued her afar off, and seeing her go alone, and (as he thought) sought out the thickest bushes, had a minde to know whither she went. That was the cause, that following her farre off, he sawe shee tooke the way to the fountaine of *Sicomors*; and casting his eye a little further off, though it were very earely, he obserued, that already there was a flocke feeding. Hee that was very aduised, and was not ignorant of the affaires of this shepheardesse, but that he had heard speech of the loue which *Celion* bare her, suddenly entred into conceit, that this flocke was his, and that *Bellinde* went to seeke him.

Now though he made no doute of the chastity of his mistris, yet did he easilly beleue, that shee hated him not, thinking that so long a suite could not haue beeene continued if shee had disliked it. And, to satisfie his curiositie, as soone as he sawe her vnder the trees, and that she could not spie him, fetching a compasse somewhat about, hee hid himselfe among some bushes; where hee perceiued the Shepheardesse set on the turffes, which were raised about the Fountaine in the fashion of seats, and *Celion* on his knees by her. What an assault received he at this sight? Yet, for that hee could not heare what they sayd, hee went softly, and he came so neare them, that there was nothing but an hedge (which compassing about the fountaine like a pale) shaddowed him. From that place then casting his eyes betweene the opening of the leaues, and being very attentive withall to their discourse, he heard the Shepheardesse answer him, And how, *Celion*, is it power or will to please me, that makes you wanting in this occasion? Shall this accident haue more force ouer you, than the power you haue giuen me? Where is your courage, *Celion*, or rather, where is your amity? Haue you not heeretofore ouercome for the loue you beare me, greater misfortunes than these? If it be so, where is the affection, or where is the resolution that made you doe it? Would you haue me beleue that you haue lesse now, than you had then? Ah shepheard! consent thou rather to the shortening of my life, than to the lessening of that goodwill which you haue promised me: and as hitherto I haue had that power ouer you that I listed, so for the time to come, let nothing be able to diminish the same.

*Ergaste* heard that *Celion* answered her: Is it possible, *Bellinde*, that you

can enter into doubt of mine affection, and of the power you haue of me? Can you haue so great a want of vnderstanding? and can the heauens be so vnjust, that you can forget those testimonies which I haue giuen you? and that they haue suffered that I should suruiue the good opinion which you are to haue of mee? You, *Bellinde*, you may call into question that which neuer any one of my actions, nor of your commaundements left doubtfull: At least, before you take so disaduantageous opinion against me, demand of *Amaranthe*, what shee leaues; demand the respect which makes me silent; demand of *Bellinde* her selfe, if euer shee imagined any thing difficult, that my affection did not surmount.

But now that I see you enirely another, and after the end of my disappoynted loue, leauing you in the armes of a more happy man than my selfe, I must be gone, and banish my selfe for euer from you. Alas, can you say it is want of affection, or of will to obey you, if I feele a paine more cruell than that of death? How shepheardesse! can you thinke I do loue you, if without dying I know you another mans? Will you say, it should be loue and courage that make me insensible of this disaster? rather, in truth, shall it not be neither loue nor courage to suffer this without dispaire? O Shepheardesse! oh that you and I shall be a Fable a long while! for if this weaknes, which makes me vnable to liue, and support this misfortune, makes you doubt of my affection; on the contrary, that great constancy, and that extreme resolution, which I see in you, is to me an ouer-certaine assurance of your small amity. But withall, why must I hope more of you, when another ( O the cruelty of my destiny! ) is to enjoy you? At this word the poore shepheard fell on the knees of *Bellinde* without strength, or sence.

If the Shepheardesse were touched to the quicke, as well at the words, as at the swoyning of *Celion*, you may iudge (faire Nymph) since she loued him as much as was possible; and she must dissemble, that she had no feeling of this dolorous separation. When she saw him in a swownd, and that she thought she was not heard, but of the *Sicomors*, and the water of the fountaine, vnwilling to hide from them the displeasure which she had kept so secret from her companions, and those whom she ordinarily sawe; Alas (said she) wringing her hands! Alas, O loucraigne goodnesse! take me out of this misery, or out of this life; for pitty, either breake off my cruell disaster, or let my cruell disaster breake me! And there casting downe her eyes on *Celion*, And thou (sayd she) ouer-faithfull shepheard, which art not miserable, but in that thou louest miserable me, let the heauens be pleased, either to giue thee the contentemens thou deseruest,

uotk wife  
8leak to  
loue, is  
granted þan  
to t. 6. god  
a wile.

uedst, or to take me from the world, since I am the only cause that thou sufferest the displeasures which thou meritest not. And then holding her peace a while, she beganne againe, O how hard a thing it is to loue well, and to be wise withall? For I see well, my father hath reason to giue mee to the wise Ergaste, whether for his merits, or for his substance. But alas! what doth this knowledge auaile me, if Loue forbid mine affection to delight in him?

I know that Ergaste merits more, and I can hope for nothing more to my benefit than to be his. But how can I giue my selfe to him, if Loue haue already giuen mee to another? Reason is on my fathers side, but Loue is for me; and not a loue lately borne, or that hath no power, but a Loue which I haue conceitid, or rather, which the heauens haue caused to be borne with me, which grew vp with me from my cradle, and which by so long tract of time is so intinuated into my soule, that it is more my soule than my soule. O God! can I hope to put it off without losse of life? And if I cannot vndoe it, tell me, Bellinde, what will become of thee? In bringing out these words, the great teares fel from her eyes, and running downe along her face, wet both the hand and cheeke of the shepheard, who by little and little comming to himselfe, caused the shepheardesse to breake off her complaints, and wiping her eyes for feare lest hee should murre it, changing both her countenance, and voyce, she spake to him in this sort, Shepheard, I will confesse that I haue a feeling of your paine, (it may be) as much as your selfe, and that I cannot doubt of your goodwill, vnsesse I were the most mis-vnderstanding person in the world.

But, to what end serue this acknowledgement, and those feelings? since the heauens haue subiected me to him, that hath giuen mee being, would you haue me so to be, that I disobey him? But be it, that affection more strong preuaile aboue duty, shall we therefore, Celion, be at rest? Is it possible, if you loue me, that you can haue any contentment to see me all the rest of my life long full of displeasures and griefes? And can you thinke that the blame which I shall incurre, whether for disobeying my father, or for the opinion that every one shall haue of our life passed, to my disaduantage, can leaue me one moment of quietnesse? It may be, this will be more credidle of another than of me, that haue always so blamed them that haue carried themselves thus, that the shame to see my selfe faine into their fault, will be more insupportable to me, than the most cruell death which the heauens may ordaine. Arme your selfe therefore with this resolution, O shepheard, that as for the time passed, our affection

fection neuer made vs comit any thing that was against our duty, though our loue were extreme; so for the time to come, we must not suffer that it compell vs to doe it. Besides that, to things which haue no remedy, complaints seeme vaprofitable.

Now it is certaine, that my father hath giuen me to Ergaste, and that gift can neuer be reuoked, but by Ergaste himselfe. Judge you what hope wee can haue euer that will be. It is true, that hauing disposed of my affection before my father did of me, I promised and swore to you, before all the gods, and particularly, before the deities which dwel in this place, that for affection I would be yours, vntil I were in my tombe: & that there was neither father nor husband, nor tyranny of duty should euer make me doe against the oath which I haue made you. The heauens haue giuen me to a father, that father hath giuen my body to an husband. As I may not contradict heauens, so my duty forbids me to refuse the appointment of my father. But, neither the heauens, nor my father, nor my husband shall euer keep me from hauing a brother, whom I will loue, as I haue promised him, whatsoeuer may come of it. At these last words, foreseeing that Celion would fal againe to plaints and teares, to put it off, she rose, and taking him by the head, kissed his brow, and bidding him farewell, and going away: Shepheard, God grant thee as much contentment (said she) in thy iourney, as thou leauest me little in the case I am in.

Celion had neither the strength to answer her, nor the courage to follow her; but being risen, and holding his armes acrosse, he went, accompanying her with his eyes, as farre as he could see her; and when the trees tooke away his view, lifting vp his eyes to heauen, all laden with teares, after many great sighs, he ranne away on the other side, without care, either of his flocke, or of any thing he left in his cabbin. Ergaste, wholay hid behinde the bush, and had heard their discourse, was more satisfied with the vertue of Bellinde, than hee could express, admiring both the force of her courage, and the greatnes of her honesty. And after he had long stayed, rauished with this thought, considering the extreme affection that was betweene these two lovers, hee believed that it would be an act vneworthy himselfe, to be cause of their separation, and that the heauens had ordained him to meet with that farewell so fitly, but to let him see the great errour which he went about to commit vnewares. Being then resolued to worke for their contentment, all he could possibly, hee set himselfe to follow Celion, but he was by this time so farre gone, that he knew not how to ouertake him: and thinking to find him in his cabbin,

he tooke a narrow path that led directly to it. But *Celion* was gone a contrary way: for without speaking to any of his kinred or friends, he went wandring many dayes, without any other purpose than to fli from men, and fed on the wilde fruits which extreme hunger enforced him to gather in the woods. *Ergaste*, that sawe his purpose was broken on that side, after a day or two's search, went to finde out *Bellinde*, hoping to know of her, what way he had taken: and by chance, he found her at the same place, where she had bid *Celion* adieu, all alone on the side of the Fountaine, at that time meditating on the last accident that befell her in that place; the remembrance whereof brought teares from the depth of her heart. *Ergaste*, that sawe her long before, came purposely to take her in the most priuate sort hee could possibly: and seeing her teares like two Springs, runne downe into the Fountaine, he had so much pitty, that he swore, not to take a good nights sleepe, vntill hee had remedied her displeasure. And to lose no time, aduauncing himselfe at once towards her, he saluted her.

Shee that sawe her selfe ouertaken with teares in her eyes, that shee might hide them, making shew to wash her selfe, and nimblly casting her hands into the Water, wet her face all ouer, so that if *Ergaste* had not seene her teares before, he could hardly haue knowne she wept: which yet made him more to wonder at her vertue. At that time she painted in her face a smiling countenance, and turning to the shepheard, said to him, with a fashion of courtesie, I thought to haue beeene alone (gentle shepheard) but for that I see you are come for the same cause (as I thinke) that brought me hither, I would say, to refresh you, and without fayning, see the best Spring, and the most fresh that is in this Plaine. Wise and faire shepheardesse (answered *Ergaste* smiling) you haue reason to say, that the same cause; which made you come hither, hath likewise brought me. For it is true; but where you say, that you and I come to refresh our selues, I must contradict it, for that neither of vs had it for our purpose. For my part, said the shepheardesse, I confess I may be deceiued for you: but for mine owne particular, you must permit me to say, that there is none that knowes more than my selfe. I grant (sayd *Ergaste*) that you know more than all others. But you shall not therefore make mee confess, that the cause that brought you hither, is the very same you haue spoken of.

And what thinke you then (sayd she) it was? At this word she laid her hand on her face, seeming to rubbe her eye-browes, but, indeede, to hide (in some sort) the rednesse which was risen. Which *Ergaste* markeing,

king, and willing to free her of the paine wherein hee sawe her, answered thus: Faire and discreet shepheardesse, you must vse no more dissimulation with mee, that know as well as you, that which you do thinke you haue most secret in your soule: and to manifest vnto you that I lie not, I tell you, that at this present, you are heere at this waters side, thinking with great displeasure on the last adieu, which you gaue vnto *Celion* in this place where you are. I (sayd shee) presently all ouertaken? Yes, you (said *Ergaste*:) but be not greeued that I know it. For I doe so esteeme of your vertue and worth, that it shall be so farre from hurting you, that I desire it should be the caule of your contentment. I know the long seruice which this shepheard hath done you: I know with how much honour hee hath wooed you. I know with what affection he hath continued these many yeeres: and moreover, with what sincere and vertuous amity you haue affected him.

The knowledge of all these things makes me desyre death, rather than to be the cause of your separation. Thinke not that it is Ielouise that causeth mee to speake in this manner: I shall neuer enter into any doubt of your vertue, since I haue heard with mine eares the wise discourse which you haue had with him. No more thinke you, but that I beleue, that losing you, I shall likewise lose the best fortune that I could wish for: but the onely cause that driueth mee to giue you to him, whose you ought to be, is this (O wise *Bellinde*) that I will not buy my contentment with your euerlasting displeasure: and truely, I should thinke my selfe to be culpable both before God and men, if by my occasion, so good and vertuous an amity should be broken off betwenee you.

I therefore come to tell you, that I choose rather to deprise my selfe of the best alliance that euer I shall haue, to set you in your former libertie, and to give you backe againe the contentment which mine would haue taken from you. And besides that, I thinke to do and performe that which I beleue my duetie commaundeth me; it shall be no small satisfaction to me, to thinke, that if *Bellinde* be contented, *Ergaste* was an instrument of her contentment. Onely I doe require, that if heerein I binde you being the cause of the re-vnion of your amity, you will be pleased to receive mee as a third to you two, and that you will yeeld mee the same part of goodwill, which you promised to *Celion*, when you did thinke to marry *Ergaste*: I meane, that I may be a friend to you two, and be receiued as a brother.

Can I (faire Nymph) shew you the contentment vnhoped for of this shepheardesse? I thinke it is impossible: for she was so surprized, that she knew not with what words to thanke him: but taking him by the hand, she went to sit downe on the turves of the fountaine; where, after she had paused awhile, and seeing the good will wherewith *Ergaste* bound her, she declared all along, what had passed betweene *Celion* and her, and after a thousand kinds of thankes, which I omit, for feare of troubling you, she besought him to goe seeke him, for that the transport of *Celion* was such, that hee would not come backe with any man in the world that should seeke him, for that he would neuer beleue that good will of his, whom he had neuer giuen such cause to, if it were assured him by any other: But on the contrary, he would imagine it were a trick to bring him backe. *Ergaste*, that desired in any case to end the good worke he had begunne, resolued to be gone the next day, with *Dianis* the brother of *Celion*, promising her not to come backe without bringing him with him.

Beinge then departed with this purpose, after hee had sacrificed to *Thanates*, to desire him to direct them to the place where they might find *Celion*, they tooke the way that first offered it selfe to them. But they had sought long in vaine, before they had had any newes, of himselfe, transported with fury, had not resolued to returne into *Forrests*, to kill *Ergaste*, and then with the same weapon to pierce his owne heart, before *Bellinde*, not being able to liue and know that another enjoyed his good. In this rage hee set himselfe on his way: and because hee nourished himselfe but with hearbes and fruits, which hee found along the way, hee was so feeble, that he could scarce goe: and had not his rage carried him, hee could not haue done that; yet must he diuers times of the day rest him, especially when sleepe pressed him.

It tell out, that wearied in this sort, hee lay downe vnder some trees, which gaue a pleasing shadow to a Fountaine, & there, after he had some-while thought of his displeasures, he fell asleep. Here Fortune, who delighted her selfe with the griefes shee had wrought him, disposes to make him entirely happy. *Ergaste* and *Dianis* passed by this way, and by chance *Dianis* went first: on the sudden when he saw him, he knew him, and turning softly, came to aduertise *Ergaste*, who very ioyfull, would haue gone to embrase him, but *Dianis* held him backe, saying, I beseech you, *Ergaste*, doe nothing herein that may turne to euill: my brother, if at once wee should tell him this good newes, would dye with ioy; and if you knewe the extreme affliction that this accident hath brought him, you would be of the same minde. Therefore, me thinkes, it will bee better that I tell it him

him by little and little, and because hee will not beleue me, you may come after to confirme it.

*Ergaste* finding this aduice good, got behind some trees where he might see them, and *Dianis* went to him. And it must needes be, that he was inspired by some good Angell: for if at the first *Celion* had spoyed *Ergaste*, it may be, that following his resolution, he had done him some displeasure. Now, at the time that *Dianis* came towards him, his brother awaked, and beginning againe his ordinary entertainements, hee set himselfe to complaine in this manner:

## A. P L A I N T.

Besides the woes of humane state,  
Lighting on nought to comfort me,  
Vnlesse it be to wayle my Fate,  
I sigh for death, which will not be.

My shield is hope that cannot fall:  
But that same sword that cutting is,  
Which mischiefe angers me withall,  
Is enuie too affreid to misse.

I hope in my long misery,  
To see my dole some end to haue:  
But how? I must not hope to see,  
Vnlesse it be within my grane.

Comme you him not most miserable,  
And all the gods his enemis,  
Whose hope that is most favourable,  
In death, and in his last Face lies.

Where are the thoughts of courage high,  
Resolvd for euill heretofore?  
But where am I? or who am I?  
I understand my selfe no more.

My soule through griefe is so confus'd,  
That what as now it seemes to crane,  
It is on a suddaine looses refus'd,  
Then when wch easie she mighte haue.

22 3

Brought to this state it cannot see  
Nor what it hath, nor what it is.  
O wherefore then must we needs be,  
When every thing tastes vs amisse?

Diamis would not come suddenly on him: but after hee had harkened fornewwhile, he made a noyse purposely, that hee might turne his head towards him; and seeing that he beheld him astonished, hee went softly to him, and after he had saluted him; he sayd, I thanke God, brother, that I haue found you so fitly, to doe you the message that Bellinde sendes you.

Bellinde, sayd he presently? Is it possible she should haue any remembrance of me, betwene the armes of Ergaste? Ergaste, said Diamis, hath not Bellinde betwene his armes; and I hope, if you haue any resolution, she shall never be his. And doubt you, attwerced Celion, that resolution shall be wanting to me in such an affaire? I would say, replyed Diamis, wisedome. I thinke, attwerced Celion, theras no wisedome that can crosse the order that Destiny hath resolued. Destiny, sayd Diamis, is not so contrary to you, as you thinke: and your affaires are not in so euill termes as you beleeue: Ergaste refuses Bellinde. Ergaste, sayd Celion, refuse her? It is certaine, continued Diamis, and that you may be better assured, Ergaste himselfe seekes you out to tell you so much.

Celion hearing these newes, stood without answer, almost besides himself; and then speaking againe, You deceiue your selfe, brother, sayd he, or say you this to abuse me? I swere, attwerced Diamis, by the great Thasianes, Hesus, and Tharamis, and all that which wee account most sacred, that I tell you true, and you may loone know it of the stpheard Ergaste. Then Celion lifting vp his hands and eyes to heauen: O God, said he, to what more happy and doe you reserve me? His brother, to interrupt him, said; You muste talke no more of this fortune and death, but onely of ioy and contentment: and aboue all, prepare to thanke Ergaste for the good which hee hath done you, for I see him come towards vs. At this word Celion rises vp, and seeing him so neere, ranne to embrace him with as much goodwill, as a little before hee had borne him malice. But when he knew the truth of this affaire, hee cast himselfe on his knees before Ergaste, and would haue kylid his feet. I cut off all their discourse (faire Nymph) and will onely tell you, that being returned, Ergaste gaue him Bellinde; and with the content of his father, hee caused her to be

be espoused to him, and onely desired, as he had before requested Bellinde, that Celion would accept him for a third, in their honest and sincere affection; and giuing himselfe entirely to them, would never marry.

See, (faire and wise Nyinph) that that it pleased you to know of their fortune, which was pleasing to all three, so long as it pleased God they should liue together: for some while after, there was borne them a sonne, whom they called Ergaste, for the amity they bare to the gentle Ergaste, and long to preserue his memory. But it fell out, that in the cruell pillage which some strangers made in the prouinces of the Sequans, Viennois and Segusians, this little Infant was lost, and dyed, without doubt, for want: for they never heard newes of him. And some yeeres after, they had a daughter, named Diana: but Celion nor Ergaste had not long the pleasure of this childe, because they dyed shortly after, and both on one day: and this is Diana, of whom you asked me newes, and who is accounted in our Hamlet, for one of the fayrest and wisedomest Shepheardesses in all Forestes.

The end of the tenth Booke.



THE  
ELEVENTH BOOKE  
OF ASTREA AND  
CELADON.



CELADON went on in this sort, telling to the Nymph the history of *Colson* and *Belinde*, while *Leonide* and *Galathée* talked of the newes which *Flurial* brought them: for as soone as the Nymph perceiued *Leonide*, she tooke her aside, and bid her take heede, that *Flurial* saw not *Celadon*; for (said she) he is so intirely for *Lindamor*, that the beast wil tell him all he sees: entertaine him then, and when I haue looked ouer my Letters, I will tell you what newes I haue. At this word, the Nymph went out of the chamber, and led *Flurial* with her, and after some other speeches, shee said to him: Well *Flurial*, what newes bring you to my Lady? Very good, answered he, and such as she and you would wish; for *Clidamor* is well, and *Lindamor* hath done such wonders in the battaile, that it is found, that *Merone* and *Chiderick* esteeme of him as his vertue deserues: but there is a young man with me, that would speake with *Silvy*, whom they at the Gate would not suffer to enter, who will tell you much better all the particulars, for that he came from thence; and I receiuied these Letters at my Aunts, whither one of *Lindamors* followers brought them, and expects an answer. And knowest thou not, replyed the Nymph, what he would say to *Silvy*? No, answered he, for he would never tell it: Hee must (said the Nymph) come in. At this word going toward the Gate, she knew the Youth presently, for she had seein him oft with *Lindamor*; which made her iudge, he brought some newes to *Silvy*: And because she knew well, that her sister desired these affaires might be

A a a

secreter,

secret, she would aske him nothing, fayning not to know him; onely she told him, she would aduertise Siluy of it. Then drawing Flurial aside: Thou knowest well Flurial, said she (my friend) the misfortune that is besafne Lindamor. How, answered Flurial? we should rather thinke him happy: for he hath got such glory where he is, that at his returne, Amasis dares not deny him Galathee. O Flurial, what sayst thou? If thou knewst how things haue palled here, thou wouldest protest, that the voyage of our friend is for his part the way of death. O God (said he) what say you? for I doubt not, but at his returne he will dye of sorrow. Flurial (said she) it is as I tell thee, and beleue not, that there is any remedy, vntesse it come from thee. From me, said he? if it may come from me, hold it for most certaine, for there is nothing in the world that I will not doe. Now, said the Nymph, you must then be secret, and this euening I will tell you more: but now I must know what the poore absent man writes. Hee sent, said hee, these Letters by a young man, who had charge to carry them to mine Aunt, she hath presently sent me with them, and see one that he witt to you: she opened it, and saw it was thus.

## The Letter of Lindamor to Leonide.

Absence hath small power ouer mine owne soule, so feare I it hath much ouer her whom I adore; my faith tells me no, but my fortune threatens the contrary: yet the assurance which I haue in the wisedome of my Confidant, makes me liue with lesse feare, then if my memory were alone. Haue care then not to frustrate the hope which I haue in you, nor belye the assurances of our amitie.

Well, said the Nymph, goe to the next place where thou mayest lodge this night, and come hither betimes in the morning, and then thou shalt know a story which will make thee wonder at it. Then she called vp the Youth which would speake with Siluy, and ledde him into the with-drawing chamber of Galathee, where willing him to attend, shee went in, and gaue the Nymph to know what shee had done with Flurial. You must, said the Nymph, reade this Letter which Lindamor hath written to me.

## The Letter of Lindamor to Galathee.

Neither the delay of my Voyage, nor the horrors of Warre, nor the beautes of these new Hostesses of Gaule can so posse the memory of your fairefull servant from you, but that it continually flies back to the most happy abode, where, while I am so farre distant from you, I leave all my glory: so that not being able to deny my affection the curiositie to know how my Lady doth, after I haue a thousand times kissed your Robe, I present you with all the good fortunes wherewith Arms are pleased to fauour me, and offer them at your feet, as to the Diuinis to which I acknowledge them. If you receive them for yours, Renowne will give them you in my behalfe, which promises me as well as your selfe the honour of your good graces to your most humble servant.

I care not then, said Galathee, neyther for him nor his victories; he shall bind me, more to forget me. For Gods sake (said Leonide) Madame say not so: if you knew how well he is esteemed both by Areone and Childerick, I cannot beleue (being borne as you are) but you will make more of him then of a Shepheard, I say a Shepheard that loues you not, and whom you see sighing before you for the affection of a Shepheardesse. You may thinke, that all that I speake, is out of cunting. It is true, presently answered Galathee. Well Madame, answered Leonide, you may beleue what pleaseth you, but I sweare vnto you by all that may be most fearefull to the periured, That in this journey by great chance I saw that Impostor Clemanthe, and that cuning Polymas, talking of what happened to you, and discouering betweene them all the tricks they had vsed. Leonide (added Galathee) you lose tyme, I am resolued what I will doe, talke no more to me of it. I will doe Madame what you command, said she; but suffer me to say one word: What doe you meane to doe with this Shepheard? I will haue him loue me, said she. Wherin, replied Leonide, purpose you that this amitie shall be concluded. You are ouer-busie, said Galathee, to wish me to know the things to come; only let him loue me, and then we will see what we haue to doe. Yet (continued Leonide) though one know not what will happen, yet in all our designes, wee must haue some Butt whereto wee may ayme. I thinke in all, said Galathee, except those of loue: and for my part, I will haue no other designe, but that he loue me. Then replied Leonide, it must be so,

for there is no likelyhood that you will marry him; and not marrying him, what will become of that honour which you haue preserued to your selfe? for it cannot be, that this new loue can blind you so, but that you will find the wrong you doe to your selfe, to wish for your louer the man whom you would not marry. And you (said she) *Leonide*, that are so scrupulous, tell me true, are you envious that I shuld marry him? I, Madame, answered she, I hold him to be too meane a thing, and I humbly beseech you, not to thinke me of so small courage, that I will dayne to cast mine eye on him. And if ever there were any man that had the power to give me feeling of loue, I freely protest to you, the respect which I haue borne you, hath made me withdraw. When was that, added *Galathee*? Then, said shee, when you commanded me (Madame) to make no more of *Polemas*. O what grace you haue (cryed *Galathee*) by your faith did you never loue *Celadon*? I will sweare vnto you by the faith I owe to you, Madame, answered she, that I never loued *Celadon* otherwise, then as if he had beene my brother. And in that she lyed not: for after the shepheard spake so plainly to her at the last time, she found out the wrong she did to her selfe, and so resolued to change the loue, into amitie. Well *Leonide*, said the Nymph, let vs leaue this discourse, and that likewise of *Lindamor*, for the Dye is cast. And what answer, said she, will you make to *Lindamor*? I will make him, said she, no other, but by silence. And what thinke you, said she, will become of him, when the man hee sent, returnes without Letters? Let what may, said *Galathee*, become of him; for, for my part, neyther his resolution nor any others, shall euer be cause for me to make my selfe miserable. Is it not then necessarie, answered *Leonide*, that *Flurial* goe backe? No, said she.

*Leonide* then told her coldly, that there was a young man that would speake with *Silvy*, and that shee beleueed hee was come from *Ligdamon*, and he would not tell his message but onely to *Silvy* her selfe. We must, answered the Nymph, send him where shee is: wee must not thinke much to draw the Curtaynes of the Bed where *Celadon* lyes, for I assure my selfe, hee will be glad to heare what *Ligdamon* hath written; for me thinkes you haue alreadie told him all their loues. It is true, answered *Leonide*: but *Silvy* is so disdainfull, and so losse, that without doubt she would be offended, that the messenger should speake to her, especially before *Celadon*. Wee must, said shee, take her on the sudaine: Onely goe

goe before, and will the shepheard not to speake a word, and draw the Curtaynes, and I will bring him in. So parted these Nymphs.

And *Galathee* knowing the young man, as haing often seene him with *Ligdamon*, demanded whence hee came, and what newes hee brought from his Master. I come Madame, said hee, from the Armie of *Miroue*, and as for newes from my Master, I must not tell them, but to *Silvy*. Truly (said the Nymph) you are very secret: and thinke you I will suffer you to say any thing vnto my Nymphs, which I shall not know? Madame, said hee, it shall be before you, if it please you, for I haue that commaundement, and principally, before *Leonide*. Come then (said the Nymph) and to shee brought him into the Chamber of *Celadon*: where alreadie *Leonide* had giuen the order as shee had appointed, without saying any thing to *Silvy*; who at the first was astonied, but afterward seeing *Galathee* enter with this young man, shee judged, that it was to keepe the shepheard from being seene. The amazement shee found was great, when shee saw *Egide* (that was the young mans Name) whome shee knew presently: for though shee had no loue for *Ligdamon*, yet shee could not exempt her selfe from all kind of good will; shee iudged rightly, that hee would tell her some newes, but shee would not aske him.

But *Galathee* turning to the young man, said: See where *Silvy* is; you haue no more to doe, but to goe through with your Message, since you desire that *Leonide* and I should be by. Madame (said *Egide*, turning to *Silvy*) my Master, the most fauillfull seruant that your merits euer wonne you, hath commaunded me to let you know what his fortune hath beene, wishing no other thing from Heauen, as a recompence of his fidelite, but that one sparcle of pittie may touch you, since none of loue could come neere the yce of your heart. How now (said *Galathee*, interrupting his speech) it seemes hee hath made his Testament: how doth hee? Madame (said hee, turning to *Galathee*) I will tell you, if it please you to give me the leysure: and then turning to *Silvy*, hee went on in this sort.

## The Historic of Ligdamon.

After Ligdamon had taken leaue of you, hee went with Lindamor, accompanied with so many goodly designes, that hee premised himselfe no lesse then to winne by this voyage that which his seruices could not by his presence, resoluing to doe so many famous acts, that whether the name of valiant, which his victories gaue him, might be pleasing vnto you, or well dying, he might leaue you to sorrow. With this designe he came into the Army of Merone, a Prince filled with all perfections which are necessary to a Conqueror, and arrived so luckily, that the battaile was assignd the seventh day after; so that all the young Knights had no other greater care, then to visite their Armes, and to put their Horses into good plight. But it is not of them that I am to speake: Therefore letting passe all vnder silence which touches not Ligdamon, I will tell you, that the day assignd for this great fight being come, the two Armies came out of their Campe, and had sight the one of the other, setting themselues in battaile array; here a Squadron of Horsemen, there a battalions of Footmen; here the Drums, there the Trumpets: on the one side, the neighing of Horses, on the other, the voice of Souldiers raysed such a noyse, that one might well say, that Bellona the dreadfull was rowling in this Playne, and that she had brought forth whatsoeuer was most horrible in her Gorgon. For my part, I (who was never in the like occasion) was so deafed with that I heard, and so dazled with the brightnesse of the armour, that indeede I knew not where I was; yet my resolusion was, not to leaue my Master: for the bringing me vp from my childe-hood, me thought bound me to it, and not to goe farre from him in this occasion, where nothing was presented to our eyes, but with the ensignes of death. But this was nothing to the strange confusion, when all these squadrons and all these battailons met together, when the signe of battaile was giuen: for the Horsemen set on the enemy, and the Infanterie likewise, with so great a noyse which the Men, Armour, and Horses made, that one could not heare it thunder.

After there had passed many clouds of arrowes, I can not tell you true how I found my selfe with my Master in the middest of the enemies, that I could not but admire the great gashes of Ligdamons Sword: and without fayning, faire Nymph, I saw him doe such meruailes, that one made me forget the other. So it was, that his valour

was

was such, that Merone would know his name, as hauing noted him that day among all the other Knights.

By this time the former Squadron grew victorious, and our men began to order themselues to set on the second; when the enemie, to make vp one entire push, caused all his forces that remayned, to march forward, that he might with that speed infest them, before Merone shoulde be able to succour them in time. And indeed, if he had had to doe with a Captaine leesse experienced then him, I thinke his purpose had taken effect. But this great Souldier iudging the despayre of the Aduersary, at the same time diuided three new Squadrons, two to the two Wings, and the third in the tayle of the former, so fitly, that they sustayned a great part of the first shooke; yet wee who were aduanced forwardest, found our selues much ouer-layd with great numbers. But I will not now trouble you with a particular description of this dayes worke, and I know not how to bring it about. So it was, that then the two bodies of the footmen being encountered, that of Merone had the better, and as much as we gayned of ground of them on horseback, so much lost the Infanterie of the enemie. At the shock which we receiuied, there were many of ours borne to the ground, besides those whom the arrowes of the Infanterie, from the beginning of the battaile, had vnhorstid: for at the meeting, the enemy causynge some Archers to shoot off, made vs draw through the Wings so many Arrowes, that our horsemen not daring to leaue their rankes, had much adoe to beare them, before Merone had sent some of his to skirmish with them. And among those that at the second brunt were put to the worse, Clidaman was one, for his horse fell downe dead, by three wounds of three arrowes. Ligdamon, that had alwayes his eyes on him, suddenly, seeing him on the earth, spurred his horse in extreme furie, and did such deeds of armes, that he made a Round of dead bodies about Clidaman, who in the meane time had leysure to free himselfe from his horse. The furie of the enemie, which by this fall of Clidaman was renewed in that place, had at last trode him vnder the horses feet, but for the helpe and valour of my Master, who allighting, set him on his owne horse, staying on foot so wounded and so charged with the enemie, that he could not mount on the horse that I brought him. At this instant, our men were forced to give backe, as feeling their weakenesse, as I thinke by the inuincible arme of my Master; and the mischiese was so great for vs, that we found our selues in the midst of so many enemies, that there was no more hope of safety: Yet would

necessar

neuer *Ligdaman* yeeld himselfe, though hee were so wetunded and so wearied as may be imagined; yet was there none so hardy, seeing what gashes hee gaue with his arme, that durst lay hold on him. At last, with all the furie of their horse fve or six came to stike him, and so suddenly, that hauing bestowed his Sword in the belly of the first horse, it brake neere the hilt, and the horse strucken to the heart, fell downe vpon him. I ranne to helpe him vp; but tenne or twelue that cast themselues on him, hindered me: and so both of vs halfe dead, were rayfed vp.

And this accident was yet more vnfornatue, in that, that almost at the same time our men recovered the ground they had lost, by the succours which *Childerick* brought from the reward, and after went on gayning the field, vntill it was wholly gotten at euening, and the lodgings of the enemie burnt, and themselues for the most part taken or slaine. As for vs, we were carried to their principall Towne, called *Roan*: whither my Master was no sooner come, but many came to visit him; some of them calling themselues his kinsmen, and others, his friends, though hee knew them not. For my part, I knew not what to say, nor he to thinke, when he saw those strangers make so much of him: but we were more astonied, when an honourable Lady, well followed, came to visit him, saying, that he was her sonne, with such demonstration of amitie, that *Ligdaman* was like one besides himselfe; and much more, when she said to him: O *Lidias*, my child, with what contentment and feare doe I see thee here? for I thanke God, that at the end of my dayes I see thee so much esteemed of by the report of them that haue taken thee: but alas, what is my feare, to see thee in this cruell Towne, since thy enemy *Aronte* is dead of the wounds which he had of thee, and that thou hast beene condemned to death by the Lords, of Justice? for my part, I know no other remedie, but to ransome thee presently, and lye close till thou beest healed, that being able to mount on horsebacke, thou mayest bee gone with the *Franks*. If *Ligdaman* were astonied at this discourse, you may judge, and then knew well she tooke him for another. But hee could not answer her, because at the same instant he which had taken him, entred into the Chamber with two Officers of the Towne, to take the names and qualitie of the prisoners, for there were many of their men taken, and they would exchange them. The poore Lady was surprized, fearing they came to carry him to prison, and hearing they asked him his Name, shee was about to tell it her selfe, but my Master

Master thrust her back, and called himselfe *Ligdaman* the *Segafian*. She then had an opinion, he meant to dissemble; and to put out all suspition, she withdrew her selfe, with a resolution to ransome him with all speed, that he might not be knowne. And it was true, that my Master resembled *Lidias* so much, that all that saw him, tooke him for him. Now this *Lidias* was a young man of that Countrey, that being in loue with a faire Lady, had fought with *Aronte* his Rival, whose ialousie was such, that it let him goe beyond his dutie, speaking euill both of her and him. Whereat *Lidias* offended, after hee had spoken twice or thrice to make him change his discourse, and thinking, that he tooke it as out of feare, which indeed proceeded from the wilisme of the young man, he was at last enforced both out of duty and loue to come to Armes, and with that happinesse, that hauing left his enemie as dead on the earth, he had the ley sure to saue himselfe from the hands of Iustice; which, after that *Aronte* was dead, pursued him so, that though he were absent, yet they condemned him to death. *Ligdaman* was so wounded, that he dreamt not of these things: I, that forsoothe saw the euill that might befall him, alwayes prested his mother to redeeme him; which she did, but not so secretly, but that the enemies of *Lidias* were aduertised of it: so that at their request, the same day the good Lady hauing payed the ransome, and carrying him to her house, those Officers of Justice came vpon them, and made him take the way to prison, whatsoeuer *Ligdaman* could say; deceived like others, by the resemblance of *Lidias*. So behold him in as great danger as a man might be, that had not offended. But this was nothing to the next dayes worke; when hee was questioned of points whereof he was so ignorant, that he knew not what to say: Notwithstanding, they forbore not to ratifie the former Iudgement, and gaue him no further terme, then to the healing of his wounds.

The bruit presently ran throughout all the Towne, that *Lidias* was prisoner, and that he was condemned to dye, not as a Murderer only, but as a Rebell, hauing beene taken with Armes in his hand for the *Franks*, that for this cause he was to be put into the Cage of the Lyons; and it was true, that their custome was such: but they would not pronounce this award to him, that he might not make himselfe away. Yet they talked of no other thing within the Towne: and the voyce was so spred, that it came to my eares. Wherewith being feareed, I disguised my selfe so, with the helpe of this good Lady which had redeemed him, that I came to *Paris*, to find out *Aronte* and *Clidaman*,

damon, whom I gaue to vnderstand of this accident: whereat they were much astonied, thinking it almost impossible, that two men should be so alike, that there might be no difference. And to remedy it, they sent speedily two Heralds of Armes, to let the enemies know the error wherein they were: but this serued but to perswade them the more, and to make them hasten the execution of their judgement.

The wounds of *Ligdamon* were almost healed; so that to give him no longer time, they pronounced the Sentence, That attainted of Murder and Rebellion, Iustice had ordayned that hee should dye by the Lyons, appointed to such an execution: yet because hee was nobly borne, and their countreyman, they did him the grace, to suffer him to carry his Sword and Dagger, as being the Armes of a Knight, wherewith if he had the courage, he might defend himselfe, or at least assay generously to reuenge his death. And at this time in their Councell they made an answer to *Merone*, That so they would chaste all their countreymen that were traytors to their Countrey. Behold the poore *Ligdamon* in extreme danger: yet that courage which yet never bended but vnder loue, seeing there was no other remedy, resolued to looke to his owne safetie the best he could. And because *Lidias* was one of the better Families among the *Normans*, almost all the people assembled to see this Spectacle. And when hee saw they were ready to put him into this horrible close field, all that hee requested, was, that hee might fight with the Lyons one by one. The people hearing so iust a demaund, agreed to it by their acclamations and clapping of hands, what difficulties soeuer the contrary part propounded. So that behold him thrust alone into the Cage: and the Lyons on the other side the barres seeing this new prey, roared so fearefully, that there was none of the standers by that trembled not. Without more, *Ligdamon* seemed confident among so many dangers, and hauing an eye on the first Gate that was to open, lest hee might be surprized, hee saw a furious Lyon come forth with staring looke, and hauing three or four times strucken the earth with his tayle, began to thrust forth his great forefeet, and to open his pawes, as if hee would shew him what death hee was to die: But *Ligdamon* seeing well there was no safetie but in his valour, as soone as hee saw him rise vp, he cast his ponyard so fitly at him, that he planted it in his stomacke even to the haft; wherewith the Beast being touched at the heart, fell downe dead presently. The cry of the people was great; for every one being moued with his confidence, with his valour,

valour, and with his courage, fauoured him in his soule: but hee that knew well that the rigour of his Judges would not stay there, ran readily to take againe his ponyard; and almost at the same time, see another Lyon, no leſſe fearefull then the former, that as soone as the Gate was opened, came with open throat in such furie, that *Ligdamon* was almost surprised: yet as he past, he turned himselfe a little aside, and with his Sword gaue him such a blow vpon one of his pawes, that he cut it off, whereat the Beast in furie so suddenly came on him, that he cast him to the ground, but his fortune was such, that in falling, and the Lyon ramping ouer him, he could but hold out his Sword, which fell out so luckily to be vnder his belly, that he fell downe dead almost as soone as the former.

In the meane while that *Ligdamon* was disputing for his life, behold a Lady faire among the *Normans*, that cast her selfe on her knees before the Judges, beseeching them to cause the execution to cease vntill she had spoken. They that knew her to be of the principall of the Countrey, willingly yeelded her that fauour; and indeed it was shee for whom *Lidias* had slaine *Arente*: her name was *Ameryne*, and then shee spake to them in this sort, with a modest voyce.

My Lords, Ingratitude is to be punished as Treason, because it is a kind of it: Therefore seeing *Lidias* condemned for being on the contrary side, I feare I should be counted so, if not of you, yet of the Gods, if I thought not my selfe bound to saue his life that hazarded his to saue my honour. This is it for which I present my selfe before you, relying on our priuiledges, which ordaine, That a man condemned to death, shall be deliuered, when a maid demaunds him for her husband. As soone as I knew of your Judgement, I came with all diligence to require it, and I could not be here so soone, but he hath run the fortune that all men haue seene; yet since God hath preserued him so happily for me, you are not iustly to deny me.

All the people that heard this demaund, cryed with a ioyfull voyce, Grace, Grace. And though the enemies of *Lidias* labored the contrary, yet was it concluded, that the priuiledges of the Countrey should take place. But alas, *Ligdamon* came out of this danger, but to enter into a greater: for being brought before the Judges, they let him know the clemencies of the Country were such, That any man attainted & convicted of any Crime whatsoeuer, might be deliuered from the rigours of Iustice, if a maid demaunded him for husband; so that if he would marry *Ameryne*, he should be restored to his liberty, and might liue with her.

He that knew her not, found it hard to answer: notwithstanding, seeing no other remedy to escape the danger wherein he was, he promised it, hoping that time would bring out some commoditi to free him out of the Labyrinth.

*Ameryne*, that had alwayes found *Lidias* so amorous of her, was not a little astonied at this coldnesse, yet judging, that the affrightment of the danger wherein hee was, had made him thus besides himselfe, shee had the more pitty on him, and carried him to *Lidias* mothers house, who was shee that procured the marriage, knowing there was no other remedy to sauе her sonnes life: besides that, shee was not ignorant of the loue betweene them, which made her preſe the conclusion of the marriage the most that possibly shee could, thinking to please her sonne. But on the contrary, this was to haſten the death of him that could doe no more then he had done. Ah my deare Master, when I call to mind the laſt words you ſpake to me, I know not how it is poſſible for me to liue?

All things were ready for the marriage, and it muſt be diſpatched the next day, when the night before he tooke me aſide, and ſaid *Egide* my friend, diſt thou euer ſee ſuſh a fortune as this, that they will make me beleeue that I am not my ſelfe? Sir, ſaid I, me thinkes it is not euill: *Ameryne* is faire and rich, all that call themſelues her kinſmen, are the principall of this Country; what would you deſire more? Ah *Egide*, ſaid he, thou ſpeakſt for thine owne eaſe. If thou knewell the caſe wherein I am, thou wouldſt haue pitty on me. But haue care of what I ſay, and aboue all the Obligation that thou owest me, and the loue which I haue alwayes found in thee, ſayle not as ſoone as to morrow I ſhall haue done that I am reſolute of, to beare this Letter to the faire *Silvy*, and relate to her all that thou haſt ſene; and moreouer affiſe her, that I neuer loued any but her, and never ſhall. At this word he gaue me this Letter, which I kept very carefully vntill the next morning, when at the houre that he was to goe to the Temple, he caſted me, and comandeſt me to be about him, and made me ſwear againe to ſeekē you out with diligēce. At the ſame time one came to him, to place him in the weddiſg Chariot, where already the faire *Ameryne* was ſet with one of her vuckles, whom ſhe loued and honoured as her father. ſhe was in the midſt betweene *Ligdamon* and *Carifer*, ſo her vuckle was named, all couered with a yellow vayle, and haueing on her head as well as *Ligdamon* the Garland. It is true, my Maſter was of *Sisymbre*, and *Ameryne* of picked and ſweete

Alpha-

*Aspharon*. Before the Chariot went all the family; and after, only the kinſmen and neareſt allies and friends. In this Triumphi they came to the Temple, and were brought to *Hymens* Altar, before which, ſiue Torches were lighted: On the right ſide of *Hymen* they had placed *Jupiter* and *Inno*; on the left, *Venus* and *Diawa*. As for *Hymen*, he was crownd with flowers and ſweet Marioram, holding in his right hand a Torch, and in his left a Vayle, of that colour that *Ameryne* was, as also the buſkins which hee had on his feet. When they entred into the Temple, the mother of *Lidias* and *Ameryne* lighted their Torches; and then the great *Druide* comming neare, direc- ted his ſpeech to my Maſter, and demaunded: *Lidias*, will you haue *Ameryne* for the mother of your Family? he ſtayed ſomewhile without anſwer, at laſt he was conſtrayned to ſay yes. Then the *Druide* turning to her: And you *Ameryne*, will you haue *Lidias* for father of your Family? and ſhee anſwering yes, then taking their hands, and ioyning them together, hee ſaid: And I, in the behalfe of the great Gods, giue you each to other, and for earnest, you muſt eat the Con- dition together: and then taking the Wheaten Cake, *Lidias* cut it in- to pieces, and ſhee laying them together, of which, according to the culcume, they both eate. There remayned no more of all the Cere- monies, but to take the Wine, when turning to me, hee ſaid: Now friend, for the moſt pleaſing ſervice that euer thou diſt me, reaſh me the Cup. I diſt ſo alas, with a miſchiefe ouer diligent. As ſoone as he had it in his hand, with a voyce lowd ynoough he ſaid: O pow- erfull Gods, ſaid he, that know who I am, venge not my death vpon this faire Lady, who taking me for another man, moſe happy then I, hath brought me to my death: and at this word, drunke all that was in the Cup, which was contrary to the culcume, because the husband was to drunke but halfe, and the Wife the reſt. ſhe ſimilene, ſaid vnto him: And how friend *Lidias*? it ſeemes you haue forgotten the cu- rrome, you ſhould haue leſt me my part. God forbiid, ſaid hee, wife *Ameryne*, for it is of poſon, which I haue chosen to end my life, rather then to be wanting in my promife to you, and in the affection which I owe to the faire *Silvy*. O God, ſaid ſhe, is it poſſible? as yet thin- king it was her true *Lidias*, but that hee had changed his good will, during his abſence, and vnuſſing to liue without him, ran with the Cup in her hand, where he was that had giuen the Wine mixed; for the day before he had cauſed it to be made at the Apothecaries, and before it was knowne what my Maſter ſaid, notwithstanding any for-

Bb 3

forbidding of his', because it was the custome they gaue her the full cup, which she presently drunke of. And then returning to him, she said, O cruell and ingratefull, thou hast loued death more then me, and I also loue it rather then thy refusall. But if that God which hath hitherto conducted our affections, doe not venge me on a soule so periured in another life, I shall thinke he hath neither eare to heare false oathes, nor power to punish them.

Then cuery one drew neere her to heare her reproches, and it was then that *Ligdamon* answered her. Discreete *Amerine*, I confesse I haue offended you if I were he whom you thinke I am, but beleue me that am now at the ende of my dayes, I am not *Lidias*, I am *Ligdamon*, and whatsoeuer errour may bee of mee at this houre, I assur me selfe that time will discouer my iustice. And in the meane time, I rather choose death, then to be wanting to the affection which I haue promised to the faire *Siluy*, to whom I haue consecrated my life, not being other wise able to satisfie both.

And then hee continued, O faire *Siluy*, receiue this will which I offer you, and let this last of all my actions be best received, because it is imprinted with the best character of my faithfullnesse. By little and litle the poysen gained on the spirits of these two newly married, so that they could hardly draw their breath, when turning his eyes on me, he sayd: Goe my friend, finishe that thou haest to doe, and aboue all, truly recount what thou haest scene, and that death is welcome to me, that keepest me from offendinge the fidelitie which I haue vowed to the faire *Siluy*. *Siluy* was the last word hee spake, for with that word the faire soule parted from the body: and for my part, I beleue that if euer louer were happy in the *Elysian* fields, my maister is, attending vntill he may see you againthere.

And how sayd *Siluy*, is it true that *Ligdamon* is dead? without doubt answered he, O God cryed out *Siluy*. At this word all that she could doe was but to cast her selfe on a bed, for her heart fayled her, and after shee had lyen somewhat with her face towards the beds head, she prayed *Leonide* who was with her, to take *Ligdamon*'s letter, and to tell *Egide* that he shold goe to her lodging, because she would haue him serue her. So *Egide* withdrew, but so affected that he was couered with teares. Then would loue shew one of his puf-fances, for that Nymph that never loued *Ligdamon* while hee liued, at this time when she heard of his death, shewed so great a feeling, that the most passionate in loue could not do more.

[It

It was vpon this speech that *Galathée* talking to *Celadon*, sayde, that hereafter shee would beleue it is impossible, but a woman once in her life must loue some thing: for this young Nymph hath vsed such cruelties towards all them that loued her, that some are dead for griefe, others euen of despaire haue banished themselues from her sight; and especially this whom she bewailes dead, she hath heretofore brought to that extremtie, that without *Leonide* the same had fallen him then, so that I would rather haue Iworne, loue might rather haue found place in the Ice of the coldast of the Alpes, then in her heart, and yet you see now whereto she is reduced.

Madame, answered the shepheard, beleue not that it is loue, it is rather pitie. In truth she must be harder then euer was stome, if the report which this yong man hath made, haue not touched her to the quicke, for I know not who would not in hearing him relate it, though one had no other knowledge of him but this onely action: and for my part, I must say true, I hold *Ligdamon* happyer then if he were aliue, since he loued this Nymph with such affection, and shee vsed him with as great rigour as I haue knowne, for what greater happiness can befall him, then to ende his miseries, and to enter into those felicities which doe accompany them. What thinke you was his contentment to see that *Siluy* laments him, borrowes for him, and esteemes of his affection: but I meane that *Siluy* that hath dealt so roughly with him. And then what is that which the louer desires more then to bee able to giue assurance to the party beloued of his faithfullnesse and affection; and to come to this point, what punishments, what deaths will he refuse? At this time, when hee sees from the place where he is, the teares of his *Siluy*, when he heares her sight, what is his happiness, and what his glory? not onely for that he hath assured her of his loue, but for him to be certen that she loues him.

O no Madame, beleue me *Ligdamon* hath no cause to complaine, but *Siluy*, for (and in time you shall see it) all that shee will represent to her selfe shall bee the ordinary actions of *Ligdamon*, the discourse of *Ligdamon*, his fashion, his amitie, his valour: briefly, this Idle will bee ordinarily houering about her, almost like an auenger of the cruelties with which shee hath tormented that poore louer, and repentance which galling her thoughts, will bee the executioner of the Justice of Loue.

Thick

These speeches were so lowde; and so neare Silvy that shee heard them all, and that made her burst for anger, for she thought them probable. At last, after she had endured them some while, and finding her selfe too feeble to resist so strange enemies, shee went out of that chamber into her owne, where there were none to let her from teares. For having shut the dore after her, and prayde Leonide to leaue her alone, she cast her selfe on her bed, her armes acrosse her stomacke, and her eyes toward heauen, in her memory shee paised through all their life, what affection he had alwayes shewed to her, how patiently hee bore her rigours, with what discretion he had seruied her, how long time this affection had lasted, and in the end, said she, all this is now enclosed in a little earth. And in this sorrow remembiring her owne discourses, her aduies, her impatiencies, and a thousand small particularities, she was constrained to say: Hold thy peace memory, let the ashes of my Lsgdamon be at rest, since if thou thus torment me, I know he will disauow thee for his, and if thou be not his, I care not for thee. At last, having stayed some while silent, she said, well the die is cast, let it shorten or lengthen my life as please the gods, and my destinie, but I will not cease to loue the memory of Lsgdamon, to cherish his loue, and to honour his vertues. Galathee in the meane time opened the letter, which yet remained in Leonides hands, shee found it was thus.

## Ligdamons Letter to Silvy.

If you haue beene offended at the presumption which hath forced me to loue, my death which followes it shall revenge it for you. But if it be indifferene to you, I assure my selfe, that this last acte of my affection shall gaine me somewhat more in your soule. If it fall out so, I shall cherish the resemblance of Lidias more then my birth, since by it I came into the world to be too troublesome to you, and by the other I goe out of it to your good liking.

These are without faining sayde Celadon, the great reuenger of loue. It is very true answered Galathee, that loue leaues not an offence against himselfe vnpunished, and thereof it comes that we see herein more strange accidents then in all other of mens actions. But if this be so Celadon, how, quak, nor you for feare? and how from moment to moment expect not you the reuenging arrowes of this god? And why sayd the shepheard, should I feare, since I am the party offended? Ah Celadon

Celadon, said the Nymph, if all things were iustly ballanced, how much heauier should you finde your selfe in the offences you doe, then in those you receiuie? This is (said the shepheard) this is the heape of misfortune, when the afflicted man is thought happy, and they can see him languish, without taking pitty on him.

But answered the Nymph, tell me shepheard, among all the greatest offences, doe not those of Ingratitude take the chiefe place? It doth without doubt, answered the shepheard. Now since it is so, continued Galathee, how can you wash your selfe, since for the great loue I shew to you, I receiuie from you but coldnesse and disdaine? I must at last tell you thus: You see shepheard, being the woman I am, and seeing who you are, I cannot thinke but in some thing or other I haue offended Loue, since he punisheth me with so many rigors. Celadon was extremely sorry that he had begun this discourse, for he laboured to auoid it as much as possibly hee could; notwithstanding, since it was done, he resolued to cleare it intirely, and said thus to her: Madame, I know not what to answer to your words, except by blushing, and yet Loue which makes you speake, constraines me to answer you. That which you call Ingratitude in me, my affection calls duty, and when it pleases you to know the reason, I will tell you it. And what reason (interrupted Galathee) can you alledge, but that you loue elsewhere, and that your loue tyes you to it? But the Law of Nature proceeds quite otherwise: this commands vs to seeke after our owne good; and can you desire a greater then my amitie? Who is there in all this Countrey that is as I, that can doe that for you that I can? These be mockeries Celadon, to relye on these follies of fidelitie and constancie, words which old folke and they that are become defor med haue inuented, to hold in their lynes the soules which their faces set at liberty. They say, that all vertues are chayned together, then Constancie cannot be without Prudence: but should this be Prudence, to disdaine a certaine good to auoid the title of inconstant? Madame, answered Celadon, Prudence never teaches vs to make our profit by vniust meanes, and Nature by her Lawes never commands vs to build, before we haue layed a good foundation. But is there any thing more shamefull, then not to keepe promise? Is there any thing more nimble then the Spirit, that flyes about like a Bee from flower to flower, drawne with every new sweet fauour? Madame, if faithfullnesse be lost, what foundation can I lay in your amitie? since if you follow the Law you speake of, how long shall I remaine in this

happyness, so long as you remaine in that place where there is no other man then my selfe.

The Nymph and the shepheard discoursed thus, while *Leonide* withdrew to her chamber, to make a dispatch to *Lindamor*, who in the end was to come backe with all diligence, that nothing should stay him, otherwise he was to despaire of all things. And the morning that *Flurial* came backe, after shee had giuen him the Letter, shee said to him: See *Flurial*, it is now that I shall by your diligence know the loue which you beare to *Lindamor*, for delay can bring him no leſſe then death. Be gone then, or rather flye, and bid him come with all speed, and as he returnes, let him goe the direct way to *Adamus* his house, for that I haue wonne him intirely for him; and when hee is here, hee shall know the most notorious Treason of Loue which was ever yet inuented: but he must come vñknowne to any, if it be possible.

Thus parted *Flurial*, so desirous to serue *Lindamor*, that hee would not returne to his Aunts house, that he might not lose the least time, and would haue no occasion to send him whom *Lindamor* had dispatched, desirous to doe the seruice himselfe.

So passed ouer three or foure dayes; during which time, *Celadon* found himselfe so amended, that hee almost felt no more of his disease, and alreadie began to thinke the returne of the *Druide* to bee long, for the hope he had to be gone from that place. And to shorten the ouer-long dayes, hee went oftentimes to walke in the Garden, and sometimes into the great Wood of the high growne Trees, but never without being accompanied by one of the Nymphis, and often by all three.

The humour of *Silvy* was it that pleased him best, as more sympathizing with his owne: therefore hee sought her out as often as hee could.

It fell out one day, all foure being abroad to walke, they passed by the great Denne of *Damon* and of *Fortune*: and because the entrance seemed faire, and made with great Art, the shepheard demaunded what it was; to whom *Galathée* answered: Would you see (shepheard) one of the greatest prootes that Loue hath made of his power of long time? And what is it, answered the shepheard? That is, said the Nymph, the loues of *Mandrake* and of *Damon*; for, for the shepheardes *Fortune*, it is a thing ordinarie.

And

And who is, replied the shepheard, this *Mandrake*? If by the Worke, said *Galathée*, one may know the Workeman, to make good that I say, you will judge shee is one of the greatest Magicians of *Gaule*, for it is she that by her enchantment hath made this Den, and diuers other rarities which are hereabout.

And entring in, the shepheard stood rauished with consideration of the workmanship. The entry was very high and spatiouſ. On the two sides, in stead of pillars, were two Termes, which on their heads sustainted the boughs of the vault of the portall. The one figured *Pan*, the other *Syrinx*, which were very curiously adorned with stones of diuerſe colours: the haire, the eye-browes, the mouthchatos, the beard, and the two hornes of *Pan* were of Cockles from the sea, and so workemanly ſet in, that the ciment appeared not.

*Syrinx*, that was on the other ſide, had her haire of Roses, and ſomewhat vnder the nauill one might ſee them ſwell by little and little: the tower of the gate on the outside was of rusticke fashion, and ropes of coquils fastened in foure corners hung downe, finished neare the heads of the Termes. Within the Vault there was a rocke which ſeemed in many places to drop with Salt-peter, and ouer the midſt it opened with an ouall forme, through which the light came in. This place, both without and within, was enriched with a great number of Statues, which falling into their ceternes made diuerſe fountaines, and all repreſented ſome effect of the power of loue.

In the middle of the caue one might ſee the tombe rayfed the height of ten or twelue foote, which at the top ended like a crowne, and all about garnished with tables, whereof the painting was ſo well done, that the ſight deceiued the iudgement, the diſtance of every table was filled by halle pillars of blacke wrought marble, the coynes of the tombe, the bases and the capitall of halfe colours, and the corniſhes, which round about in fashion of a girdle, held vp the tables, and though of diuerſe peeces, yet made but one well composed frame which was of the ſame marble.

The curioſitie of *Celadon* was great: after he had conſidered alſogether, to deſire to know the particularities, and that he might giue the Nymph occaſion to tell him ſomething, hee commended their inuenſion and cunning of the workman.

These are, ſaid the Nymph, the Spirits of *Mandrake*, which after ſome

Now marke a little lower along *Lignan*, see a flocke of sheepe in the shadow, how some of them chaw the cud, and others hold their nose to the ground to draw out the freshnette.

This is *Damons* flocke that you may see if you turne your eyes hi-therward in the water to the middle. Consider how these yong lopped trees, doe hide it from the beames of the sunne, and yet seeme to re-joice that other besides themselues may see it. And yet the sunne is so curious that he finds passage betweene some of their leaues, for some of his beames. Note how well this shadow and this brightnesse is repre-sented. But certainly it must be confesled, that this shepheard cannot be surpassid in beautie. Consider the draughts and proportions of his face, his stature strait and tall, his flanke round, his brest hie, and see if he haue any imperfection; yet somewhat stooping to serue himselfe of the water, and with his right hand he rubs his left arme: so it is, he doth doth not that action that may hinder the knowledge of his perfect beautie. Now cast your eye on the other side the riuier, if you be not afraid to looke on the deformed in her perfection, as in his owne you haue seene the faire, for among these fearefull bryars you may see the magician *Mandrake* be holding the shepheard in his bath. Behold her clothed almost in despite of them, that looke on her haire spread, one arme naked, her gowne on one side trussed vp aboue her knee, I think she comes to some enchantment. But iudge here the effect of a beauty. This olde Crone that you see so wrinkled, that every moment of her life hath set a furrow in her face, leane, little, al gray, her haire halfe cut, all crooked, and for age fitter for the coffin then to liue, is not ashamed to doate on this yong shepheard. If loue come by sympathy, as they say, I know not how it may bee found betweene *Damon* and her. See what countenance she makes in her extasie. Shee thrusts out her head with her long necke, shrugs vp her shoulders, holds downe her armes at length, and her hands clasped in her lap, and the sport is, when shee thought to smile she made a mouth. So it is, that such as she is, yet for-beares she not to seeke the loue of this faire shepheard. Now rayse vp your eyes a little, and see within that cloud *Venus* and *Cupid*, who be-holding this new louer, seeme to laugh outright: without doubt this little god, happily for some wager which he hath made with his mo-ther, hath not forborne one tricke, which alwayes ought to be vised for old age, to make so faire a wound. Or if it be not for a wager, it is to make vs see in this old thing, that the dry wood burns better and more easily then the greene, or to shew his power on this old holteſſe of

tombes, it pleaseſt him to make prooſe of the burning of his torch with which it ſeemeſt he hath giuen a new ſoule, and to ſpeeke in a word, whom hee hath made to riſe againe, and come out of the coſſin.

The fourth Table.

But let vs paſſe to the other. See a night well repreſented, ſee how vnder the darkneſſe of theſe shadowes theſe mountains appear, ſo as they ſhew but a little and ſo that in effect, one cannot iudge what it is. Marke how the ſtarres ſeemeſt to twinkle; ſee the others ſo well diſpoſed that one may know them. See the great Beare, looke how the iudicious workman, though ſhe haue twenty ſeven ſtarres, yet he repreſenteth clearely but twelue; and of theſe twelue, yet he makes but ſeven clearely ſhining.

See the little Beare, and conſider that, for that theſe ſeven ſtarres are neuer hidden, though it hath none of the third magnitude, and ſoure of the fourth; yet he makes vs ſee them all, obſeruing their pro-portion. See the Dragon, in which he hath well ſet the thirty one ſtarres, but he hath not ſhewed them ſo well as the thirteene, ſiue whereof as you ſee are of the fourth magnitude, and the eight of the third.

Behold the crowne of *Ariadne* who hath her eight ſtarres, but there are but ſiue of them that are well ſeen, yet ſee on of them ſhining brighter then them all. You may ſee on the other ſide the Milky way by the which the *Romaines* hold, that the gods come downe into earth, and mount backe into heauen.

But theſe clouds are well repreſented, which in ſome places runne through the Skie with great largenesſe, and in others onely, like a light ſmoake, and ſome all ouer, and as they be more or leſſe rayſed, are more or leſſe bright.

Now let vs conſider the history of this Table: ſee *Mandrak* in the midſt of a circle, a white rod in her right hand, a booke all greaſie in the other, with a candle of virgins waxe, and thicke ſpectacles on her noſe. Looke how ſhe ſeemeſt to murble, and how ſhe holds her eyes turnd after a ſtrange fashion, her niouth halfe open, and making a countenance ſo strange, with browes that ſhow ſhe travels with af-fection. But haue regard how the foot, arme, and left ſhoulder are naked: that is, for that it is the ſide of the heart: theſe fancies that you

see about, are diuels, which by the force of her charmes she hath constrained to come to her, to know how she may be beloved of *Damon*. They tell her of the affection which he beares to *Fortune*, that there is no better meane then to perswade him that this shepheardeesse loues elsewhere; and to do it more easily, she must for this time change the vertue of the fountaine of the truth of loue. Before you passe farther, consider alittle the workmanship of the picture, see the effects of the Candle of *Mandrake* among the darknesse of the night. She hath all the left side of her face bright, and the rest so darke, that it seemes to be of a different visage; the mouth halfe open, seemes within to be bright, so farre as the opening will suffer the light to enter. And the arme which holds the Candle, you may see neare the hand very darke, because the booke which shee holds shadowes it, and the rest is so bright aboue that it makes the blacknesse shew the more beneath. And with the like consideration may bee obserued the effects which the Candle giues among the diuels; for they all according as they are turned to it, are brighter or darker. And see another great peece of art in this picture, which is distance, for the perspective is so well obserued, that you would thinke that this other accident which he would represent on the other side, is out of this table and farre distant from it; and yet this is *Mandrake* that is in the fountaine of the truth of loue. But to make you understand all; know that sometimes before a faire shepheardeesse daughter, to a learned Magitian, fell secretly in loue with a shepheard, which her father perceived not: were it for that the charmes of Magicke can do nothing ouer the charmes of loue: or were it that altogether attentiu to his study, he cast not his eye on her. So it was that after an hot burning amitie, for that in loue there is nothing more insupportable then disdaine, and this shepheard neglecting her, for that he had long time beeene vowed elsewhere, she was brought to that passe, that by little and little the fire increasing, and her strength diminishing, she came to die, her fathers knowledge not being able to succour her. Whereas the Magitian being very sorry when he knew the occasion, for a marke of her memory ever after changed her tombe into a fountaine, which he named the truth of loue, because that he that loues, if he looke into it shal see his Lady, and if he be loued he shall see himselfe by her, or him whom she loues: or if shee loue none, she apperaes alone. And this is that truth which *Mandrake* would change, that *Damon* comming to see, and finding his mistresse loued another, he should loose likewise the affection he bare her, and

so she might haue the place free. And see how she enchantis it, what characters she makes round about, what triangles, what squares interlaid with rounds, beleue she forgets nothing which was necessary, for this affaires toucheth her too neare. Beforetime she had by her charmes assembled all her diuels to finde remedy to her euill, but for that loue is more strong then all this, they durst not vndertake it against him, but onely counselled her to worke this treason to these two faithfull louers. And for asmuch as the vertue of the fountaine came by the enchantment of a Magitian *Mandrake*, which surmounted in this science all her predecessors may put it out for a while. But let vs passe to the Table that followeth.

## The fift Table.

The fift Table (continued *Adamas*) hath two actions. The first when *Damon* came to this fountaine to free him from the paine which a troublesome dreame had brought him, the other when deceiued by the craft of *Mandrake*, having seene in the fountaine that the shepheardeesse *Fortune* loued another, in despaire he killed himselfe.

Now let vs see how well they are represented. See *Damon* with his speare, for he is in the same sort set out as he was wont to go on hunting. Behold the way he followes, marke with what care his faithfull beast attendis his maister, for while he lookest into the fountaine, it seemes the eyes are so bent towards him, to be desirous to know what maketh him so abashed; that if you consider the astonishment which is painted in his face, you would iudge he had some great cause.

*Mandrake* had made him see in a dreame, *Maradon* a young shepheard that taking an arrow from *Cupid*, opend the boosome of *Fortune*, and tooke out her heart.

He that following the ordinary course of louers was yet in doubt, and as soone as it was day ranne to this fountaine to see if his mistresse loued him. I beseech you consider his abashment, for if you compare the visages of the other Tables to this, you shall see the same draughts, though the trouble wherein hee is, paint the chaunge much.

Of those two Figures which you doe see in the Fountaine, the one as you may plainly know, is of the Shepheardeesse *Fortune*, and the other you may see is of the Shepheard *Maradon*, whom

whom the Magician made to bee represented rather then another, because he knew he had a long time bin a seruant of the shpheardesse, and though she vouchsafed not to regard him, yet loue which easly beleuees the thing it feares, presently perswaded the contrary to *Damon*: beleefe that made him resolute to dy. Marke I pray you how this water seems to tremble, this is for that the Painter would represent the effect of the teares of the shpheard which fell into it. But let vs passe to the second action. See how the continuation of this Cave is made, and how truly this seems to be more declining.

This dead man that you see on the ground, is the poore *Damon*, who in dispaire thrust his speare through his body. The action which he doth is very naturall. You may see one leg stretched out, the other drawne vp as with paine: one arme layd ynder the body, as hauing bin surprised by the suddennesse of the fall, and not hauing force to come againe to himselfe, and the other languishing along the body, yet he holds gently the speare in his hand, his head hanging towards his right shouuler, his eyes halfe shut, and halfe turned vp: and he that sees him in such a case, may well iudge him to be a man in the trances of death; his mouth somewhat opened, the teeth in some places diuocured a little, and the paliages of his nose shrunke vp, all lignes of a late dead man.

Also he hath not figured him as wholly dead, but betweene death and life, if there be any separation betweene them. See here the speare well represented, you may see the breadth of the Iron halfe hidden in the wound, the staffe on the one side bloody, on the other, of the colour it was before. But how great hath the Painters diligence bene, he hath not forgot the nayles which go as weeping towards the end, for the nearer the shaft as well the as wood, the more they were staynd with blood. It is true, that through the blood you might know them.

Now let vs consider the spurting out of the blood, issuing out of the wound. Me thinkes it is like a fountaine, which being led by long channels from some higher place, when it hath bene restrained, as they open it skips in fury this way and that way: for see these stremes of blood, how well they are represented, consider the boylng which seemes to raise it selfe to bubbles. I thinkes nature cannot represent any thing more truly.

Now for the sixt and last Table, whicht contaynes fourre actions of the Shepheardesse *Fortune*. The first, is a Dreame which *Mandrake* made her haue: The other, how shee went to the Fountayne, to cleare her doubt: The third, how shee complaynes of the inconstancie of her Shepheard: and the last, how shee dyes, which is the conclusion of this Tragedie. Now let vs see all things particularly.

See the rising of the Sunne, note the length of the shadowes, and how on the one side the Heauen is yet leisse cleare. See these clouds, which are halfe ayre as it seemeth, which by little and little flye, lifting vp these little birds, which seeme to sing as they mount, and are of those kinde of Larkes that rise from the deaw in the new Sunne. These ill-formed birds, which with vncertaine flight goe to hide themselves, are of those Owles that auoid the Sunne: where of the Mountaine couers a good part, and the other shines to cleare, that one cannot iudge that it was other thing then a great and confus'd brightnesse.

Let vs goe forward. Behold the Shepheardesse *Fortune* asleepe, shee is in bed, where the Sunne that enters by the window open by negligence, discouers halfe her brest. She hath one arme carelessly stretched along the side of the bedstead, her hand a little hanging from the boulster, the other hand stretched along her thigh, without the bed, and for that her smocke steeues is by chance thrust vp, you may see it iabout the Elbowe, there being nothing that hides any of the armes beautie.

See about her the diuels of *Morpheus*, wherewith *Mandrake* serues her selfe, to giue her a will to go to the fountaines of the truthe of loue. See on this side what she casteth vp: for hauing dreamed that her Shepheard was dead, and taking his death for the losse of his amitie, shee came to know the truthe. Beholde how the sorrowfull visage by the sweetnesse of it moues pittie, and makes vs take part in her displeasure; because shee no sooner calls her veiwe into the water but she perceiues *Damon*. But alas, hard by him the Shepheardesse *Melide*, a faire Shepheardesse indeed, and which

was not without suspition of louing *Damon*; yet vnbeloued of him.

Deceiued with this falsehood, see how shee is retyred into the inward parts of the Denne, and commeth vnawares to lament her displeasure, in the same place where *Damon* was almost dead.

Behold her set against the rocke, her armes acrosse her brest, which choller and grieve made her discouer, in tearing that which was vpon it. It seemeth that shee sighes, and her brest pants, her face and eyes lifting vp, and asking vengeance from heauen for the perfidiousnesse which shee thought was in *Damon*. And because the transport of her euill, made her lift vppe her voyce in her complaynt. *Damon* whom you see by her, though hee were even at the last of all his life, hearing the laments of his fayre Shepheardeesse, and knowing the voyce, hee then enforced himselfe to call her. Shee which heard these dying words, suddenly turning her head went to him.

But O God what a sight was this? Shee quite forgot, seeing him in this case, and the occasion shee had to complayne of him, shee demaunded who had dealt so feulyn with him? It is sayde hee, the change of my fortune, it is the inconstancie of your soule which hath deceived mee with such demonstrations of goodwill. Briefly, it is the happinesse of *Macadon*, whom the Fountaine from whence you came shewed mee to bee by you. And doe you thinke it reasonable that hee should live having lost your loue; that lived not but to bee beloued of your Fortune hearing these words. Ah *Damon*, how lying is this Spring to our vndoing, since it made mee see *Melide* nearevn to you, whom I now see die for so dearely louing me.

So these faithfull louers knew well the falsehood of this Fountaine, and more assured then ever of their affection, they dyed embrasing: *Damon* of the wound, and shee for grieve of his death.

Behold the Shepheardeesse set against the rock couered with mosse, and see *Damon* leaning his head in her lappe, and who to giue her the last farewell, reached foorth his arme and necke to her, seeming to straine and raise himselfe a little to kisse her: in the meane time, shee all couered with blood held his head, and bowing

bowing her selfe to come neare his face, layd her hand vnder him for to heave him vp a little.

This olde gray-headed which is by them, is *Mandrake* the magitian, who finding them dead, curses her Art, detesteth her diuels, teares her hayre, and batters her brest with blowes. The gestures of lifting her hands aboue her head, holding her hands ioyned; and contrarily casting downe her head, almost hiding her chinne in her boosome, folding and tossing the body in her lappe, are signes of her violent displeasure, and of the sorrow which she had for the losse of two so faithfull and perfect louers, besides the losse of all her contentment.

The face of this olde woman is hidden, but consider the manner of her hayre, how it hangs downe low, and to the nape of the necke, and those that are more short, seeme to sticke vp. Behold a little farther off *Cupid* weeping, see his bowe and arrowes broken, his torch put out, and his scarffe all wet with teares, for the losse of two so faithfull louers.

*Celadon* was all the while very attentiu to the discourse of the wife *Adamas*, and often repented himselfe for his want of courage, that could not finde a like remedy to that of *Damon*, and because the consideration of this held him somewhat mute, *Galathee* as shee went out of the caue, and taking *Celadon* by the hand: what thinke you sayd shee of these loues, and of these effects?

That these are ( answered the shepheard ) the effects of imprudence and not of loue, and it is a popular error to couer our owne ignorance, or to excuse our faults, to attribute alwayes to some diuinitie the effects, whereof the causes are hidden from vs.

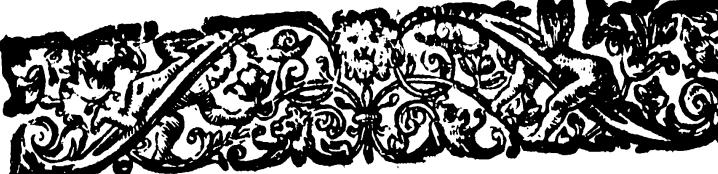
And how sayd she, thinke you there is no loue? If there be, sayd the shepheard, it should bee nothing but sweetnesse. But how soever it bee, you speake Madame, to one so ignorant as any that lives, for besides that; my condition will not permit mee to know much, my grosser spirit hath made me much more incapable. Then the sad *Silvy* replied, It is somewhat since I saw you in a place where one might hardly beleue this of you; for there were so many beauties for you to take, and you are too honest a man to suffer your selfe to be taken.

Faire Nymph, answered the shepheard, in what place soever this was since you were there, it is without question, there was much beautie there: but as too much fier burns rather then warmes, so your beauties are too great for our rusticke hearts, and make them selues rather admired then beloved, and rather adored then serv'd.

With such talke this faire company went to their lodging, whither the houre of repast called them.

*The end of the eleventh booke.*

THE



# THE TVVLELFTH BOOKE OF ASTREA AND CELADON.



Y that time the day began to appeare, *Leonide* following the resolution which in the evening *Adamas* her companion, and *Celadon* had taken together, came into the shepheards chamber, to put on him the habite which her vncle had broughte. But the little *Merill* that by the commandement of *Galathée*, ordinarily carried with *Celadon* to spy *Leonides* actions, as well as to waite on the shepheard, hindred them long time from doing it. At last, some noyse they made in the court, caused *Merill* to go foorth, that hee might bring them some newes. Then presently *Celadon* rose, and the Nymph (behold to what *Loue* abases her) helped him to cloath himselfe, for he could not do it without her. Within a while after, see the little *Merill* that came running backe so fast, that he must needs take them in the manner, but *Celadon* that had an ey to him, got into a wardrobe, expecting when he should returne. He was no sooner entred, but hee asked where *Celadon* was. He is within the wardrobe sayd the Nymph, he will come presently: but what would you with him? I would tel him answerd the boy, that *Amasis* is comming hither. *Leonide* was a little surprised, fearing shee should not be able to finish what she had begun, yet to take some counsell with *Celadon*, she sayd to *Merill*, little *Merill* I pray thee runne to informe my Lady of it, for it may be she will be overtaken. The child ran out, and *Celadon* comes laughing forth at these newes. And why, sayd the Nymph, do you laugh *Celadon* at her comming, you may wel be taken? No such thing (sayd he) onely held you on in dressing mee for

EEC

for I may easily steale away in the confusion of so many Nymphes. But while they were about their busynesse, see Galathee commeth in so suddenly, that Celadon could not get into the Cabinet: you may well iudge that the Nymph and Celadon were surprised, but the subtily of Leonide was greater and quicker then it was credible: for seeing Galathee enter, she tooke hold on Celadon, who would haue run to hide himselfe, and turning toward the Nymph, did what she could to stay him. Madame, sayd she, if it please you not to do somewhat, that my Lady your mother come not hither, we are all vndone: for my part, I haue done what I could to disguise Celadon, but I feare I cannot bring it about. Galathee, who at the first knew not what to iudge of this Metamorpholis, commended the spirit of Leonide for inuenting this shift, and comming neerer to consider Celadon so well disguised vnder this habit, that she could not hold from laughter: answered the Nymph, Friend, we had bin vndone but for you, for there was no meane to hide the shepheard from so many persons as come with Amasis, where being clad in this habit, we are not onely more assured, but withall I would haue you let your other companions see her, that they may take her for a maide. And then she went on the other side, and was rauished in beholding hir; for his beauty by these ornaments made the greater shew. In the meane time, Leonide the better to play her part, told her that she might be gone, for feare lest Amasis came suddenly on her. So the Nymph, after she had resolued that Celadon should call himselfe the kinswoman of Adamas, named Lucinde, went out to entertaine her mother, after she had commanded Leonide to bring her where they were as soone as she could be drest. I must confess the truth, sayd Celadon, after she was gone, in my life was I never more astonished then at these three accidents; at the comming of Amasis, at the surprisall of Galathee, and at your quicke inuention.

Shepheard sayd she, that which I do proceedes of the good will I haue to rid you of your paine, and would to God all the rest of your contentment would sort as luckily as this doth, then you should know how much good I wish you. For requitall of so great an obligation, answered the shepheard, I can but offer you the life which you haue preserued: with such discourses they entertained themselues, till Merill came into the chamber, and seeing Celadon almost ready, he was rauished, and sayd: There is no body that can know him, and I that am all day with him, would not beleeue it is he, vniuersall I saw him dressing. Celadon answered him, who told you I was disguised. Thus it was,

was, answered he: My Lady who commanded me to call you Lucinde, and that I should say you are the kinswoman of Adamas, and sent me presently to the Draide to let him know it, who could not forbearre laughter when he heard it, and he promised me to do as my Lady had appointed. See that all things goe well, sayd the shepheard, and take heed you forget not your selfe. In the meane time, Amasis being come out of her charriot, met Galathee at the stayres foote, with Silvy and Adamas. Daughter, sayd she, you haue bene ouer long in your solitari- nesse, I must recreate you a little, specially, for that newes which I haue seene from Clidaman and Lindamor, doe reioyce me, that I can enioy it no longer alone: therefore came I vnto you to give you a part, and desire to haue you goe with me to Marcellis, where I will haue bonfires made for so good newes. I thanke God, answered Galathee, for so great happiness, and I beseech God to keepe you yet an age longer: but indeed Madame, the place is so pleasing to me, that it makes mee sorry to leaue it. It shall not bee long, replied Amasis, but because I will not goe backe till toward night, let vs go walke, and I will tell you al that I haue learned. Then Adamas kisst her robe and sayd; your newes madame must be good, since to tell them to my Lady your daughter, you came abroad so early. It is two or three daies, sayd Amasis, since I receiued them, and suddenly resolued to come hither, for me thinks I cannot ioy at such contentment alone, and indeed the thing deserues to be knowne. With such discourse she descended into the garden, where beginning to walke, hauing Galathee on the one side, and Adamas on the other, she went ou in this sort.

*The history of Lidias and Melander.*

Considering the strange accidents which happen by Loue, mee thinks we are almost constrained to confess, that if Fortune haue many wheeles to aduance and cast downe, to turne and change humane things, the wheele of loue is that with which she often serues her turne, for there is nothing that yeelds so many changes as this passion of Loue. The examples are alwayes so common before our eyes, that it should be superfluous to tell them. Yet must you confess when you haue heard what I will I say, that this accident is one of the most remarkable that yet you haue euer heard told. You know how Clidaman by lot became seruant to Silvy, and how Gusmantes by the letter which he brought from his brother became likewise amorous.

I assure my selfe, since that time, you cannot be ignorant of the designe that made them both depart so secretly, to lecke out *Merone*, nor that I might not leaue *Clidaman* alone in a place so farre off, I sent after him vnder the charge of *Lindamor*, a company of yong knyghts of this country, but you can hardly know what betell them since their departure, and that is it which I will now tell you, for there is nothing more worthy to be knowne.

As loone as *Clidaman* came to thearmy, *Guimantes* who was well knowne there, brought him to kille the hands of *Merone* and *Clidaman*, and without shewing who he was, only gaue them to understand that he was a yong knyght, of a good house, that desired to serue them. They were receiued with open armes, and especially for comming in a time when their enemies had renued their forces, and taking good courage had threatned to give battell. But when *Lindamor* was come, and that they knew what *Clidaman* was, the honour and welcome which they did him cannot be told, for within two or three fightes he was so famous, that both his friends and enemies knew him and esteemed of him.

Among other prisoners which he and *Guimantes* tooke, for commonly they went together in all enterprises, they found a yonge of great *Brusaine*, so faire, but so sad, that it wrought pittie in *Clidaman*, and because the longer he remained in captiuitie, the more appeared his sorrow: one day he caused him to be called before him, and after he had enquired of his estate and condicione, he asked the occasion of his sadnesse, saying, that if it proceeded of his imprisonment, he must like a man of courage beare such accidents, and he was to thanke the heauens that had prouided hee should fall into their hands, since hee was in a place where he should receive nothing but curtesie, and the delay of his libertie proceeded but from the command of *Merone*, who had forbidden that the prisoners should as yet be ransomed, and when he would give them leaue, he should see what their curtesie was.

This yonge man thanked him, yet was not able to forbear fighing, whereat *Clidaman* somewhat more moued, demanded the cause, to whom he answered: Sir knyght, this sadnesse which you see painted in my face, and these sighes which steale so often from my breake proceed nor of this prisone you speake of, but of another, which binds me more staightly: for time and ransome may free mee from this, but from the other, there is nothing but death that can release mee.

And

And I am resolued to beare it with patience, if I did not forfeite an ouer-speedie end, not by my death onely, but the losse of that partie that keepes me in so strait hold.

*Clidaman* knew well by his words, that it was *Loue* whereof he laboured, and by the experiance which he had found in himselfe, considering the diseale of his prisoner, he tolke such pittie on him, that he assured him his liberty the soonest hee could possibly, knowing well by profe, that they be the passions and disquietnesse that accompany the person that truly loues. Since, said he, you know that it is *Loue*, and that your courtesie binds me to beleeue, that the knowledge you may haue of me, shall not make you change your good will, to the end you may iudge of the cause which I haue to complayne of, or rather to delpayre of, seeing the cuill so neare, and the remedy so farre, so you will promise me not to discouer it, I will tell you things which without doable will astonish you: and when he had promised him, he began in this sort.

Sir Knight, this habit wherein you see me, is not mine owne, but *Loue*, who sometimes hath cloathed men like women, playes with me in this sort, and making me forget in part what I am, hath put me into an habit contrary to mine owne, for I am not a man, but a daughter of one of the best Houses of *Brusaine*, and called *Millandra*, fallen into your hands by the greatest fortune that euer was conducted by *Loue*. It is some while since a yonge man named *Lidius*, came to *London*, flying out of his owne Countrey (as I haue heard since) for hauing killed his enemy in field. They were both of that part of *Gaule*, which they call *Normandy*: but because the dead man was of kinred to the greatest among them, he was enforced to flye his Countrey, to auoid the rigour of Justice.

This being then come to *London*, as is the custome of our Nation, hee found such courtesie that there was no good House wherein he was not right soone familiar; among others, hee liued with that pruincie at my fathers, as if hee had bene of his household. And because hee had a purpose to stay there as long as his retурne into his Countrey should be forbidden him, he determined to make shew of louing some, that he might the better frame himselfe to the humour of them of great *Brusaine*, that haue euery one some particular Lady. On this resolution he turned (I know not whether I may say for good or evill fortune) his eyes on me, were it that he found me more for his delight, or more for his commoditie; he began to professe himselfe to be

be my servant. What dissimulations, what wooings, what oathes were those which he xsed to me? I will not trouble you with an ouerlong discourse. So it was, that after sufficient long wooing (for hee continued two yeeres). I loued him without dissimulation, for that his beautie, his courtesie, his discretion, and valour, were ouer-great allurements to ouercome with long suit any soule, how barba-rous soever. I blushi not then to confessle it to one that hath had tri- all of Loue, nor to say, that this beginning then was the end of my quiet.

Now these things resting in this state, and living with all the con- cernment that the party that loues, and is assured, of the person belo- ued, may have; it fell out, that the *Franks*, after they had wonne so many battailes against the *Roman Imperour*, against the *Gothes* and *Gauls*, turned their Armes against the *Normans*, and reduced them to those termes, that because they are their ancient Allies, they were constrainyd to lend to *London*, to demand succours; which, ac- cording to the alliance made betweene them and those of great *Brittaine*, was graunted them both by the King and by the Estates. This newes was suddenly divulged throughout the Realme; and we that were of the principall Towne, vnderstood it with the first: And from that time, *Lidias* began to thinke of his returne; assuring himselfe, that they of his side hauing neede of his like, would easily absoluē him of the death of *Arome*. Notwithstanding, because hee had alwayes promised mee, not to goe, but hee would carry mee with him, which the malicious man did to deceiue me, and for feare lest I might impeach his departure, hee concealed his purpose from mee. But as there is no fire so closely couered, from which there comes not some smoke, so there is nothing so secret, but some thing or other will discouer it; and so many, before I was aware, told mee of it.

As soone as I knew it, the first time I saw him, I drew him aside: Well (said I) *Lidias*, haue you resolued that I shall not know that you will leaue me? Thinke you my amitie so weake, that it cannot beare out the strokes of your fortune? If your affaires will haue you returne into your Countrey, why will not your loue permit mee to goe with you? Demaund me of my father, I am assured hee will bee pleased with our alliance, for I know hee loues you: but to leaue mee here alone with your faith forsworne, no *Lidias*, beleue mee, doe not commit so great a fault, for the Gods will punish you.

He answered me coldly, that he had no thought of returne, and that all his affaires were nothing worth to the good of my presence, that I committed an offence in doubting, and that his actions should constraine me to confessle as much. And yet this periured person within two dayes after went away with the first Troupes that came from great *Brittaine*, and tooke his time so fitly, that hee came to the Sea shore the same day that they were to goe, and so tooke ship with them. We were presently aduertised of his departure: Yet had I so strong a fancie that he loued me, that I was the last that beleueed it; so that there were more then eight dayes after his departure, before I could perswade my selfe, that one so well borne could be so deceit- full and vnthankfull. At last, one day following after another with- out any newes, I found I was deceiued, and *Lidias* was gone.

If then my sorrow were great, judge you Sir Knight, since falling sicke, I was brought to thole termes, that my Phylsitanis not know- ing my disease, despayred of mee, and forsaking me, held me for dead: But Loue, who would shew his power, and is a better Phylsitan then *Esculapius*, healed me with a strange Antidote. And see how hee de- lights in effects which are contrary to our resolution. When I first knew of the flight of *Lidias*, for in truth it may be so called, I found my selfe in such sort displeased, that after I had a thousand times cal- led Heaven to witnesse of his perfidiosnesse, I sware I would never loue him, as often as hee had sworne to mee, that hee would euer loue mee, and I may tell you wee were both forsworne. For while my hatred was in his greatest fury, behold a Vessell that came from *Cal- lays*, to report, that the Succours were happily arrived, that told vs, that *Lidias* went ouer with an intent to warre among them of great *Brittaine*: but as soone as the Gouvernour of the place, who was a kinsman to *Arome*, vnderstood of it, hee caused him to bee put in prison, as hauing beene alreadie condemned; that they accounted him for lost, because the Gouvernour was of great credit among the *Normans*, that indeede there was one meane to saue him, but so hard, that there was no man that would hazard it, beeing such an one.

As soone as *Lidias* saw himselfe arrested, hee demanded, how a Knight of such reputation as hee was, would reuenge his quarrels by Iustice, and not by Armes? for it is a custome among the *Gauls*, ne- ver to runne to Iustice in what offends their Honor, but to the Com- batte, and they that doe otherwise, are held dishonourable.

Lipandas

*Lipandas*, which was the name of the Gouvernour, answered, That he flew not *Armes* like a man, and if he were not condemned by Justice, he would maintaine it by Armes: but being ashamed to fight with one accainted, if he had any of his friends that would offer himselfe for him, he proffered to fight in that quarrell, that if he were overcome, he would set him at liberty, that otherwise Justice shoulde be done. And to giue time to his kinnesfolkes and friends, he would keepe him a moneth in his custody, that if none come within that time, hee would giue him ouer into the rigorous hands of the Ancients of *Rouen*, to be handled as he deserues: and that there might be no aduantage to any, he would this Combat shoulde be fought with *Sword* and *Dagger*, in their shirts. But *Lipandas* being accounted one of the valiancest men in all *Normandy*, there was not one that had the hardinesse to vndertake this combate, besides that the friends of *Lidias* not understanding of it could not perfarme that good office. Sir knight, when I remember the contraries, which shake me when I heard this newes, I must confess I was never more confounded in my life, no not when this perfidious man forsooke me. Then would Loue haue me know, that the propositions made against him are more weake when he will, then the waues that beatin vaine against the rock to make it shake: for to pay the tribute of Loue, you must run to the ordinary moneys with which his imposts are payd, which are teares. But after long and vaine bewailing the perfidious *Lidias*, I must in the end resolute of his safetie, thogh it cost me both my restan d honor. And transported with this new furie, or rather with this renewing of Loue. I resolute to go to *Callais*, with an intent to finde the meane there to aduertise the kinsmen and friends of *Lidias*, and giuing order with as great secrecie as I could for my voyage, one night I stole away in the habit you see me; but my fortune was so hard, that I stayd aboue fiftene dayes before I could find a ship that went that way. I know not what became of my parents when they saw I was gone, for I heard no newes of them since, onely I know the old age of my poore father can hardly beare out this griefe, for he loued me more tenderly then I did my selfe, and hath ever so carefully bred me, that I am often-times astonied how I could endure the discommodities which since my departure I haue borne, and I must say, it is Loue, and not my selfe.

But to hold on our course, after I had stayd fiftene or sixtene daies at the Sea side, at last there came a ship in which I went to *Callais*, when

I had no more then fife or sixe dayes of the Terme that *Lipandas* had giuen. The tossing of the ship had so distempered me, that I was constrained to keepe my bed two dayes, so that I had no time to aduertise the kinsmen of *Lidias*, especially not knowing who they were, nor where they dwelt. If this troubled me you may iudge, especially because me thought I was come at the time to see him die, and to be present at his funerals. O Gods how do you dispose of vs! I was so overlayd with this disaster, that day and night the teares were in mine eyes. At last, the day before the Terme, transported with a desire to dye before *Lidias*, I resolute to enter into the combat against *Lipandas*: What resolution, or rather what despaire was this? for all my lifelang I never tooke sword in my hand, & knew not well with which hand to hold the dagger or the sword, and yet behold me resolute to enter into combat with a knight, who all his life had bene vsed to that mystrie, and who had alwaies wonne the title of braue and valiant. But all these considerations were nothing against me, that chose to die before he whom I loued, lost his life. And though I knew well I could not saue him, yet was it no little satisfaction to me, that he should haue that proofe of my loue.

One thing tormented me infinitely, which I endeauoured to reme- die, which was the feare lest *Lidias* might know me, and lest that might hinder my designe, because we were to fight vnarmed. To remedy which, I sent a scroule to *Lipandas*, whereby after I had defyed him, I desired, that being both knights, wee might serue our selues of the armor which knights vs, and not like desperate persons. Hee answered, that the next morning he would be in the field, and that I might come armed, and so would he, though he would haue it at his owne choyce: after he had begunne the combat in that sort, for my satisfaction, to finish it for his owne, as he had propounded at the beginning. I that doubted not, but in what sort soeuer I was to die, accepted what he would. And with this purpose in the morning, I presented my selfe in the field armed at all poynts; but I must confess the truth, I was so combred with my armor, that I knew not how to stirre. They that saw me go staggering, thought it was for feare of the combat, and it was out of weakenesse. Soone after, behold *Lipandas* came armed, and mounted to his aduantage, who at his first setting out made them afraide, whom the danger no way touched: and beleeue you not that I was amazed. But when the poore *Lidias* was brought on a scaffold, to be present at the combat; for the pitie which I had to

see him in such case, touched me so that I stayd long without being able to stirre. At last the Judges led me to him, to know if he accepted me for his champion. Hee asked me who I was, then counterfeiting my voyce: content your selfe *Lidias*, sayd I, I that am the onely man that will vndertake this fight for you. Since it is so, replied hee, you must be a person of valour, and therefore sayd he, turning to the Judges, I accept him, and as I was going, he sayd, Valiant knight feare not but our quarrell is iust. *Lidias*, answered I, I would you had no other iniustice, and then I withdrew my selfe so resolued to dye, that I hardly tarryed for the trumpets giuing signall of battaile. Indeede at the first sound I set forward, but my horse shooke me so sore, that in stead of bearing my lance as I should, I let it go as Fortune would, so that in place of striking him, I thrust it into the necke of the horse, leaving the speare in his body, whereupon the horse ranne at the first about the field in despite of his maister, at last fell downe dead. *Lipandas* was comming against me with such an eagernesse to do well, that his ouer great desire made him misse his blow: for my part, my horse went whither he would, for all that I could doe was to keepe my selfe from falling, and stopping of himselfe, and hearing *Lipandas* crying to me to turne him, with many reulings, for that I had killed his horse, I came backe, when I had layd my hand on my sword the best I could, and not without paine; but my horse which happily I had spurred more then his courage would beare, as soone as I had turned him, of himselfe tooke his course, and to so good purpose, that hee smote *Lipandas* with such fury, that hee cast him downe with his heeles vpward; but as he passed by, he gaue him with his sword such a thrust into the body, that within awhile after I perceived him to sinke vnder me, and it was no smali thing that I could remember to take my feete out of the stirrops, for to get out of the saddle, and a light from my horse.

Then came I toward him, who was at hand with his sword a loft to strike mee, and I must tell you, that if Loue had not sustai ned the burthen of armes, I had not had the force to do it.

At last, behold *Lipandas*, who with all his force came to charge mee with a blow on the head: nature taught mee to thrust forward my lefte arme, for other wise I had forgotten the shield that hung on that arme, the blow lighted so full on it, that wanting strength to beare it, my shield gaue mee backe such a blow vpon my helmet, that

that the sparkes flew out of mine eyes. Hee that saw how I staggered, meant to charge mee afresh, with another more weighty, but my fortune was such, that lifting vp my sword, I met his to so good a purpose that it brake into two peeces; and mine hals broken, did like his at the first blow which I would haue giuen him: For he shunke backe, and I not hauing strength to stay it, let it fall to the gronnd, where towards the point it lighted on a stone that broke it.

*Lipandas* then seeing vs both haue the like aduantage, sayde to me Knight, these armes haue beene alike fauourable to vs: I meane to try whether the other will bee so to, and therefore disarne your selfe, for it is with that the I will end the fight.

Knight, answered I, by that which is passed you may well know that you haue done wrong, and deliuering *Lidias* you ought to leauue this combat.

No no, sayde *Lipandas* in choller, *Lidias* and you shall die. I shall assay, replied I, to turne that sentence vpon your owne head, and then remouing in the field the farthest I could from *Lidias*, for feare of being knowne: By the helpe of those that attended, I disarmed my selfe; and for that we had made prouision before of a Sword and Dagger, after wee had put off our doublets, wee came each against other. I must tell you, it was not without payne that I couered my brest, because the shirt, for all that I could doe, shewed the swelling of my pappes; but e ry one rather thought of any thing else then of that, and as for *Lidias* hee could not know it, as well for that hee saw mee in an habite disguised, as for that I was enflamed with the heate of the armour, and this high colour much changed my visage. At last, behold vs, *Lipandas* and mee, about ten or twelue paces a funder they parted the sunne betwixt vs, and the Judges were gone backe. It was then that I thought verily to die, assuring my selfe, that at the first blow hee would runne his Sword into my body.

But fortune was so good for *Lidias*, ( for it was onely of his life that I stood in feare ) that this parrogant *Lipandas* comming with all his furie to mee, stumbled so, to purpose for me, that hee layde his head almost at my feete so violently, that hee gaue himselfe two wounds, the one with his Dagger, with which hee picrced his lefte shoulder, and the other with his Sword, cutting his brow.

For my part, I was so afraide of his fall, that I thought him already dead, and without doing him more hurt, I gaue backe two or three paces. It is true, that imagining I might better ouercome him with courtesie then valour, I sayd vnto him: Rise vp *Lipandas*, it is not on the earth that I will offend you. He that had stood some time amazed with the blow, all in rage riseth to cast himselfe on me, but the two wounds which he had made himselfe, the one blinded him, and the other tooke all strength from his arme, so that he saw nothing, and was scarce able to hold vp his sword; which I perceiving, tooke courage, and came towards him with my sword aloft: Yeeld thy selfe *Lipandas*, other wise thou art dead. Why, sayd he, shold I yeeld my selfe, since the conditions of our combat was not so? Content thy selfe that I set *Lidias* at libertie.

And then the judges being come, and *Lipandas* hauing ratified his promise, they accompanied me out of the campe like a conquerour. But fearing they might doe me some wrong in that place, where *Lipandas* had such power, after I had armed my selfe, I went with my visard downe to *Lidias*, and sayd: Sir *Lidias* thanke God for my victory, and if you desire to conferre longer with me, I go to the towne of *Regisague*, where I will expect some newes from you in fifteene dayes, for after that time, I am constrained to go about some other occasions, which carry me farre from hence; and you may aske for the sadde knight, for that is the name I beare, for the reason which you shall know hereafter.

Shall I not otherwise know him (said he) to whom I am so much obliged? Neither for your good (sayde I) nor for mine may it be; and at that word I left him: and after I had prouided another horse, I came to *Regisague*, where I stayd.

Now this traytor *Lipandas*, as soone as I was gone, made *Lidias* bee put againe into prison more straitly then before, and when hee complained and reproched him for breach of promise which he had made me; he answered, he promised to set him at libertie, but he told him not when, and that it should be within 20. yeares, vnlesse it were with a condition which he propounded, which was to work so, that I would commit my selfe prisoner in his place, and so I should pay the ransome of his libertie with losse of mine owne. *Lidias* answered him, so hee should be as ingratefull to me, as *Lipandas* perfidious to him. Whereat he was so offended, that he swore that within 15. daies if I were not in his hands, he would give him vp into the hands of Justice.

And

And when *Lidias* set before his eyes his faith forsworne: I haue done penance, said hee, by the Wounds which I brought from the Combat, but hauing long time promised the Lords of *Normandy* to maintaine Justice, am I not more bound to the former, then to the latter promise?

The former dayes passed ouer without any heed taking: but seeing I heard no newes of him, I sent a man to enquire for him. By him I knew the malice of *Lipandas*, and the terme that hee had giuen: and though I well fore-saw all the cruelties and all the indignities which one might receiue, yet did I resolute to free *Lidias* out of such hands, hauing nothing so deare to me as his conseruation; and by fortune, the day that you tooke me, I was going thither. And at this time, the heauiness which you see in me, and the sighes which giue me no rest, proceed not from the prison wherein I am (for this is pleasant, in respect of that which was propounded) but to thinke, how this perfidious and cruell *Lipandas* will without doubt commit him into the hands of his enemies, who expect no other thing, but to see a deplorable and shamefull end: for of the fifteene dayes which he gaue, tenne are passed; so that I almost despayre to be able to doe this last office to *Lidias*.

At this word the teares hindered her voyce, that she was constrained to hold her peace, but with such demonstration of displeasure, that *Clidaman* was moued, and to comfort her, said: You are not (said he) courageous *Melandre* so to lose your courage, that you may not maintaine that generousnesse in this accident, which you haue shewed in all the rest; that God which hath preserued you in so great perills, will not forsake you in the lesser: You are to beleue, that what may depend on me, shall be alwayes disposed of to your contentment. But for that I am vnder a Prince whom I may not displease, your libertie must come from him, yet doe I promise you for my part whatsoeuer you may hope from a good friend.

And so leauing her with these good words, hee went to seeke out *Childericks*, and besought him to procure of King *Merone* the liberty of this young prisoner. The young Prince who loued my sonne, and who knew well how willing the King his father would be to oblige *Clidaman*, without longer stay went to demaund it of *Merone*, who graunted what his sonne asked. And because the time was so short, that the least part of it lost, would hurt *Melandre*, hee went to seeke her at her Lodging; where hauing led her aside, he said:

E ff 3

Sad

Sad Knight (quoth he) you must change that name, for if your misfortunes haue heretofore giuen you cause to beare it, it seemes you shall shortly loose it. The Heauens begin to looke on you with a more pleasing eye then of wont. And as one euill comes not alone, so good fortunes march alwayes in companies: and for proofe of that I say, know Knight (for so your will is I should call you, since your generousnesse hath of good right wonne you that Title) that henceforth you are at liberty, and may dispose of your actions as you please. The Prince of the *Franks* hath giuen mee leaue to dispose of you, and the dutie of a Knight binds me not onely to set you at liberty, but to offer you all the assistance that you thinke I may afford you.

*Melandre* hearing a word so vnhoped for, leaped with ioy, and casting her selfe at his feet, kisst his hand by way of thankes for so great a grace: for the good which shee imagined to receiue from him, was to be put to a ransome; and the inconueniences of paying it, made her despayre of being able to doe it so soone as the terme of fifteene dayes were run out. But when shee heard so great courtesie: Truly said she to him, Sir Knight, you make it appeare, that you know what it is to loue, since you haue pittie on them that are taynted with it. I pray God, vntill my selfe be able to requite it, that hee would make you as happy as hee hath made you courteous and worthie of all good fortune: and at that very houre shee would haue beene gone; which *Clidaman* would not suffer, because it was night.

The next morning then very early shee set on her way, and stayed not till shee came to *Calais*, where by chance shee arriued the day before the terme. That euening shee would haue made her comming knowne to *Lipandas*, had shee not beene of the minde, considering the perfidiousnesse of him with whom shee had to doe, to attend for the day, that the more persons might see the wrong hee did her, if haply hee should be fayling of his word.

The day being come, and the houre of Mid-day hauing strucke, that the chiefe men of the place, to honour the Gouvernour, were then in his house; behold the sad Knight presenting himselfe, as the first hee was not knowne, for they had not seene him but in Combate, where it may be feare had altered his countenance: and then every man drew neere to heare what hee would say.

*Lipandas*, said he, I come hither in the behalfe of the kinsmen and friends

friends of *Lidias*, to heare some newes of him, and to charge you with your word, or to referre him to some other new condition: otherwise they send you word by me, that they will proclayme you for an vnhonored man.

Stranger, answered *Lipandas*, you may tell them that *Lidias* fares better then he shall doe within few dayes, because that this day being past, I will deliuer him into the hands of them that will auenge me: that for my word I thinke I am quit, in giuing him ouer into the hands of Iustice; for this Iustice, what other thing is it, but true Libertie? As for the new conditions, I will haue no other but that which I haue already propounded, which is, that they put into my hands him that soughe against me, that I may doe my will of him, and I will deliuer *Lidias*. And what is that, said he, that you will doe? When I am to giue account of my actions to you, answered hee, you shall know. And how, said he, are you yet of the same mind? Altogether of the same mind, replied *Lipandas*. If it be so, added the sad Knight, send for *Lidias*, and I will deliuer you him whom you demaund. *Lipandas*, that aboue all things desired to be revenged of his enemy, for he had turned all his hatred on *Melandre*, sent for him immediately. *Lidias*, that knew well, that that day was the last of the terme which he had set, beleueed it was to lead him to the Lords of Iustice: notwithstanding hee fore-saw his assured death, yet did hee chuse it, rather then to see him that had fought for him, in that danger for his sake. When hee was come before *Lipandas*, hee said, *Lidias*, see the last day that I haue giuen thee to present thy Champion into my hands; this young Knight is come hither for that cause, if he doe it, thou art at liberty. *Melandre*, while those few words were speaking, found the meanes to turne her face aside, that shee might not be knowne; and when shee would answer, shee turned wholly towards *Lipandas*, and said: Yes *Lipandas*, I haue promised, and I will doe it. Doe you keepe your word as well, for I am hee whom you demaund; behold me that feare neither rigour nor cruelty whatsoeuer, prouided that my friend be freed from paine. Then every one cast his eyes on her, and calling to memory the fashion of him that combated, knew shee sayd true. Her beauty, her youth, and her affection moued all them that were present, except *Lipandas*, who thought himself infinitely offended with her, commanded shee should presently bee put in prison, and suffered *Lidias* to goe at libertie.

Hee that desired rather his owne destruction, then to see himselfe so much obliged, made some difficultie. But *Melandre* came toward him, and told him in his care: *Lidias* be gone, trouble not your selfe for me, I haue a meane to get out of prison very easily when I will: and if you will doe any thing for me, I pray you goe serue *Meroue*, and particularly *Clydamon*, who is the cause that you are at liberty; and tell him, that it is for my sake that you came to him.

And is it possible, said *Lidias*, that I should goe, before I know who you are? I am, answered she, the sad Knight: and this shal suffice, till you haue better opportunitie to know more. So went *Lidias* away, with a resolution to serue the King of the *Franks*, since hee to whom hee twice ought his life, would haue it so.

But in the meane time *Lipandas* expreisely commaunded, that *Melandre* should be well guarded, and put her into a Denne, with yrons on her hands and feet, resoluing to let her lye there, till shee dyed through miserie. Judge in what case this young maid was, and what complaints shee might make against Loue: Her food was vyle, and her lodging fearefull, and all other discommodities great, that if her affection had not supported these things, it is impossible but shee must haue dyed.

But in the meane time the rumor spred throughout all *Normandy*, that *Lidias* by the meanes of his friend was deliuered from the prison at *Callais*, and that he was gone to serue the King *Meroue*, this was the cause that his banishment was renewed, and he declared Traitor to his Countrey. Yet hee forbare not to come to the Campe of the *Franks*: where searching for the Tent of *Clydamon*, it was shewed him. As soone as he saw it, and that *Lindamor* and *Guymant* spycd him, they ran to embrace him, but with such affection and such courtesie, that he was astonied; for they all tooke him for *Ligdamon*, that a little before was lost in the battaile which they had against the *Normans*, whom he so much resembled, that all they that knew *Ligdamon*, were deceiued.

In the end, being knowne to be *Lidias*, the friend of *Melandre*, he led him to *Meroue*: where, in the presence of them all, *Lidias* discoursed to the King the story of his prison as you haue heard, and the courtesie which he had twice receiued of that vnowne Knight, and at last, the commaundement which hee gaue him to come and serue him, and particularly *Clydamon*. Then *Clydamon*, after the King had entertained him, and thanked him for his loue, said: Is it possible

*Lidias*,

*Lidias*, you know nothim that fought, and is in prison for you? No truely sayd he. Behold sayde hee, the strangest mistaking that I euer heard spoken of, haue you euer scene one resemble him? Not as I remember, sayd *Lidias*, all astonished. Then will I tell the king (sayd *Clydamon*) an history the most worthy of compassion that euer loue wrought: And thereupon hee began the discourse which *Lidias* had told, that he went into great *Britaine*, of the contents he found there, whereto he adioyned very discreetly the loue of *Melandre*, of the promises he made, of the carrying her into *Normandie* with him, if he were constrained to goe; of his flight: and lastly, of his imprisonment at *Callais*.

The poore *Lidias* was so astonished, to heare such particularities of his life, that he knew not what to thinke. But when *Clydamon* repeated to him the resolution of *Melandre* to set on her voyage, and her attiring her selfe like a man, to give his friends knowledge of it, and after to arme and enter in close field against *Lipandas*, and the fortunes of the two combats; there was not one of the hearers that was not rauished, and much more when he ended all that which I haue tolde you. O Gods, cryed out *Lidias*, is it possible that mine eyes haue beeene so blinded? what is there for mee to doe, to free my selfe of this obligation? There is nothing more, sayde *Clydamon*, then to hazard for her that which she hath preserued in you. That added *Lidias* with a deepe sigh, me thinks it is but a small thing, if the intire affection which she beares me, be accompanied with mine owne. In the meane time that they had this discourse, they which heard *Clydamon*, said, that this maid alone deserved to haue this great Army to assaile *Callais*. In truth, sayde *Meroue*, I will neglect all other things rather then not get the libertie to a Lady so vertuous, and wee know not how our armes may bee better employed then in such seruice.

The euening being come, *Lidias* goeth to *Clydamon*, and discouers to him that hee had an infallible enterprise on *Callais*, which hee had noted during the time hee was prisoner, that if they would giue him souldiers, without doubt he would put them into the towne. This aduise being reported to *Meroue*, it was found so good, that he resolued to send him. So there were giuen him ffe hundred archers conducted by two hundred men at armes, to execute this enterprise. The conclusion was (for I cannot tell you all the busynesse) *Callais* was taken, *Lipandas* prisoner, and *Melandre* freed out of captiuitie. But I know not how nor why; hardly was the tumult of the taken town ceased, but it was

G g g

was noted, that *Lidias* and *Melandre* were gone, so that since is unknowne what is become of them.

Now during all these things, the poore *Ligdamon* hath been more tormented for *Lidias*, then may well be told: for being prisoner in the hands of the *Normans*, he was taken for *Lidias*, and as soone condemned to death. *Cidaman* so wrought, that *Meroue* sent them two Heralds at Armes, to let them know how they deceiued them selues: but the allurance which *Lipandas* had newly giuen them, made them passe it ouer, without giuing credit to *Meroue*. So behold *Ligdamon* put into the Cage of the Lyons, where it is said hee did more then a man might doe: but without doubt he had dyed, had it not been that a very faire Lady had demaunded him for Husband. The custome which permits it to be so, saued him for that time, but shortly after hee dyed: for louing *Silvy* with such an affection, that it would not suffer him to marry any other then her, hee rather made choise of a Tombe, then that faire Dame: so that when they would marry him, he poysoned himselfe; and she that beleued it was indeed *Lidias*, who heretofore had loued her so dearely, poysoned her selfe also with the same potion. So is the poore *Ligdamon* dead, with such lamentation of every one, that there is none among his enemies, but bewayles him. But that is a gracious reuenge wherewith Loue hath punished the cruell *Lipandas*: for calling to his remembrance the vertue, the beautie, and the affection of *Melandre*, he is become so farre in loue with her, that poore as hee is, hee takes no consolation but in speaking of her. My sonne sends me word, that he doth what he can to get him out of prison, and that he hopes to obtaine it.

So (continued *Amasis*) now they liue with such honour and commendations, that every man esteemes more of them then any other in the Army. I pray God, said *Adamas*, to continue them still in such good fortune.

And while they discoursed thus, they saw comming along *Leonide* and *Lucinde*, with the little *Merill*: I say *Lucinde*, because *Celadon*, as I told you, bare that name, following the resolution which *Galathee* had made. *Amasis* that knew her not, asked who she was. It is, answered *Galathee*, a kinswoman of *Adamas*, so faire, and so furnished with vertue, that I haue desired him to leaue her with me a while; she is called *Lucinda*. It seemes (said *Amasis*) she is as demure as fayre. I assure my selfe, added *Galathee*, that her humour will please you, and if you thinke it good, she shall come (Madame) with you to *Marcelles*.

At this word, *Leonide* came so neare, that *Lucinde* to kille the hand of *Amasis*, aduanced forward, and setting one knee on the ground, killed her hand with a fashion so well counterfeited, that there was none but tooke her for a maid. *Amasis* rayfed her vp, and after she had embrased her, she killed her, telling her, that she loued *Adamas* so well, that whosoeuer touched him, was deare to her as her owne children. Then *Adamas* tooke the word by the end, for feare, that if the fained *Lucinde* should answer, they might find out somewhat by her voice. But hee needed not haue feared: for she knew so well to counterfeit, that her voyce as well as the rest would haue helped the better to make vp the deceit. Yet for this blow, shee contented her selfe to allow of the answier of *Adamas* onely with a low courtesie; and after drew backe among the other Nymphs, attending for nothing but some opportunity to steale away.

At last, the houre of dinner being come, *Amasis* returned to her Lodging: where finding the Tables ready spred, every one full of contentment for the good newes they had, dined chearefully, except *Silvy*, who had alwayes before her eyes the image of her deare *Ligdamon*, and in her soule the remembrance that he dyed for her. This was the subiect wherewith they spent one part of the dinner: for the Nymph was willing ynough they should know that she loued the memory of a man both vertuous and so dedicated to her; but withall, that being dead, she should be no more importuned by him, nor he benefit himselfe with this good will.

After dinner, all the Nymphs disposed themselues, some to play, other to see the House, somethe Garden, others to entertaine the time with diuise discourses in the chamber of *Amasis*. *Leonide*, without the heeding of any, making shew to prepare her selfe for the iourney, got out of the chamber, and shortly after *Lucinde*, and meeting at the *Renoncous* that was giuen them, fayning to go walke, went out of the Caselle, hauing hid vnder their sleeves eyther of them a part of the shpheards garments: and when they were at the Woods end, the shpheard vnclothed himselfe, and taking his accustomed habite, thanked the Nymph for the great helpe she had giuen him, and offered in exchange his life, and all that depended on it. Then the Nymph with a great sigh said: Well (quoth she) *Celadon*, haue I not kept the promise I made you? Doe you not thinke you are bound to performe that which you promised me? I should thinke my selfe, answere he, the most vnworthy that euer lived, if I should faile. Now *Celadon*

don (said she) then remember what you haue sworne to me: for I am resolued now to bring it into proote. Faire Nymph, answered *Celadon*, dispose of all that I may, as of that which your selfe may, for you shall be no better obeyed of your selfe then of me. Haue you not promised, replyed the Nymph, that I should inquire into your life passed; and that which I could find you might doe for me, you woul'd doe it? and hee answering it was true. Well *Celadon*, continued she, I haue done that which you willed me; and though they paint Loue blind, yet hath it left me light ynough to know, that truely you are to continue the loue which you haue so often promised to be eternall to your *Astrea*; for the precisenesse of Loue will not permit a man to be either forsworne or vnsaithfull. And so though one haue vsed you hardly, yet must not you fayle in your dutie; for another mans error will never wash away our fault. Then loue the faire and happy *Astrea* with as much affection and sinceritie as you euer loued her, serue her, adore her, and more, if more may be, for Loue will haue extremity in his sacrifice: but withall I well know, that the good offices which I haue done you, deserue some remembrance of you: and without doubt, because Loue cannot pay it selfe but by Loue, you shall be obliged to satisfie me in the same money, if the impossibilitie contradicted it not. But since it is true, that one heart is capable but of one true loue, I must pay my selfe of that which remaynes. Then having no more Loues to giue me as to a Mistris, I deuaund your amitie as your sister, and from henceforth you loue me, you cherish me, and hold me for such. The contentment of *Celadon*, hearing these words, cannot be expressed; for he protested, that that was one of the things which in his miserie he found some kind of contentment in. Therefore, after hee had thanked the Nymph for the amitie she bare him, hee swore vnto her to take her for his sister, and neuer to vse her but as that name commaunded him. Then lest they should be found out, they separated themselves, both we'l contented and satisfied each with other.

*Leonide* returned to the pallace, and the shepheard held on his voyage, shunning the places where he thought hee might meet with shepheards whom he knew; and leauing *Mountverdun* on the left hand, hee passed through the middell of a great Playne, that in the end led him to a Coast somewhat rayfed, and from whence hee might know and marke with his eye the most part of the places where he had vsed to driue his flocke to feede on the other side of *Lignos*, where *Astrea* came to seeke him, where sometimes they auoided the over-scorching heat

heat of the Sunne. Briefly, this view set before his eyes the most part of the contentments which he payed so dearely for at that houre: and in that consideration being set at the foot of a Tree, hee sighed out these Verses.

## Remembrances.

*T*hen did my faire Sunne take her rest,  
while the other lazie sleeping lay:  
But when he comes at break of day  
with Gillyflowers and Roses drest,  
To chase away th' affrights of night;  
Then chieffely shines with beames most bright  
The Sunne that my soule doth adore,  
Carrying the day light as she moves,  
vnto the playnes she honours more,  
And whom she going, fills with loues.

Upon that running Riuers side  
He shewes himselfe in sundry wise:  
Sometimes with scorching heat he frys,  
Another while his light he hides,  
And seenes as coucht with iealousie,  
He meane to steale quite from our eye:  
So thought as in a cloud it were,  
The Sunne his face hide from vs all,  
Yet cannot such a shadow small  
Cover a light that is so cleare.

But who will say but that it burnes,  
when he beholds the other Sunne  
Makes with his lookes herbes dry and dunne?  
while burning Dog-starre keepes his turne,  
Why may not likewise then (say I)  
My Sunne the herbes about her dry?

I meane it is my Ladies pare,  
(O Lone) to cast no conquering rayes  
On bodies that no soule bewrayes,  
And will burne nothing but the heart.

Thou fountaine that borrows the name  
Of Sycamores growing by thee,  
Thou late didst me contented see:  
why meete I now not with the same?  
what fault haue I committed late,  
That of the gods I winne the hate?  
Are they subiect as are we,  
To be envious now and then?  
Or can the change proper to men  
Reache up unto the Deities?

Late on thy bankes my shepheardesse  
Said, while her hand held my hand close:  
well may vncertaine chance dispose  
Of our lynes full of brittlenesse:  
But Celadon, neuer in troth  
There shall be failing of the oath,  
which in this hand I swere to thee.  
Alive and dead I loue thee still,  
Or if I die, my graue stome will  
Locke up for aye our amitie.

You thicke leaues that this arbor dights,  
And couer it with shade each way:  
Remember you not well that day,  
when mixt red with lilly white,  
She fel a blushing all for shame,  
For that a shepheard by her came,  
Talking with me, and cald her faire,  
Ablisse and honour where she stayes,

To no eyes but to mine (she sayes)  
To seeme so louely doth she care.

Thou rocke, where oft for priuacie  
we met together in thy roome:  
Tell if thou canst what is become  
Of all these lones for which I cry?  
The gods that oft haue beene inuokt,  
will they brooke that they be so mockt?  
will they those prayers, which so did bind  
Both her and me, receive in vaine,  
Since she by this her change of mind,  
Payes all shose lones with one disdaine?

The heauens graun, Astrea sayd,  
That I may die before I see  
My fathers power more strongly made,  
Out of a meere obstinacie,  
In such a long continued hate,  
Vs and our lones to separate.  
Then can our lones holly and sure,  
Ioyne vs together linked fast:  
So I, that all the losse endure,  
Shall die to see it not so last.

Thou aged willow tree, whose barke  
Defends thee from the weashers force:  
Tell me, haue I not reason marke,  
To make complaint of this diuorce,  
And raise on thee my cryes most fit?  
How oft haue we to other wris  
Relyng on thy surest guard,  
In hollow of thy trunke halfe-eate?  
But oh, as I thee now regard,  
willow how comes thy change so great?

These

These thoughts had held Celadon longer in that place, had hee not  
beene overtaken by the desolate shepheard, who continually beway-  
ling his losse, came sighing out thele versses.

## On too hasty a death.

Y  
Ou that behold my mournful teare,  
If you knew what the mischieves were,  
With which my soule is taint:  
In stead of blaming of mine eye,  
You would ioyne with me in your crye  
To make vp my complaint.  
Under the horror of blacke stome,  
That which the earth held faire alone,  
Doth into cinders tend.  
O fates that play this rigor us part,  
Why not my body as my hart  
May to the deepe descend?  
She was not yet become so low,  
As that the gods at one quicke blow,  
Should raunish her from me.  
So that alone for this intent  
To enter to her monument:  
Her life seemes ginen to be.  
Why shold so great a world of lone,  
Resemblance of a flower proue,  
That but for one day springs.  
The heauens haue shewd her but for shome,  
And that our teares might overflow,  
For losse which her fate brings.  
As Tuy clasping fast the tree,  
From iranke well cannot serued be  
Though it be dead and dry,  
At least I would it might betide,  
That I alane hard by her side,  
Under her stome might lie.

With her I shold consented line,  
And if they would me licence give,  
To speake and tell my minde:  
For such a lodging I would b'fesse  
The death of lone has left no lesse  
Then such a payne behinde.

Celadon that would not be seene of any that might know him, when  
he saw this shepheard began by little, and little to withdraw hi: selfe  
vnder the couert of some thicke trees, but seeing that without staying  
at him, he went to sit down in the same place from whence he came,  
he followed after pace by pace, and so fitly, that hee could heare a part  
of his complaint. The humor of this vñknowne shepheard, sympathi-  
zing with his owne, made him curious to know of him some newes of  
his mistresse, thinking he could not learne it more easily by another,  
without being knowne. Then approaching to him, he sayd. Shepheard  
God giue thee the contentment which thou wisheth for, as I desire  
with a good heart, and not being able to do more, thou art to take  
it in good part: and if it may binde thee to any touch of curtesie, tell  
me I beseech thee if thou knowest Astrea, Phillis and Licides, and if so,  
declare to me what thou knowest. Gentle shepheard, answered hee,  
thy courteous words binde mee to pray heauen, in exchange of that  
thou wisheth mee, that it never giue thee occasion to bewayle that  
I mourne for: and moreover, to tell all I know of the persons whotta  
thou speakest of, though the sadness wherein I liue, forbid me to med-  
dle in other affaires then mine owne. It may be about a month and an  
halfe since, I came into the countrey of Forrests, not as did many, to  
try the fountaine of the veritie of Loue. For I am but too well assured  
of my cuill, but following the commandement of a God, which from  
the flowry bankes of that glorious Seyne, hath sent me hither with as-  
surance that I shall finde remedy for my displeasure. And since my a-  
bode in these villages seemed so pleasing, and agreeing to my humor,  
that I resolued to tarry as long as the heauens would permit me. That  
purpose made me desirous to know the being, and the quality of the  
most part of the shepheards and shepheardesses of that countrey; an I  
because they, of whom you demanded newes, are the principallest of  
that hamlet, which is beyond the water where I made choice to abide,  
I can tell you as much as you desire. I would know, sayd Celadon,  
nothing but how they doe? Ali, sayd hee, are in good health. It is  
true, that as vertue alwayes is that which is most couised, they haue had a  
blow

Hhh

blow of blinde and changing Fortune, which they feele even at their soule, which is the losse of *Celadon*, a shepheard whom I know not, the brother of *Luidas*, so belied: no clene of all that riuer, that his losse hath beene felt generally of them all, but much more by those three persons whom you named: for they helb, that is to say, (they that know somewhat of the worlds secretes) it is shepheard was servant to *Astrea*, and that which hindred them from mariage, was the hatred of their parents. And how, sayde they, replied *Celadon*, was this shepheard lost. They tell it (sayd he) in others sorte some in speaking after their opinion, others according to apperances, and others after the report of some, and so it is told diversly: for my part, I came into that coast the same day that he was lost, and I remembred I saw euery one so disquieted with that accident, that there was no man that could give me a good account. At last, and that is the more common opinion, because *Philis*, *Astrea*, and *Licida* themselves told it so, being layd to sleepe on the riuers banke, he must needs fall in, and indeede the faire *Astrea* did the like, but her cloathes sauad her. *Celadon* then judged that they three had wisely found this inuention, lest they might give occasion to many to speake some euill of it, and was well pleased: for hee had alwayes feare that they would suspect somewhat to the disgrace of *Astrea*, and therefore holding on his demands: But sayd he, what thinke they is become of him? That he is dead, answered the desolate shepheard, and assure your selfe that *Astrea* carries, howsouer she dissemble, such a loade of grieve, that it is incredible how much they say she is changed. Yet as it is, if *Diana* be not a let, shee is the fayrest of all those that ever I saw, my deare *Cleon* excepted, but those three may goe ioyntly. Every other man (added *Celadon*) will say as much of his mistresse, for Loue hath this property, not to shut vp the eyes as some beleeue, but to change the eyes of them that loue, into the loue it selfe, and for that there were never soule loues, never shall a louer finde his mistresse foule.

That, answered the shepheard, would haue serued well, if I had loued *Astrea* and *Diana*, but being not capable of it, I am a iudge without exception. And you that doubt of the beautie of these two shepheardesses, are you a stranger, or doth hatred make you commit an error so contrary to that which you say proceeds from loue?

I am neither of them, sayd *Celadon*, but indeede the most miserable and most afflited shepheard in the world. That wil I never yeld to, vntlesse you put me out of the number: for if your euill come from any other

other thing then loue, your stripes are not so grievous as mine, for that the hart being the most sensible part we haue, we feel more to the quick the offences of it. But if your euill proceede of loue, yet must it give place to mine, since of all the euils of loue, there is none like to that which hath no hope, hauing heard say long agoe, where hope may onely licke the sore, it is not ouer grievous. Now this hope may mingle it selfe in all those accidents of loue, be it disdaine, be it anger, bee it ialousie, be it absence; except where death takes place (For that pale goddes with her fatall hand cuts off hope at one blow, when the thred of life is broken.) But I more miserable then all others, most miserable I go bewayling an euill without remedy and without hope. *Celadon* then answered him with a great sigh, Shepheard how are you deceiued in your opinion? I will confesse that the greatest euils are those of loue, thereof I am too faithfull a witnesse: but to say, that they that are without hope are the most grievous, so farre is it that they merite not to be felt at all: for it is an act of folly to bewaile a thing that cannot be remedied. And loue, what is it (answered hee) but a pure folly. I will not, replied *Celadon*, enter now into that discourse, because I would finish the former. But tell me, bewayle you this death for loue or no? It is (answered he) for loue. Now what is this loue, sayd *Celadon*, but as I haue heard it sayd of *Siluander*, and the most vnderstanding of our shepheards, but a desire of the beautie, which we finde to be such. It is true, sayd the stranger. But replied *Celadon*, is this a thing in a man reasonable, to desire a thing he cannot haue? No certaintly (sayd hee.) Now you may see, sayd *Celadon*, how the death of *Cleon* ought to bee the remedy of your euills, for since you confesse, that desire ought not to be where hope cannot reach, and that loue is nothing but desire, death which by that which you say, deprives you of all hope, should by consequent put from you all desire; and desire dying, it should draw away loue into the same coffin, and hauing no more of loue, since the euill you complained of is fallen, I know not how you can seele it.

The desolate shepheard answered; Be it loue or hatred, so it is, that it is truer then I can tell you, that my euill is most extreme. And for that *Celadon* would haue replied, hee that could not abide to be contradicted in that opinion, thinking that if hee endured to heare the contrary reasons, he shoulde offend the ashes of *Cleon*, saide shepheard; that which is vnde: tence is more certaine then that which is in opinion, therefore all the reasons which you alledge, are to giue place to

that I seele. And thereupon commends him to Pan, and takes another way, and Celadon likewise passeth over the riuver: and because solitude hath this propertie, to represent most liuely either ioy or sadness: being alone, he beganne to be so handled for the time by his fortune and loue, that he had no cause of torment in him, which was not before his eyes. He was exempted onely of icalousie, yet with such sorrowes, that if that monster had taken hold on him, I know not what armes had beeene able to haue sauied him. In these sad thoughts holding on his pace, hee found the bridge, ouer which being passed, hee went against the riuver, not knowing which way to take, for in any case hee would obey the commandement of *Astrea*, who had forbid him to come in her sight vntill she bad him. At last being come neare *Berlens* inhabited by the veltals, hee was as surprised with shame for comynge so neare vnewares, from whence his resolution commanded him to go, and minding to turne, he thrust into a wood so large, and in some part so fennie, that he could hardly get out: this constrained him to draw nearer the riuver, for the grauell was lesse troublesome to him then the mudde. By fortune, being weary of the long way, he went about seeking a place wherein he might rest, attending till the night might give him leaue to withdraw himselfe without meeting of any body, purposing to go so far where they might never heare news of him: he cast his eye on a caue, which on the side of the entry was washed by the riuver, and on the other side was halfe couered with some trees and bushes, which by their thicknesse tooke the sight of him from them that passed along that way, and he himselfe had not heeded it, had it not beene that being constrained to passe along the Riuver, hee found himselfe before the entry; whither by fortune being got vp, and thinking hee might there be well hidden till night, the place pleased him so well, that he resolued to passe the rest of his sorrowfull and disasterous dayes there, hauing a purpose all the day long not to goe from the hollow of that Caue. In this deliberation he beganne to trimme it the best he could, sweeping out all the rubbish, which the riuver, being great, had brought in. It was nothing but a little rocke, which the water being strong had made hollow by little and little, and that with great ease, because that hauing at the beginning found it grauly and tender, it was easilly vndermined, so that the dñeis hollowes which the enforced water had made, rounded it as if it had purposely bene done. Afterward being to lie downe, it serued for a bed, which was not aboue three or fourre paces off. The roome might be some sixe or seuen paces long,

long, and because it was round, it had the greater bredth. It was a little higher then a man; yet in some places there hung downe some points of the Rocke, which the shepheard, by throwing grauell stones at it, by little and little broke off: and because by chance it was found hardest at the bottome, the water had not made it hollow in many corners; which gaue Celadon cause, breaking with little paine the coynes that were highest, to make a place for a Bed, made out in the hardest of the Rocke, which afterwards he couered with mosse, which was a great commoditie to him, for that when it rayned soundly vpon his Caue, which was of a tender Rocke, it was pierced through by the water, so that he had no other place dry but that delicious Bed.

Being in short time fittid in this manner, he put off his Coat and his Wallet, and other Weeds which troubled him most, and tying them together, layed them on the bed with his Pipe, which alwayes he bare in fashion of a Scarfe: but stripping himselfe, by chance there fell a paper on the ground, which he knew full well to come from the faire *Astrea*. This remembrance being hindered by nothing which might draw him other where (for nothing was presented to his eyes but the course of the Riuver) had such power ouer him, that there was no trouble befallen him since his banishment, that came not into his memory. At last raysing himselfe from these thoughts as from a sound sleepe, hee came to the doore of the Caue, where vnfolding the deare Paper, which he had in his hand, after a thousand ardent and amorous killses, he said: Ah deare Paper, heretofore the cause of my contentment, and now the occasion of renewing my sorrowes, how is it possible, that you should keepe in you the conceit of her that writ you, without changing it, since the good will, which then was there, is so changed, that she and I are no more that we were wont to be? Oh what fault is this? A thing without spirit is constant, and the most faire of spirits is not so. At this word having opened it, the first thing that presented it selfe, was the cypher of *Astrea* ioyned with his owne. This put him in minde of his happiness passed so lively in his spirit, that the griefe to see himselfe so fallen, almost brought him to the terme of despayre. Ah cyphers, said he, witnesles too certaine of the misfortune, wherein for hauing beeene ouer-happy, I now finde my selfe; how are not you separated, to follow the minde of my faire shepheardesse? for if heretofore she hath vntied you, it was in a time when our spirits were much more; but now, when our disaster hath so cruelly separated vs, how cyphers most happy, remayne you so together? It is (as I thinke)

to shew, that the Heauens may rayne downe on me all their disastrous influences, but never can make my will differing from *Astreas*. Hold on then, O faithfull cyphers, that symbole of my intentions, to the end, that after my last houre, which I wish may be as ready as the first moment that I shall breath, you may manifest to all those that shall see you, of what qualitie was the loue of the most vnfortunate shepheard that euer loued. And it may be it will happen, if at the least the Gods haue not lost all remembrance of me, that after my death, for my satisfaction, that faire may find you, and beholding you, she shall acknowledge, that she did as great wrong to thrust me from her, as shee had reason to tye you together. At this word hee sat downe on a great stone which hee had drawne from the Riuier to the entry of his Denne, and after he had wiped away his teares, he red the Letter, which was thus,

*The Letter of Astrea to Celadon.*

**G**od permit Celadon, that the assurance which you give me of your loue, may continue as long with me, as I yeeld supply of affection to you, and to beleue, that I hold you more deare then if you were my brother, and that euen to my Tombe I shall be yours.

These few words of *Astrea* were cause of much euill to *Celadon*, for after he had often red them, he was so farre from finding any asswagement, that on the contrary it did but more enuenome his soare: so that it called to his memory by one and by one all the fauours this shepheardesse had done him; which made him lament so dolefully, that had not the night come vpon him, hee could hardly haue giuen truce to his eyes, which rayned downe that which the tongue bewayled and the heart suffered. But the darkenesse causing him to goe into his Cauue, interrupted for some while his sad thoughts, and permitted his body, wearied with his sorrowes, and with the length of the way, to take some rest at least by sleepe.

Now twice had the day giuen place to the night, before this shepheard remembred to eate, for his sad thoughts busied him so, and the melancholy so fillid his stomacke, that he had no appetite to other viuals then that which the remembrance of his sorrowes could prepare, softened with so many teares, that his eyes seemed two heads of Fountaines: and had it not beeene for feare of offending the Gods in suffering

suffering his owne death, and much rather, that of loosing by his death that faire Idea which hee had of *Astrea* in his heart, without doubt he would haue beeene glad so to end the sad course of his life. But seeing himselfe so restrayned, he goes to the Wallet, which *Leone* ride had well furnished, the prouision whereof lasted him many dayes, for he did eate as little as he could. At last, he was forced to runne to hearbes, and to the rootes that were most tender. He found not farre off a Fountaine, which abounded with Water-Circles, which was his most certaine and delicious foode: for knowing where to finde that with which he might liue, he employed his time but on his sad thoughts, and they gaue him to faithfull companie, that as they could not be without him, so no more could he be without them.

So long as the day lasted, if he saw no body about his little Lodging, he would walke along on the grauell, and there he often engraved on the tender barkes of young Trees the subiect of his sorrowes, sometimes his cypher and *Astreas*, and when hee alighted on them interlaced together, suddenly he would deface them, and say, Thou deceiuest thy selfe *Celadon*, this is no more the season that these cyphers were allowed thee: The more constant thou art, the more to thy disaduantage are all things changed. Deface, deface miserable man, that ouer-happie testimonie of thy good time passed: and if thou wilt set downe with thy cypher that which pleases her most, set downe thy marke of teares, of paines, and of death.

With such speeches *Celadon* reprehended himselfe, if at any time he forgets himselfe in his thoughts. But when the night comes, it is then that all his displeasures touch him to the quicke in his memory: for darkenesse hath this propertie, that it makes the imagination more strong. Moreouer, he never returned home but when it was farre night: if the Moone shone, he passed the night vnder some Trees; where often ouercome with sleepe before he was aware, he found himselfe the next morning.

So went this sad Shepheard drawing on his life, which in few dayes made him so pale and leane, that one might hardly know him: and himselfe sometimes going to drinke at the next Fountaine, was astonied, when hee saw his Figure in the Water, as heeing brought to that passe, that hee could not long liue. His beard could not make him looke grimme, for hee had none as yet: but his

his hayre, which was much growne; the leanenesse, which had changed the roundnesse of his face, and made his nose long; and sadnesse, which had driven out of his eyes that lively brightnesse, which at other times had made him so gracious; now made him become quite other then he was wont to be. Ah, if *Affrea* had seene him in that case, what ioy and contentement would the paine of that faithfull Shepheard haue giuen her, knowing by so assured a testimonie, how truly she was beloued of the most faithfull and most perfect Shepheard of *Lig.*

xxx 8.

---

FINIS.

---

